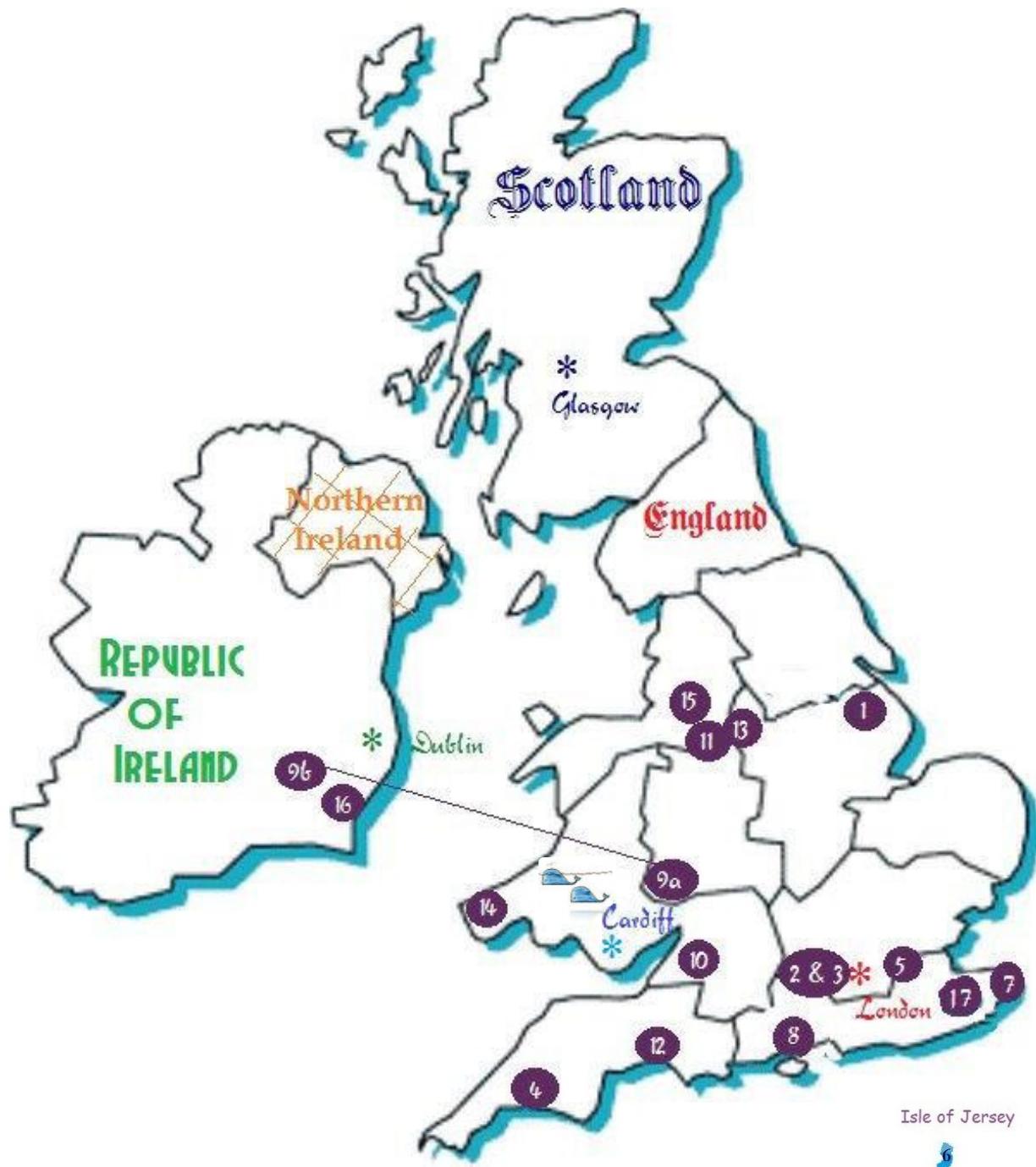


UNITED KINGDOM



OUR ENGLISH AND IRISH ANCESTORS - VOLUME 1

Brian A. Smith, D.C. ©2014

THESE TWO VOLUMES ARE DEDICATED TO THE FUTURE:



Holly P. Nicole S. Brad C. Joel C.



Tabitha Becky J. Liz M.



Sara M. Erin V. Anna M. Caty R.

The grandchildren of Valentine Smith & Alberta Matelena.

About the Cover

Numbered locations on cover:	SURNAME:	Colonial Arrival
1 STURTON-LE-STEEPLE, Nottinghamshire, England	SOUTHARD	1640
2 CHESHAM, Buckinghamshire, England	GROVER	1642
3 CHESHAM, Buckinghamshire, England	CHEESEMAN	1647
4 County Cornwall, England	STEEPY	1652
5 SAINT ALBANS, Hertfordshire, England	LAWRENCE	1655
6 SAINT OUËN'S, Isle of Jersey	PERRIN(E)	1665
7 MARGATE, Kent, England	PARKER	c1670
8 STOUGHTON, Sussex, England	TAYLOR	1671
9A SHREWSBURY, Shropshire, England	SHEPHERD	1655 to Ireland
9B CASTLE JOHN, County Tipperary, Ireland	SHEPHERD	1675
10 CHELTENHAM, Gloucestershire, England	DORSETT	<1676
11 <i>Holinegate</i> , Derbyshire, England	FOULKES	1677
12 MUSBURY, Devonshire, England	HOLMAN	<1680
13 ASHFORD-IN-THE-WATER, Derbyshire	WOODWARD	1683
14 <i>Carmarthenshire</i> , Southwest Wales	THOMAS	c1700
15 CHESTERFIELD, Derbyshire, England	MALSBURY	c1710
16 MONAGEER, County Wexford, Ireland	MURPHY	1855
17 <i>HEADCORN</i> , Yorkshire, England	BORDEN	1635

You can see from this chart that all of our English ancestors came to the New World while it was still a series of English colonies. In fact, all were here for over a hundred years by the time independence was declared! Only the Irish line came later, in the mid-nineteenth century, more to escape English oppression than the devastation of the potato famine; that had ended a few years before they immigrated to the New World.

The map at right shows the several kingdoms that were brought together in the 10th century under a single Anglo-Saxon king. The 11th century saw the invasion of the Norman-French while the 18th century brought the current ruling house, the German Hanoverians.



PREFACE

Wow! Seventeen different families from ENGLAND; compared with the 1 from ITALY and the 1 from IRELAND, it would seem that MOM was overwhelmingly ENGLISH but ask her and she would say IRISH and ITALIAN, not ENGLISH! Taking a look at 3 generations will help to explain.

Our great-grandparents generation appears to be completely balanced. The 8 surnames are: MATELENA, SACCO, KUTARNIA, HASAY, SCHMID, UNTENER, SOUTHARD and PARKER; their nationalities, based on surnames *only*, are:

G-G: ITALIAN: 2 SLOVAK: 2 HUNGARIAN: 2 ENGLISH: 2

But this can't be right, where's the IRISH MURPHY? The DUTCH JANSEN? Going back 1 generation the numbers double so we have 16 2nd-great-grandparents. Our ITALIAN, SLOVAK and HUNGARIAN ancestors each double in number. But, instead of 4 ENGLISH, we have just 2 – 1 has an IRISH wife and the other has a wife that is ENGLISH and FRENCH. So, our 16 2nd-G-G's are:

2-G-G: ITALIAN: 4 SLOVAK: 4 HUNGARIAN: 4 ENGLISH: 2½ IRISH: 1 FRENCH: ½

Going back another generation and the ITALIAN, SLOVAK and HUNGARIAN lines double as does the IRISH. The ENGLISH-FRENCH halfbreed has a FRENCH father (1) and ENGLISH mother (1). But still the ENGLISH line does not double; one is pure ENGLISH with (2) parents and the other is a GERMAN-ENGLISH halfbreed, (1) and (1) – 1 of the above ENGLISH was actually half GERMAN:

3-G-G: ITALIAN: 8 SLOVAK: 8 HUNGARIAN: 8 ENGLISH: 4 IRISH: 2 FRENCH: 1 GERMAN: 1

Working in reverse, divide the 3-G-G to correct the 2nd-great-grandparents generation:

2-G-G: ITALIAN: 4 SLOVAK: 4 HUNGARIAN: 4 ENGLISH: 2 IRISH: 1 FRENCH: ½ GERMAN: ½

Divide by 2 again corrects our G-G generation by including MURPHY, PERRIN & SMIRES:

G-G: ITALIAN: 2 SLOVAK: 2 HUNGARIAN: 2 ENGLISH: 1 IRISH: ½ FRENCH: ¼ GERMAN: ¼

Q: What is your ancestral background?

A: ¼ each ITALIAN, SLOVAK & HUNGARIAN, 1/8 ENGLISH, 1/16 IRISH & 1/32 each FRENCH & GERMAN

What happened to the DUTCH and BERBER parts? They're even further back and make up a part of the 1/8 ENGLISH section so it's mostly ENGLISH & a bit DUTCH & BERBER.

Why would MOM say she was IRISH and ITALIAN rather than ENGLISH and ITALIAN? After all, she was more ENGLISH than IRISH. Perhaps there was still some of that revolutionary spirit hanging on or, maybe, as she personally knew the IRISH GRANDMOM SOUTHARD she identified with her.

What is the most surprising fact in all of this tree climbing? Our GERMAN ancestry – all my life it was a given that DAD was the one with the GERMAN genes. *Oops! Another one bites the dust!* The only documented GERMAN in our many-limbed tree is on MOM's side – GRIETJE REYNIERS, wife of ANTHONY JANSEN and MARY ANN SMIRES, wife of JOSEPH SOUTHARD!!!!

Muts to you, I say!

INTRODUCTION TO VOLUME 1

This is Volume 1 of the 2-volume set that sheds light on our English and Irish ancestors. There are 18 lines thus far: 16 English lines, 1 English-in-citizenship-only line that were really Norman-French and 1 Irish line – but don't be fooled by the numbers. The single Irish line adds just about as much to our genetic makeup as the dozen-plus English lines. That's because the Irish MURPHY line came along quite late on the road to Trenton while the English were the just about the earliest – last year's book on the JANSEN line detailed one of the earlier lines, albeit a line that became SOUTHARD in 1650. Along the way I have been able to document the addition to our English ancestry of the Dutch and Berber JANSEN'S, the Norman PERRIN and a bit of German from our SMIRES ancestor – all added to our English SOUTHARD line. Who knows what dilutions are yet to be found.

While none of the ancestors in this work have been *proven* to be this or that person who was born/baptized/married in a specific town in England, most have pretty decent evidence backing up what I have assumed to be the correct origins. Consider this: it is *impossible* to prove *you* are who you say you are – your birth certificate only proves that *someone* was born as stated on the certificate; it's quite a leap to state that it is proof of your identity! How could you prove that you are the person that is found on the birth certificate you *claim* is yours? There are no fingerprints or foot prints to match up or any other way to do so. Just as when we look at a piece of paper that has \$100.00 printed on it *and* we both agree that it is worth that amount, does its value actually *become* \$100.00. We accept that you are the person listed on the birth certificate you are holding in your hand and that's the extent of the proof required usually. That said, imagine the difficulty in *proving* that our ancestor JAMES is the JAMES found in a baptismal register entry dated 1632 in a small English town.

Brief descriptions of the places our ancestors lived in on that side of the Atlantic, complete with map, begins each surname section. The information on a particular line may be short, such as the Irish MURPHY line because they were only here one generation before MARY MURPHY married EDWARD SOUTHARD. Some families were here for several generations – the 9-generation SOUTHARD line holds the record. The 7-generation SHEPHERD line and the 6-generation GROVER line have a lot of information too. Where a lot of religious, geopolitical or military information is necessary to understand one or more of the ancestral lines yet to be read, it is given in the sections named *BACKGROUND*.

Surprisingly, not a single English ancestor in this book came from London. Across the board they came from small villages – not necessarily rural farming towns though – some were manufacturing villages, others were mill towns and others were on the coast. Many left England because of religious discrimination – whether it was anti-Catholic, anti-Quaker or anti-Baptist. Yet most took a pro-English stance once in New Netherlands. Whether this will remain true is yet to be determined as there are many ancestral lines of which this author has very little or no information other than the surname: BOWKER, BURGESS, CLAYTON, RANIER & WANSBROUGH.

We have more direct ancestors hailing from England than anywhere else. In fact they almost outnumber all other countries combined! But this is only due to their 17th century immigration. Why did the English leave so early? England was in turmoil for much of the 17th century – religious upheavals were continuing – no longer Catholic *versus* Protestant but Anglican *versus* Baptists, Quakers and everyone else.

Most of our English ancestors were either Baptist or Quaker and the guarantee of religious toleration by the Proprietors Concessions was a strong incentive. Whether this toleration was a reality depended more on where you lived – Newark, Elizabeth, Perth Amboy were staunchly Anglican; Monmouth was split - Middletown Township was Baptist and Dutch Reformed while Freehold had a strong Scotch Presbyterian leaning; South Jersey was Swedish Lutheran or Baptist. For a short time in the 1680s both East & West

New Jersey were controlled by Quakers, led by WILLIAM PENN no less. Some backroom deals lost West Jersey to DANIEL COXE and friends who ran roughshod over the inhabitants. Quaker East Jersey was quickly diluted with Baptists at Middletown and Presbyterians at Freehold who were at odds with each other, and often at sword-point! While the Quaker presence remained strong, they were overshadowed by parties battling for power. Many, including PENN, looked west, settling west of the Delaware. My 2009 book A Select History of the State of New Jersey may come in handy as the places inhabited by our ancestors are described. Some, like Middletown, are covered in more detail in this work and some corrections to my earlier work have been included.

How each family ended up in New Jersey can be summarized:

- The TAYLOR, FOULKES and STEEPY families moved directly to New Jersey.
- The *pseudo-English* PERRIN family came from Jersey (*Isle*) to East Jersey (*colony*) in 1665. They didn't stay... crossing Staten Island Sound in 1680, they were New Yorkers for 45 years before returning in 1725 whence they settled near Freehold.
- The SOUTHARD family moved around 1609 from England to Leiden in South Holland where they stayed for about 25 years. A roaming son headed to New Amsterdam in 1640 and landed in Hempstead (Long Island) in 1650. 140 years passed before another roaming SOUTHARD appeared. 1790 brought a move to New Haven, Connecticut and 1816 saw a move to Upper Freehold, New Jersey. In the next century our SOUTHARD line continued to move, inching ever closer to Trenton.
- The DORSET, GROVER, LAWRENCE, WOODWARD and CHEESEMAN families stopped at Gravesend on Long Island, before moving to Middletown in East Jersey during the 1660s where they helped establish the first Baptist Church in the state.
- The SHEPHERD family of Shropshire, England moved to Castle John in County Tipperary, Ireland in 1650 before heading to Cohansey (Bridgeton) in Fenwick's Colony (Salem County in South Jersey) by 1685. They were founders of New Jersey's *other* first Baptist Church. Once founded they moved north to Freehold, then Smithsburg, Clarksburg and the Millstone Township area and finally Allentown.
- The route taken by the MALSURY, THOMAS, PARKER and HOLMAN families remains shrouded in mystery.

Interestingly, the SOUTHARD'S are the first of our ancestors to arrive in the New World from the United Kingdom, and the last to go. **THOMAS SOUTHARD** arrived first in 1640 ... *and* ... **DOROTHY SOUTHARD** was the *last* of our ancestors to have a British surname. Her surname changed when she married GRANDPOP in 1922 and became GRANDMOM MATELENA.

Also notable is that, while **all** of our other English ancestors **only** married English spouses, *without fail*; it was our SOUTHARD ancestors who married spouses that were GERMAN, DUTCH, BERBER, GERMAN, IRISH, NORMAN-FRENCH and ITALIAN!

The SOUTHERDS are *both* long-lasting *and* adventure-loving; without them, GRANDMOM would've been much less fun!

~ TABLE OF CONTENTS - VOLUME 1 ~

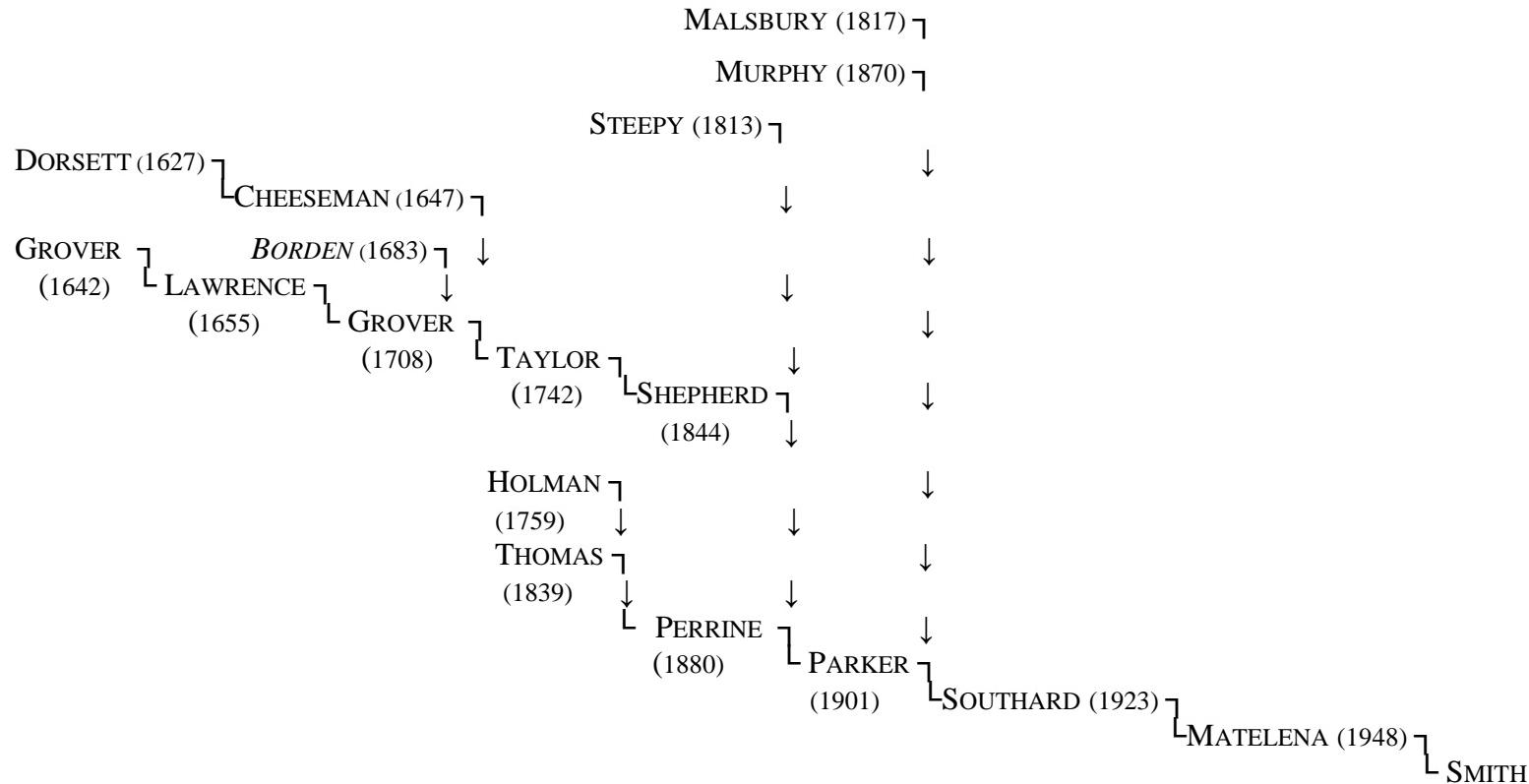
		<i>INSIDE FRONT COVER</i>
	DEDICATION	
	ABOUT THE COVER	<i>i</i>
	PREFACE	<i>ii</i>
	INTRODUCTION	<i>iii</i>
	CONTENTS	<i>v</i>
	BACKGROUND	I: SOME PROBLEMS WITH STATE-BASED RELIGIONS
1	SOUTHARD	4
	BACKGROUND	II: BAPTIST BEGINNINGS – OLD WORLD & NEW WORLD
2	GROVER	59
	BACKGROUND	III: MIDDLETOWN TOWNSHIP BEGINNINGS
3	CHEESEMAN	63
4	STEEPY	105
5	LAWRENCE	108
	BACKGROUND	IV: WHO'S HUGO, AND WHY IS HE IN KNOTS?
6	PERRIN	115
7	PARKER	124
8	TAYLOR	144
		145
		181
		204

~ TABLE OF CONTENTS - VOLUME 2 ~

	DEDICATION	
	BACKGROUND	V: THE ENGLISH CIVIL WARS
9	SHEPHERD	
	BACKGROUND	VI: THE FRIENDLY PROVINCE OF WEST NEW JERSEY
10	DORSETT	
	BACKGROUND	VII: COLONIAL NEW JERSEY BOUNDARIES 1665 – 1710
11	FOULKES	
12	HOLMAN	
13	THOMAS	
14	WOODWARD	
15	MALSURY	
16	MURPHY	
17	BORDEN	
	SUMMATION	NATIONAL HISTORIC LANDMARK 7601158

The Coalescing of the English

This chart shows how our English and Irish ancestral lines coalesced into a single SOUTHARD line with the year when the surname is lost through marriage. We owe a debt to our SOUTHARD ancestors, for they were adventurous – they dared to marry wives of other nationalities! Over the centuries, the English tended to marry other English, going so far as to create a GROVER-LAWRENCE-GROVER loop! However, our first definite English line in the New World, the SOUTHARDS, was the line that disregarded the keep-it-English trait. Recall from last year's book on the JANSEN family that in 1650 THOMAS SOUTHARD married ANNICA JANSEN who was German, Berber, Dutch, and perhaps Spanish. The SOUTHARD line married our German SMIRES line. The SOUTHARD line married the Irish MURPHY line. Lastly, this entire SOUTHARD heritage merged with our Italian heritage when DOROTHY SOUTHARD married ALBERT MATELENA in 1923. Thanks to the nine SOUTHARD generations, we enjoy *DUTCH, BERBER, GERMAN, FRENCH, IRISH, ITALIAN* and possibly *Spanish* genes along with the *ENGLISH* ones.



BACKGROUND I

† † † State-based Religions are self-defeating by their very Nature † † †

Before climbing the limbs of our family tree, some background on religion in England in the 16th & 17th centuries will help when trying to remember the difference between:

❖ **Anglicans and Episcopalians** &
❖ **Pilgrims and Puritans** &
❖ **General and Particular Baptists.**

HENRY VIII broke with the Vatican in 1537 but his church was identical to the ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH – it was only a change in leadership. Just as the CATHOLIC CHURCH was corrupt at the local level, the CHURCH OF ENGLAND continued with the same abuses of power. Then the Reformation came along and the CHURCH OF ENGLAND took on a much less Catholic demeanor – interiors were whitewashed; statuary, candelabras, stained-glass windows & chandeliers were pulled down and smashed; church vestments went from multicolored fabrics with gold & silver embroidery to plain black wool – and the Protestant religions were born. There wasn't one Protestant religion, but a smorgasbord to choose from – there were RANTERS and QUAKERS and METHODISTS, several kinds of BAPTISTS (or ANABAPTISTS as they were called); PRESBYTERIANISM had spread south from Scotland; the stubborn *Recusants* kept having Mass said by Priests – an activity that could see you burned at the stake – at least here was one firm fact – no CATHOLICS! After HENRY died the CHURCH OF ENGLAND became more or less Catholic depending on whose head was crowned. EDWARD remained Protestant during his brief reign while MARY brought back the Pope for a few years. The last, and worst, TUDOR monarch was ELIZABETH I; not only did she ban the ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH, she increased the fine for not attending weekly Anglican services in 1587 to £20 for each infraction (the annual salary for a school headmaster was £25); in 1585 it became an act of High Treason to be English and an ordained priest.

PUNISHMENT FOR HIGH TREASON: As early as the 13th century the penalty (for men) convicted of High Treason was to be *hanged, disemboweled, drawn and quartered*. (When the condemned was a woman, she was *drawn and burned*). The order as stated does not reflect the order received for to be *drawn* meant to be transported in some humiliating fashion from prison to the gallows; obviously it was the 1st of the 4 steps. This was usually followed by *hanging* which was not the same as the execution by hanging we are more familiar with. Rather, the condemned was strung up by rope for a short period of time to strangle them to near-death and then let down. On occasion friends of the convicted would pull on the legs to bring about strangulation, thus allowing for the following steps to be performed on a corpse. The process of *disembowelment* then started by cutting the abdominal wall, severing the intestinal tract and tossing it on a fire. As gruesome and traumatic as this sounds, it was not uncommon for the condemned to survive this barbarity and watch while his entrails burned; it was also only the 1st part of the procedure.

Emasculation was the *coup-de-grâce* act that often actually killed the condemned. By the time the removal of the male external sex organs was done, and joined the intestine of the bonfire, most were dead from the loss of blood. *Emasculation* symbolized the tainting of the criminal's children, a literal *crime of the father visited on his sons*, as they did not inherit their father's property as was the norm in other criminal offenses. The *disembowelment* was then finished the *heart* was removed and often burned; the *lungs* were sometimes included but not always. Then the corpse was *beheaded* with that morsel stuck on the end of a pike and displayed near the London Bridge (a true *Kodak moment*). Lastly, what remained of the corpse was *quartered*; each quarter being sent for public display at some significant place determined somewhat by the notoriety of the man – the more well-known the convict was, the further the quarters travelled throughout England. But this removed the revenue generated for the Crown if too many wealthy subjects were executed. To give outward expression of the *generosity* and *kindness* that ELIZABETH I had for her subjects, *especially* her wealthy ones, certain crimes, including High Treason, could be smoothed

over by agreeing to have their real estate *sequestered* by the Crown. While retaining title to their property, $\frac{2}{3}$ was *sequestered* for the Crown's use, indefinitely. This ownership in-name-only was not accompanied by *taxes* in-name-only; those were very real and payable! The Crown also kept all income generated on the sequestered property. Additionally, the Recusant's personal estate was inventoried and valued and a fine levied that was equal to $\frac{1}{4}$ of the value of the personal estate!

The HOUSE OF STUART arrived in 1603 from Edinburgh with the Scots King, JAMES VI when he was crowned JAMES I. King of Britain. With his accession, the Protestant reforming movements hoped for a renewal of the progress they had made in the past.

CHURCH OF ENGLAND: Basically, the Church of England saw Scripture as a *standard for doctrine* while objectors saw it as a *rule for discipline*. Laws of the Church were drawn in accordance with Scripture but not dictated by it and church authorities intervened in matters where the Scriptures were silent. Today the English Church defines itself to be *Protestant and Catholic* and is one of the churches in the ANGLICAN COMMUNION. The EPISCOPAL CHURCH is this country's version of the Church of England. Taken together as one church, that is, combining all the churches in the ANGLICAN COMMUNION as one church, it makes up the 3rd largest Christian Church in the world, after the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Churches. Each country in the ANGLICAN COMMUNION has its own leadership – England has its hereditary monarch while the U.S. has an elected Presiding Bishop.

By 1603, there existed one reform movement *within* the Church of England and two reform movements, each made up of different competing groups, *outside* of the Church:

PURITANS: wanted to purify ANGLICAN CHURCH from within and reform the Catholicism that had guided the ANGLICAN CHURCH since its founding. Recall the ANGLICAN CHURCH differed from RC only with respect to its leader – King or Pope? PURITANS sprang from the approx 800 Protestant (or *Marian*) exiles during QUEEN MARY'S reign (1554 – 58) who returned with much stronger reforming beliefs picked up on the Continent, e.g. CALVINISTS. They became PRESBYTERIANS in Scotland and REFORMERS/PURITANS in England upon their return. Their power grew, reaching its 16th century zenith in 1585 when they commanded Parliament; after this the group suffered reversals for a century or more.

SEPARATISTS: felt that reform was futile and separated from the ANGLICAN CHURCH, with protest services held in homes, not churches, but these were eventually declared treasonable offenses. Wanted to establish small, independent churches answerable to the congregation; forerunner of the CONGREGATIONAL church movement in the New England colonies.

DISSENTERS: A splinter group of SEPARATISTS formed in the 1580s called BROWNISTS who wanted a congregational form of organization *for* the ANGLICAN CHURCH but *in* a separate church. CLYFTON was leader of the BROWNISTS and *grandfather* of the PILGRIMS; his post-1605 congregation at the SEPARATIST Church in Scrooby is where he educated, or re-educated, JOHN ROBINSON, the *father* of the Pilgrims. Those we call the PILGRIMS were called BROWNISTS until the early 19th century.

WERE OUR ANCESTORS BROWNISTS?

The term *BROWNIST* refers to the group of people that left the SEPARATIST movement in the 1580s due to dissension with the majority. These *DISSENTERS* were led by ROBERT BROWNE, hence the name BROWNISTS. They were the soil from which the seeds of the Pilgrim Church grew. Other dissenting groups existed that did not follow BROWNE'S congregational control theory of church administration; they were also DISSENTERS but not BROWNISTS. This sounds mild – put each church in the hands of its congregation – but it was anything but mild for it required the removal of the Monarch as head of the church and the dissolution of the entire administrative apparatus of the church. There was to be no governing body over the individual church, no synods or dioceses; no uniformity required and each church decided if they wanted to use the *Bible*, the *Talmud*, the *Koran*, the *Book of Common Prayer* or ROBINSON CARUSO'S *Treasure Island* to receive their divinely-inspired message each week.

As for the question posed at the start of this section, there has surfaced no evidence that links our ancestor with any particular church, category or otherwise indicates a religious belief. But even without these to establish theory as fact, we can still make some suppositions – in fact, we have to if the story is to continue. Based solely on the accepted, but yet unproven, move to Leiden and the timing of that move, one can only reach the conclusion that THOMAS SOUTHWORTH was negatively impacted by *something*, possibly the Canons of 1604, *somehow*. Anything more is speculation only at this point. Information provided in the SOUTHARD section does take the investigation somewhat further though, so keep reading.

THE HAMPTON COURT CONFERENCE OF THE ANGLICAN BISHOPS OF 1604

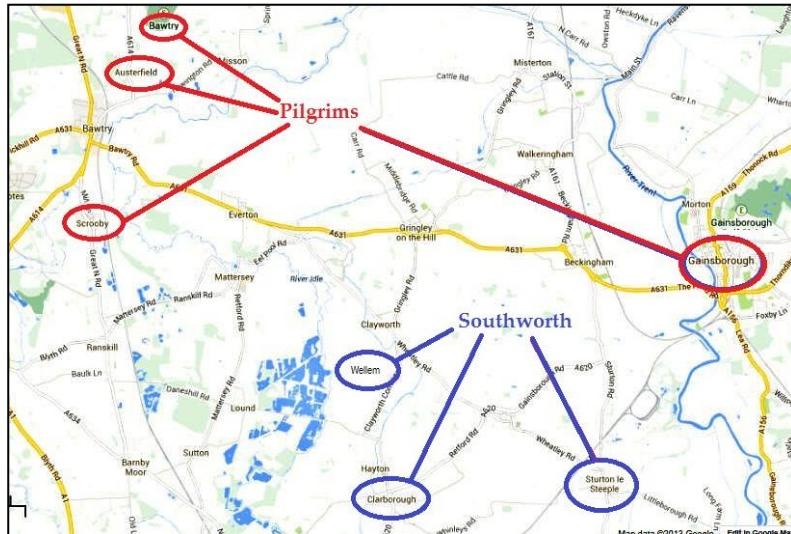
All churches suffered when JAMES VI called the Bishop's Hampton Court Conference in 1604. It wasn't so much a conference as it was a symposium – by JAMES on what the ANGLICAN CHURCH could and could not say, wear, eat and do – after all it *was* his church. He reinforced the already mandatory attendance laws and put in place definitions on what constituted a church; definitions so fluid that a group of cows could be defined as a church, if JAMES wanted to. With the promulgation of these rules, and subsequent supportive legislation from Parliament, JAMES had not only the force of law needed to arrest anyone at anytime for just about anything but it also gave him the power to order any member of the military, any of his appointed High Sheriffs and their subordinates and anyone he so commissioned to arrest anyone he named. Failure to follow his orders had dire consequences. This Non-Conference to strengthen the CHURCH OF ENGLAND against encroachments by other groups was so far out of touch with reality that JAMES' Canons were opposed by the CHURCH itself. Hundreds of clergy initially refused to conform but after JAMES defrocked a hundred or so Anglican clergy, any overt opposition quickly caved. Summonses for non-attendance, a cash-cow for the government, rose at alarming rates beginning in 1605; by 1607 many of the summoned were imprisoned for weeks or months *before* being fined. Since the amount of the fine was not set, the prisoner could not pay his fine and be released. These fines could be huge; they were often based on the value of one's estate and set at a percentage of the value with 25% being a normal fine for the higher levels of society. Not 25% of cash on hand but 25% of the value of all property owned – that's \$25k on a \$100k house. The fine had to be paid in full, usually, before gaining freedom – and here's the kicker – the prisoner had to pay all costs for his confinement: room and board, laundering – even water came with a charge!

The defrocked clergy headed to the continent in droves where they founded or reinvigorated churches and universities catering to the thousands of Brits that refused to pay into this corrupt system. The Canons were aimed at the largest group of religious wanderers – the PURITANS. But they were simpler to enforce against the less numerous SEPARATISTS and the DISSENTERS in Nottinghamshire. When members of the 3 categories believed their lives were in danger, they fled. Everywhere they landed, a church was established – there was the *Reformed Church of England* of the PURITANS, the *English Church in Exile* of the SEPARATISTS while the DISSENTERS eschewed church buildings all together, opting for sermons in the open or an available business. The Canons were used to retaliate against anyone – perhaps the local Constable had a beef with a resident – that person became the perfect target to level such charges against. Eventually many of the *Reformed Church of England* in Europe were formally recognized by, or was deemed to be in *Communion with*, the Church of England – the genesis of the ANGLICAN COMMUNION.

HOW DID THESE CHANGES AFFECT OUR SOUTHARD ANCESTORS? The answer comes from (1) where THOMAS SOUTHWARD lived in England; (2) the particulars of moving to Leiden, Holland; and (3) what did the next generation do for spiritual fulfillment?

(1) Sturton-Le-Steeple in Nottinghamshire is the place that THOMAS and his brother EDWARD are thought to have lived. They are most likely descendants of the SOUTHWORTH OF CLARBOROUGH family, itself a cadet branch of the great SOUTHWORTH OF SAMLESBURY family from Lancashire.

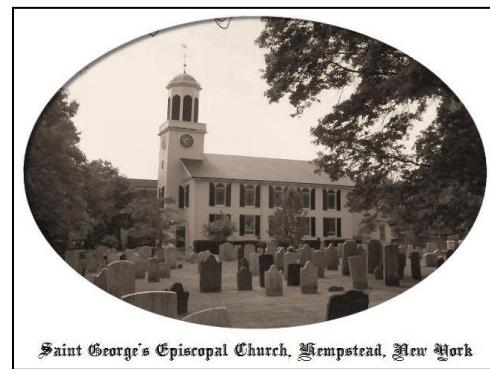
Nestled in the middle of the 4 SEPARATIST/DISSENTING congregations at Bawtry, Austerfeld, Gainsborough and Scrooby, villagers of Sturton-le-Steeple would have been, at the least, *aware* of the new religion sprouting around them. The pastor of the SEPARATIST/DISSENTING congregation at nearby Scrooby was JOHN ROBINSON, a native of Sturton-Le-Steeple almost guaranteed they knew of the movement. He was often in town and apparently preached there on more than one occasion.



(2) The English tide first washed ashore in the Netherlands during 1605 when many PURITANS who did not agree with the Canons of 1604 fled. It took much more preparation for the other groups to follow as their congregations were poorer, coming from the working class mainly. In 1608, ROBINSON and his Scrooby congregation brought up the rear of the English refugee movement. The appearance of the SOUTHARD brothers in Leiden marriage records starts in the early 1610s. The records help to identify their circle of friends in Leiden. While many researchers have attempted to link them to one group or another, the main group being the DISSENTERS (the Pilgrims), this researcher has found no evidence to support this interpretation of history. The records of the DISSENTERS do not mention the brothers or any of their identified friends. One must remember that the English expatriates encompassed all 3 religious groups: the PURITANS, the SEPARATISTS and the DISSENTERS. The PURITANS were the largest groups and founded what was sometimes called the CHURCH OF ENGLISH EXILES; it was a REFORMED ANGLICAN CHURCH. Just by numbers alone, it is more likely the SOUTHARD brothers were members of this church as the congregation was 10 times larger than the DISSENTER/BROWNISTS group. Unfortunately this writer has not been able to find any records of the REFORMED ANGLICAN group.

(3) Lending additional support to the belief that our ancestors were *not* members of the DISSENTERS, or even the SEPARATISTS, is the fact that, after relocating to Hempstead, Long Island in the New Netherland colony in 1650, the son of THOMAS of Leiden had few or no qualms about attending SAINT GEORGE'S ANGLICAN CHURCH. This was despite the relatively relaxed atmosphere of the New Netherland colony which made some allowances for religious liberty.

This covers just a couple of what would become the several different Protestant religions and applies mostly to our SOUTHARD ancestors discussed next. Following the SOUTHARD section is *BACKGROUND II* which concerns the Baptists. The GROVERS, in this PART, and SHEPHERDS, in PART 2, are the ancestral lines most involved with the Baptist churches. The Quakers are covered in PART 2 as our ancestors involved with the Society of Friends are found in Part. 2. A brief discussion of the Huguenots or French Protestants is found in *BACKGROUND IV* just before CHAPTER 6 discusses our French PERRIN ancestors living on the English Isle of Jersey.



Saint George's Episcopal Church, Hempstead, New York

Southard



STURTON-LE-STEEPLE: has always been a village; the population in 2001 was less than 500. Its claim to fame is found in the person of JOHN ROBINSON. He was the leader of the Separatist movement who led his congregation to Leiden, Holland for a decade before heading to the New World on the Mayflower. His followers became known as the Pilgrims.

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE: The Lancastrian SOUTHWORTH of Samlesbury had lands that spread over England with a group in Yorkshire & Nottinghamshire acquired through marriage to a FOLIOT heiress in the 1300s. These properties straddled the River Went which separated the two shires at the time. In 1409 the lord created a trust into which all the SOUTHWORTH properties were placed. During the life of the trust, the SOUTHWORTH OF CLARBOROUGH cadet branch was placed on firm footing when, per the directives guiding the trust, the FOLIOT properties were settled on the head of the cadet branch.

There are hundreds of people that believe they are *researching* the SOUTHARD genealogy when all they are really doing is *plagiarizing* earlier works that are *wrong*. The work most often cited is SAMUEL G. WEBBERS work A Genealogy of the Southworths, published in Boston in 1905. While he writes about the exhaustive research he did in coming up with his lineage and it reads well and appears well-documented, there were a few inconsistencies with his version that I had trouble accepting as correct. When I started to research the SOUTHWORTHS, I found that, in fact, WEBBER did not do a lot of research at all and what he did was of poor quality. Unfortunately, his work is still cited as fact by the vast majority of people researching this family which only perpetuates a false ancestry.

THOMAS SOUTHWORTH of Sturton-Le-Steeple *was probably* a descendant of the great Lancashire family of SOUTHWORTH of Samlesbury. He fled England around 1608, settling in Leiden, Holland before 1610. As such, it is *impossible* for him to be a descendant of SIR JOHN SOUTHWORTH, who became lord of Samlesbury in 1546. There are only two persons named THOMAS SOUTHWORTH who *were* descendants *and* of the right age

were SIR JOHN'S eldest son, SIR THOMAS SOUTHWORTH, who was 60 years old and SIR THOMAS' 3rd son who was about 38 years old. SIR THOMAS SOUTHWORTH's whereabouts are known right up to his death in 1616. And, *no*, SIR JOHN did *not* have an unknown son that he also named THOMAS –that is a ludicrous statement. It is clear that the THOMAS SOUTHWORTH from Sturton-le-Steeple was *not* a descendant of SIR JOHN SOUTHWORTH.

So who *were* the progenitors of our ancestor? Documentation on the SOUTHWORTH family seated in Nottinghamshire is scant. There were some SOUTHWORTHS living in the area in the 1300s but they did not constitute a cadet branch. The first named cadet branch was the SOUTHWORTHS of Clarborough which was founded by either RICHARD or MATTHEW DE SOUTHWORTH, the 2nd and 3rd sons, respectively, of JOHN DE SOUTHWORTH, lord of Samlesbury from 1387 to 1415. The name SOUTHWORTHS of Welham briefly surfaces, but this may reflect a move of the family's seat from Clarborough to Welham for a short period. Both Clarborough and Welham are a few miles west of Sturton-Le-Steeple (see map above). With the SOUTHWORTH of Clarborough in the area for almost 300 years, it is much more logical to assume that our ancestor was a member of that branch rather than trying to force him into some awkward relationship to SIR JOHN SOUTHWORTH, lord of Samlesbury that contradicts the known record. While documentation of the descent from the SOUTHWORTHS of Clarborough is lacking, the search continues....

This does not change the fact that our ancestor THOMAS SOUTHWORTH/SOUTHARD descends from the SOUTHWORTH of Samlesbury family – he does so from JOHN DE SOUTHWORTH, lord of Samlesbury from 1387 to 1415 and his wife ELLEN DE HOGTON rather than SIR JOHN SOUTHWORTH, lord of Samlesbury from 1546 to 1595 and his wife ROSAMUND LISTER.



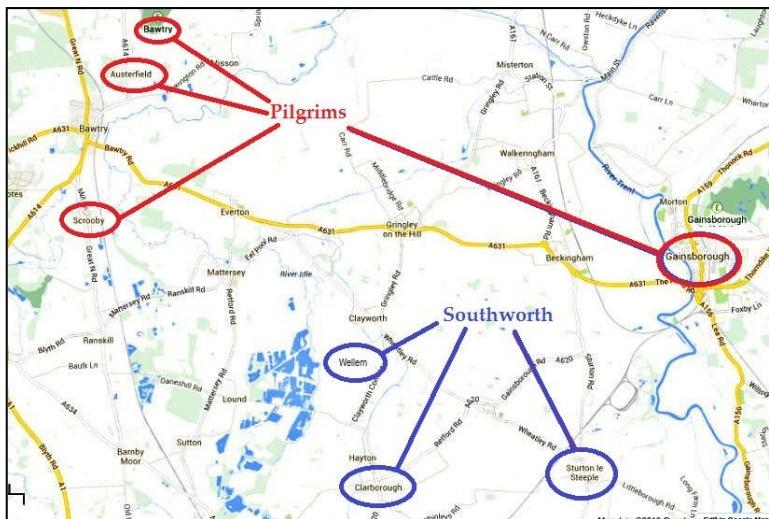
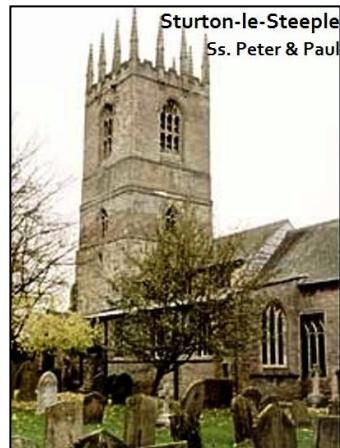
Husband's Name:

THOMAS SOUTHWORTH

Born:	1590?	<i>Sturton-le-Steeple, Notts</i>
Married:	1610?	<i>Sturton-le-Steeple?</i>
Died:	1625	Leiden, Holland, Netherlands

It was in this world that we first meet THOMAS SOUTHWORTH. Actually we don't *meet* him; we must make certain assumptions or concessions *about* him. These include:

- The brothers THOMAS and EDWARD SOUTHWORTH of Sturton-le-Steeple, Notts actually existed. No records proving this have yet surfaced. The parish church records make no mention of the brothers. This is based on family stories passed down on this side of the Atlantic. My research to document their existence is ongoing.
- The brothers THOMAS and EDWARD SODWAERT in Leiden, Holland were the same persons as THOMAS and EDWARD SOUTHWORTH of Sturton-le-Steeple, Notts.



Our subject THOMAS SOUTHWORTH is believed to have been born around 1590 in the small village of Sturton-Le-Steeple, in the Bassetlaw District of Nottinghamshire. This town was not too far from the 4 major centers of the DISSENTERS – Bawtry, Scrooby, Austerfeld and Gainsborough. The Scrooby congregation is considered to be the origin of the PILGRIM church (map left). This nearness, coupled with the timing of the move, has led many to assume that our

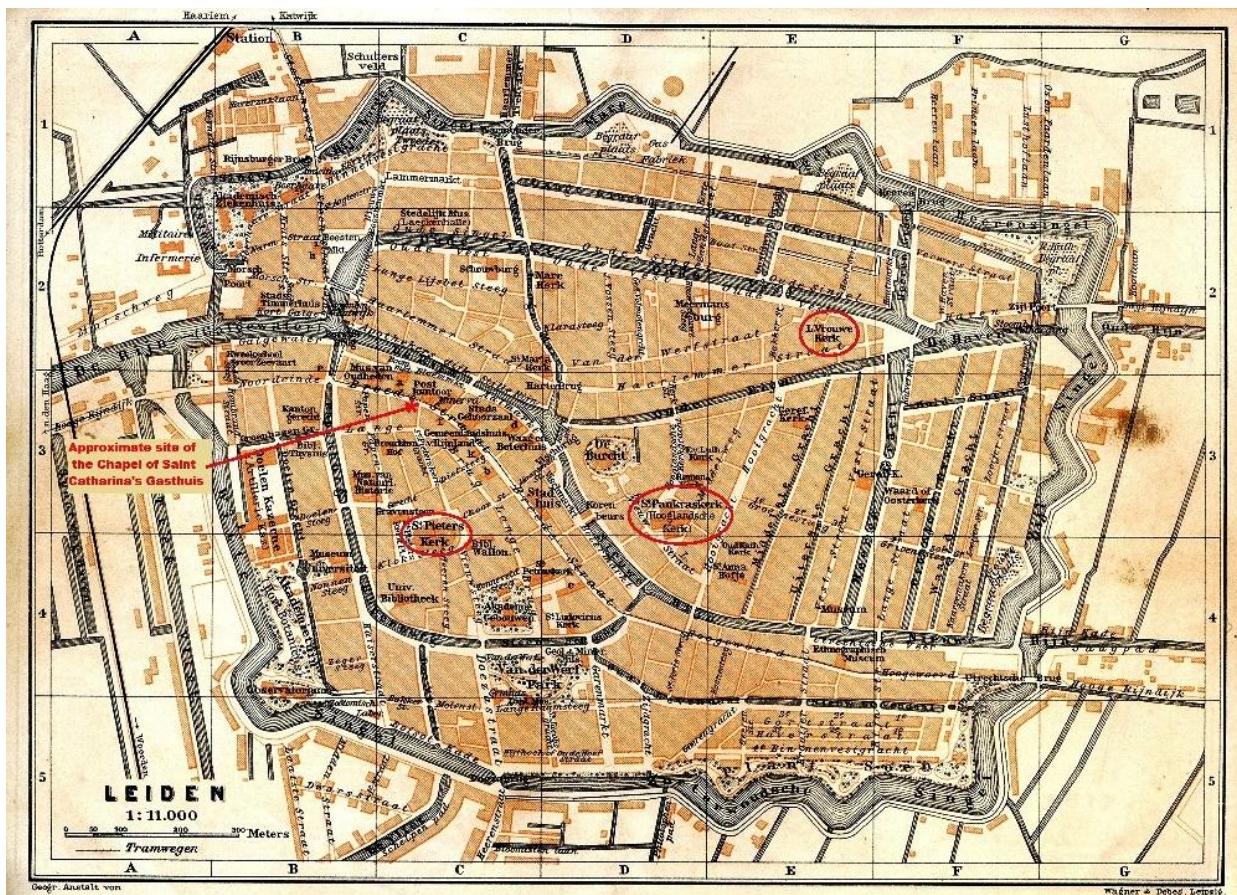
ancestor was a member of the DISSENTERS. He may have been, but the records from the Scrooby and Leiden congregations do not mention the SOUTHWORTH name even once.

We have no reason that we can point to and say "This is why THOMAS and EDWARD moved to Leiden." But we can assume that something occurred around 1605 that made the benefits of moving outweigh the benefits of staying. It could have been a religious reason or an economic one or just hoping for a better life; for some reason, the brothers decided to move to Holland. That their move coincided with the move of JOHN ROBINSON and his Scrooby congregation made may be only a coincidence, or a convenience. Making a move *en masse*, as a few hundred people made the move from the area, would be easier from a logistics point, probably less expensive to do and you would experience much less of a feeling of being on foreign shores once there.

Dutch records spell SOUTHWORTH as SUTWAERT and SODTWAERT. This suggests that the change from SOUTHWORTH to SOUTHWARD resulted from Dutch influence between 1609 and 1640:

SOUTHWORTH → SUTWAERT → SOUTHWARD → SOUTHARD

Leiden, South Holland



British exiles had at least 4 different congregations in Leiden: **Quakers** who didn't yet share the pacifist tendencies of the Dutch Quakers; **Brownists**, the English **Dissenters** that became known as the *Pilgrims* in later centuries; the **Puritans** represented the English Reformed movement; and the **Presbyterians** represented Scottish Reformed movement.

Any religious group could petition the city magistrates for use of a church and 3 English groups did just that. Dissenters did not use a church as that was *Popish*. Four churches used by English congregations between 1607 and 1640 were the **Pieterskerk**, the **Vrouwekerk**, the **Hooglands Kerk** and the **Chapel of Saint Catharina's Gasthuis**.



The **Pieterskerk** (Kloksteeg 16; originally *Saint Peter and Saint Paul Church*) is called the *Pilgrim's Church* because the Dissenters *lived* on the south side of the church; they did not worship there. No longer a church but used for special events.

The **Vrouwekerk** (Haarlemerstraat; originally the *Onze-Lieve-Vrouwekerk* or *Church of Our Lady*) on the islet of Maredorp was the smallest of the 3 medieval parish churches. Was a Huguenot church in the 1580s and became the first Walloon Reformed Church. What English group located here is not known but a sizeable English population was located in Maredorp.

Hooglands Kerk (Middleweg at Nieuwstraat; originally *Church of Saint Pancras*): the name translates as Highlands Church as it was located on the high ground across the Nieuw Rijn about 0.2 miles from the *Pieterskerk*. English affiliation uncertain. May still hold services.

The **Chapel of Saint Catharina's Gasthuis** (Breede-straat or Breestraat 64; since 1818 the *Waalsekerk* or *Walloon Church*) served the largest group of English exiles. The English Reformers established the **Exiled English Church in Leiden** and asked the city for use a church in 1607. They were granted shared-use of *Saint Catharina's* with the Walloon Reformed Church that had been there for many years already. The two groups agreed on a schedule for French and English language services with the city appointing the preacher and church elders. In 1609 the English congregation numbered 200 families; in 1610 they petitioned the city for and received money to pay for an English minister. The first was Robert Dury (d 1616), followed by Hugh Goodyear (b 1590, Lancs) who served as minister until 1661. The earliest records name it as the **English Church** or the **English and Scottish Church** (which implies some affiliation with the Scottish Reformed Church). In 1621 the congregation moved to the unidentified *Jeruzalemkerk*. Despite the unsteady foundations, the **Exiled English Church in Leiden** lasted for 2+ centuries. If only because of the size of the congregation, the SOUTHARD brothers were more likely to be a member of this English faction.

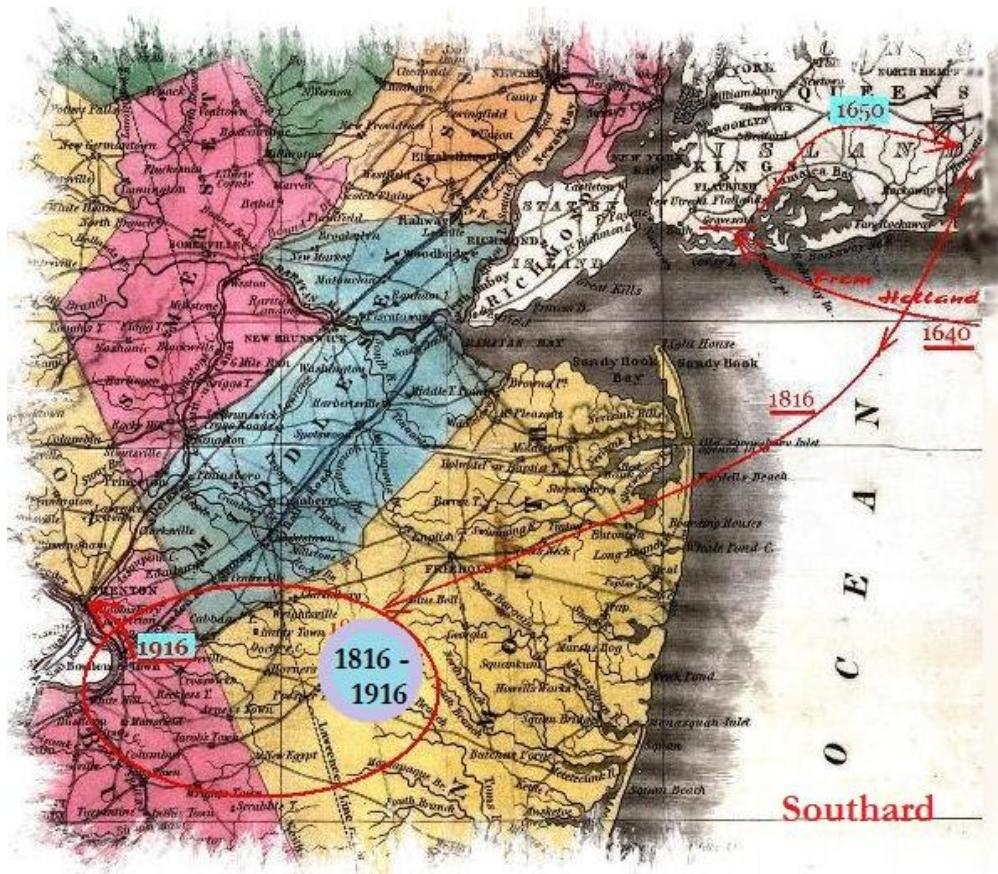


As for JOHN ROBINSON'S congregation of about 100 Dissenters, a small square of land just south of the *Pieterskerk* was bought in 1609. Three sides of the square on *Kloksteeg* (Bell Alley) were occupied by 21 one-room apartments and services were conducted in the courtyard at first. The area was called the *Engelsepoort*. Eventually services moved to the rear of a local bakery.

Official records of Leiden contain 2 which have a special significance for THOMAS: in the first he was a witness at his brother's marriage on 28 May 1613. In the second one, EDWARD SOUTHWORTH witnessed the marriage of WILLIAM PONTUS of Dover on 4 December 1610. The groom's residence is in the *Maredorp* neighborhood in Leiden – which may be where the SOUTHWORTH brothers lived. THOMAS does not appear in other records found to date but EDWARD witnessed marriages of 4 acquaintances between 1610 & 1613. His wife ALICE witnessed an acquaintance's marriage in 1612 as well as for two of her sisters in 1612 & 1613.

In 1618 JAMES I declared his right to rule the Calvinist dissenters (Pilgrims) living in Leiden; the Dutch government did not challenge his declaration directly but paid him lip service by enacting, and then ignoring, laws that prevented all but clergy of the Dutch Reformed Church from receiving tithes.

Timeline



Husband:	THOMAS SOUTHARD¹	
Born:	1615	Leiden, Holland
Married:	29 December 1650	Gravesend, Kings County, New Netherland
Died:	1688	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Buried:		
Father:	THOMAS SOUTHWORTH	
Mother:		
Wife:	ANNICA JANSEN VAN SALEE	
Born:	~1630	Gravesend, Kings County, New Netherland
Died:	>1698	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Buried:		
Father:	ANTHONY JANSEN VAN SALEE (1608 – circa 1676)	
Mother:	GRIETJE REYNIERS (1603 – 24 April 1666)	

<u>ISSUE</u>	<u>BORN</u>	<u>WHERE</u>
1. MARGARET SOUTHARD	bapt. 1 January 1654	Hempstead
2. THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR	1660	Hempstead
3. SARAH SOUTHARD	about 1662	Hempstead
4. JOHN SOUTHARD	about 1663	Hempstead
5. ABIGAIL SOUTHARD	about 1665	Hempstead
6. MARY SOUTHARD	about 1666	Hempstead
7. ABRAHAM SOUTHARD	about 1667	Hempstead
8. UNICE SOUTHARD	about 1670	Hempstead
9. ISAAC SOUTHARD	about 1675	Hempstead

THOMAS SOUTHARD was probably born in Leiden, Holland in 1615.

In 1640 THOMAS sailed to New Amsterdam, possibly on the *Falconer* or *Valckenier*. That ship definitely sailed between Amsterdam and New Amsterdam between 1647 and 1650 but earlier and later dates are uncertain. Like many English exiles, it is possible that he left Leiden for England and then sailed to the colonies however there is no evidence that he was ever in England.

Some believe it was the death of his father that was the impetus to immigrate. Coincidentally, that is the year when the first records of eight Englishmen settling in New Netherland when they settle at Hempstead. They bought title to the land from FARRET, the American representative of LORD STIRLING. The eight are arrested but released upon their promise to leave the jurisdiction. His destination is quite puzzling, given the Puritan label affixed to his parents coupled with their drastic move to Leiden; coming from such diehard Puritan stock, Massachusetts Bay Colony, with its rigid Puritan ethic would be the obvious choice, not the relatively tolerant and liberal New Netherland! It seems that the Puritan influence on THOMAS was minimal, at best. Once in

¹ Much of the information was obtained at: http://www.vandorland.nl/Engels/Genealogy/EEN/ae_00116.htm#BM19331 (and) Leslie B. Freeman, Freeman-Wheeler Genealogy, 2001, Rootsweb.com

the new world, THOMAS was loosely affiliated with Saint George's Episcopal Church in Hempstead, but only as far as having baptisms and marriages performed there. He first settled at Gravesend, Long Island and went to work for a well-to-do farmer named ANTHONY JANSEN. On 20 December 1650 THOMAS SOUTHARD bought one-half of the land that THOMAS APPLEGATE had earlier purchased from RANDELL HUNT.² Details of this transaction are presented somewhat differently elsewhere³: on 29 December 1650 THOMAS APPLEGATE sold half of his Gravesend farm to THOMAS SOUTHARD. APPLEGATE had bought this farm from JOHN RUCKMAN and it was one of the 39 original lots of the 1646 division.

THOMAS married ANNICA JANSEN VAN SALEE on 29 December 1650 in Gravesend, Kings County, NY. Shortly after their marriage, in an oddly similar land transaction, THOMAS bought one-half of a farm owned by NICHOLAS STILLWELL. These 200 acres adjoined that of his father-in-law but it is not known where it was in relation to the APPLEGATE purchase. In 1653 THOMAS is shown as being the owner of plantation/lot number 11 in Gravesend which may represent either purchase.

ANTHONY and THOMAS were of a disagreeable sort and soon started quarreling about something, possibly cattle or land. ANTHONY was imprisoned, possibly at THOMAS' request, in February 1654 by the magistrates of Gravesend, an act that not only greatly exceeded their authority, it was blatantly illegal. The Provincial Council ordered his immediate release.⁴ The arrest came in the course of litigation initiated by THOMAS against ANTHONY on 22 December 1653. THOMAS says that JANSEN refuses to give him what he had promised (as a dowry?) but the various sources are rather unclear on this point. The Court of the Burgomasters and Schepens, having heard the complaint at City Hall, referred the matter to two examiners, DAVID PROVOOST and HENDRICK KIP, to determine the facts and reach a settlement. The case dragged on for several months; in no small part due to ANTHONY'S attorney D. VAN SCHELLUYNE failing to respond to the complaint. Two councilors, SILLE and LAMONTAGNE, were appointed to effect settlement after the examiners attempt failed. The councilors were, likewise, unsuccessful. The last record is dated 7 March 1654 with the court records falling silent after that. It is reported by some the case was resolved in ANTHONY'S favor.⁵ The antagonism between THOMAS and ANTHONY may have been the reason for THOMAS leaving Gravesend.

THOMAS sold his land in Gravesend and bought a farm in Hempstead, some 20 miles east, on 8 December 1655. In July 1656 THOMAS signed a protest against certain taxes that were imposed because the DWIC failed to repair damages that Hempstead had sustained from Native American incursions, in violation of the town charter.⁶ Apparently somewhat of a hot-head, THOMAS found himself in trouble after attacking a neighbor, RICHARD VALENTINE, and beating him with a club in 1658, before 25 July where the incident is found recorded. RICHARD had been appointed as one of five townsmen the previous year. To make matters worse, THOMAS chased off the Marshall who came to arrest him and tore the warrant to pieces. The court forced THOMAS to put

² John Stillwell, Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, Vol. 3, page 63 (1970)

³ Albert P. Applegate, Descendant of Thomas Applegate - Norfolkshire, England.
<http://mysite.verizon.net/vze3sbrn/AlbertP/Thomas1.htm>

⁴ Calendar of Historical Manuscripts in the Secretary of State at Albany, NY Part 1: Dutch Manuscripts 1630-1664 Volume V Council Minutes (ed: EB O'Callaghan; Albany, NY: Weed, Parsons & Co; 1865), page 231, 7 March 1654

⁵ Ralph K. Potter, Early Southard's of New York and New Jersey, (published by author, 1974) page 8.

⁶ The Records of New Amsterdam from 1653 to 1674 Anno Domini, Volume VII Minutes of the Court of Burgomasters and Schepens September 11, 1673 to November 10, 1674 Inclusive, Administrative Minutes March 8, 1657 to January 28, 1661, Inclusive, ed. Berthold Fernow (NY: Knickerbocker Press; 1897) 4 July 1656.

up his lands, goods and chattels as security for keeping the peace and appearing at his hearing in court. Not surprisingly, THOMAS lost and had to pay court costs and pledge to maintain the peace and refrain from disturbing his neighbor in the future as recorded on 28 December.⁷ JOHN BEATS entered a court action against THOMAS on 21 October 1672 but the specifics of this action are not known.⁸

Eventually he owned about 214 acres of land around Hempstead. On 12 February 1656 a property exchange, effective 30 April 1656, is recorded. THOMAS traded a house and home lot formerly belonging to MICHAEL CHATTERTON and five pounds paid in corn while he received from DANIEL WHITEHEAD a house and home lot “*formerly belonging to SAMUEL MATTHEWS with every building thereon plus five acres meadow which was laid out and does appertain to said lot with six acres of hollow belonging to lot with two ox gates and six gates in the neck with house, home lot, all buildings and orchards.*”⁹ In early 1667 THOMAS bought nineteen acres of meadowland in three lots from ABRAHAM SMITH of Hempstead. No price is mentioned in the recording. All three were on the shoreline of Long Island Sound, one on Fordham’s Neck and the other two on Coe’s Neck.¹⁰ There is mention of forty-five meadows at Half Neck in Hempstead records in June 1671; meadow number 29, containing four acres and 13 ¼ rods, was assigned to THOMAS SOUTHARD.¹¹ In 1686 THOMAS bought about six acres of meadow located on the south side of Hempstead Township on Hicke’s Neck from ABRAHAM SMITH.¹² A dispute over the boundary of this six-acre meadow arose several years later between ROBERT WILLIAMS and THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR who, as the heir-at-law, received all real estate owned by his father. The dispute got heated and WILLIAMS winds up being fined 6 pence for throwing hay in the creek, 6 pence for pounding SOUTHARD’s horse, and “1 d” for trespass as mentioned in the arbitrated settlement. The arbitrated settlement was recorded 5 September 1704 and it gave the “north” part of the meadow to SOUTHARD and the south to WILLIAMS.¹³ On 1 May 1688 we find recorded another land transaction in which THOMAS purchased a 1.5 acre fenced tract with house and fruit trees from JAMES BALDWIN. The tract was adjacent, to the south, to property already in THOMAS’ possession; it fronted the north side of “the street or highway.” This recording may have been precipitated by THOMAS’ death in that year and could reflect an earlier transaction. It appears that the 1.5 acre tract plus the lot to the north were sold by ABRAHAM and ISAAC SOUTHARD to WILLIAM TOTTEN for 50 pounds silver on 25 March 1707.¹⁴ This was less than a year after the court ordered a real estate settlement of THOMAS’ property in which ABRAHAM and ISAAC, together, may have received a one-third share of the real estate which included these two lots.

THOMAS’ cattle earmark was a “flower de luce” or a fleur-de-lis design on the top of the right ear; this would pass to his son ABRAHAM while the other sons used the same symbol with an added distinguishing component such as a hole.¹⁵

⁷ *vide supra*. Potter.

⁸ Hempstead Court Records, Book B, page 207.

⁹ Records of the Towns of North and South Hempstead Long Island, N.Y., Volume II; ed: Benjamin Hicks (Jamaica, NY: 1897) page 235, 12 February 1656

¹⁰ *Ibid.* Pages 133-4, 26 April 1667

¹¹ *Ibid.* pages 291-293, 29 June 1671

¹² *Ibid.* pages 159-161, 16 April 1686

¹³ *Ibid.* pages 323-4, 5 September 1704

¹⁴ *Ibid.* pages 36-7, 1 May 1688 and pages 470-1, 25 March 1707.

¹⁵ *Ibid.* page 164, 15 February 1710; page 299, 24 April 1729; and (page unknown) 28 July 1729.

THOMAS, though born of English parents, is not known to have ever set foot in England yet the choice of Hempstead belies an English-leaning as the town was very-much known to be an English settlement in the New Netherlands. The conflicts between the Dutch and the encroaching English may have created conflicts for THOMAS and ANNICA'S children as several of their nine children left Hempstead, some going up the Hudson River and others going to Connecticut and then onto New Jersey.

After moving to Hempstead, the SOUTHARDS attended Saint George's Anglican Church; it became an Episcopalian church after independence from England.

THOMAS died intestate in 1688 in Hempstead, Queens County, New York. His sons JOHN and THOMAS appear to have acted as executors. Court-appointed arbitrators decided that the four older daughters would receive, ultimately, 20 pounds each of the cash portion of the estate while UNICE, the youngest, received 23. Payments were first

made by sons JOHN and THOMAS on 7 October 1690: ABIGAIL, unmarried at the time, received 16 pounds 14 shillings; the married daughters SARAH BEDLE and MARY MARTIN received (or rather their husband's received on their behalf) 20 pounds each; GEORGE FOWLER received 23 pounds on behalf of his wife UNICE and HERMAN HENDRICKE received 16 pounds 4 shillings 6 pence on behalf of his wife (and THOMAS' daughter) MARGARET. The two daughters who received less than 20 pounds received additional payments to bring their total amount received to 20 pounds: ABIGAIL, married within a year from the first payment, received the second one on 29 December 1691 (actually payment was made to her husband EDWARD SPRAGG) and HERMAN HENDRICKE received payment on behalf of his wife MARGARET on 3 April 1694.¹⁶

The much more important real estate was awarded to the oldest son, THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR, as the heir-at-law, without stipulating how the lands should be divided among the four brothers. Unfortunately it is near impossible with all the individual land transactions to easily identify what constituted the SOUTHARD Homestead as it is clear that some of the aforementioned properties were transferred in whole to sons while the homestead itself was divided into three partitions. It appears that the homestead was to the south – southeast of the village proper; today Coe's Neck Park lies south near the Baldwin area.

ANNICA was living with her son ISAAC in Hempstead in 1698. It is not known when she died.

In an attempt to reach a real estate settlement with his brothers THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR signed a release on 13 April 1698 to his brothers JOHN, ABRAHAM and ISAAC, of all his rights in the specified lands of deceased father THOMAS SOUTHARD, to share equally as follows:

"2 meadow lots on Coe's Neck on south side of island;

¹⁶ *Ibid.* pages 162-4, 7 October 1690; and unknown pages on dates mentioned for second payments.

2 lots fresh & salt;
Northernmost ¾ of 150 acre tract;
1 moiety of meadow lot on Washborne's Neck that was exchanged with RICHARD
CORNWELL;
¾ of homestead & land "called the follee after our mothers decease"
In consideration that my 3 brothers accept the above as their full share of the
estate of our father and the nullification of all former agreements
Acknowledged before JOHN TREDWELL, JP by THOMAS SOUTHARD and his wife
FRANCES, same date."¹⁷

THOMAS' attempt to settle was rejected by his brothers and the matter ended up with arbitration and a court-ordered settlement. That there may have been ongoing disputes among THOMAS' sons regarding the handling of the estate is possibly indicated by JOHN, ABRAHAM, ISAAC and THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR being bound to each other in June 1706 for 1,000 pounds "to keep to the terms of the judgment of JUSTICE JOHN TREDWELL and THOMAS GILDERSLEEVE in their differences."¹⁸ The "terms" split the homestead which sat on the largest parcel of land, possibly the afore-mentioned 150 acre tract, into thirds: JOHN got the north third, THOMAS the south and ABRAHAM and ISAAC jointly shared the central third. ABRAHAM, unmarried, had lived with ISAAC for at least fifteen years and it appears their mother lived with them, possibly until her death. The remaining smaller parcels of land were probably split in a similar proportion based on size and value but without resorting to dividing each lot. This court-ordered settlement did nothing to ease the friction between brothers and it appears to have been the cause of animosity existing between the descendants for two or three generations. Recording of some of the ordered land transfers occurred as late as 1725.

THOMAS' Hempstead home remained in the SOUTHARD family until 2005.

ISSUE:

- 1) MARGARET SOUTHARD: baptized 1 January 1654 at the Dutch Church, Hempstead; married in 1678 to HARMAN HENDRICKSON (b. 1651, New Amsterdam, son of HENDRICK SWEARING and EGBERTJE JANS) HARMAN received 20 pounds on MARGARET's behalf from her father's estate, made in two payments on 7 October 1690 and 3 April 1694. HARMAN died before 20 December 1701 at Fosters Meadows in Hempstead, Queens, NY. MARGARET died in 1715 at same place. 10 children:
 - a) HENDRICK HENDRICKSON: bapt. 1679
 - b) CORNELIA HENDRICKSON: bapt. 1681 in Flatbush; died young.
 - c) PHEBE HENDRICKSON
 - d) THOMAS HENDRICKSON
 - e) MARGARET HENDRICKSON
 - f) UNICE HENDRICKSON
 - g) JOHN HENDRICKSON
 - h) MARY HENDRICKSON
 - i) ABRAHAM HENDRICKSON
 - j) EGBURCHE HENDRICKSON

¹⁷ *Ibid.* pages 466-7, 13 April 1698.

¹⁸ *Ibid.* pages 467-8, 5 June 1706.

- 2) THOMAS SOUTHARD, JUNIOR: born 1660, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; owned 25 acres, 6 oxen, 8 cows, 7 hogs, 20 sheep and 3 horses in the "Account of Valuation of Estate of Towne of Hempstead on Long Island" of 11 October 1683¹⁹; married in 1685 to FRANCES CHAMPION (born 1661 in Poughkeepsie, Dutchess County, NY, daughter of JOHN and SARAH CHAMPION). THOMAS received all of his father's property upon his death but could not reach an amicable settlement with his brothers. Eventually the court ordered a settlement in 1706 in which he got the south third of the SOUTHARD homestead, and probably a percentage of the other smaller parcels of land too. The deed transferring a half-share in the central division of the SOUTHARD homestead to his brother ABRAHAM was not recorded until 29 March 1725. He died 10 March 1740 and FRANCES died 11 April 1757, both in East Fishkill, Dutchess County, N.Y. 8 children: [see Potter, page 56 for descendants]
- a) ELIZABETH SOUTHARD: born 1688, Hempstead.
 - b) HANNAH SOUTHARD: born 1690, Hempstead.
 - c) THOMAS SOUTHARD, III: born 1695, Hempstead.
 - d) SAMUEL SOUTHARD: born 1700, Hempstead; married MARY STILLWELL.
 - e) HENRY SOUTHARD: born 1702, Hempstead; married PHOEBE TOTTEN. He died in 1790.
 - i) HENRY SOUTHARD JUNIOR: born 1734; married (1) ANNE and (2) RUTH; he died 1813.
 - ii) ISAAC SOUTHARD: born 1738; married SARAH RENNE; died 1791.
 - f) ZEBULON SOUTHARD: born 1706, Hempstead.
 - g) RICHARD SOUTHARD: born 1707, Hempstead; married JANE SMITH in Hempstead on 14 January 1731. He received thirty acres of his father's southern third of the SOUTHARD homestead in 1740 and sold it for 500 pounds which was recorded on 5 April 1759. 3 known children are:
 - i) DANIEL SOUTHARD: married SARA VANVOORHEES on 21 January 1762 at the Presbyterian Church in Rubout, Dutchess County, NY.
 - ii) RICHARD SOUTHARD, JUNIOR: born 7 July 1738; married DEBORAH FROST; died 6 November 1787.
 - iii) ZEBULON SOUTHARD: was baptized at Saint George's Church in Hempstead.
 - h) JANE SOUTHARD: born 1710, Hempstead, married NATHAN VALENTINE on 12 December 1736, Hempstead.
- 3) SARAH SOUTHARD: born about 1662 in Hempstead, Queens County, NY; and died August 1698. She married JOHN BEADLE before 7 October 1690. He was born about 1669 to ROBERT and BLANCHE BEADLE and died after 26 February 1715. JOHN received 20 pounds on SARAH'S behalf from her father's estate on 7 October 1690. 7 known children:
- a) JOHN BEADLE, JUNIOR: born 1691, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; died 2 January 1759, New Providence, Essex County, NJ (some sources give 1768 and Morris County for death). He married MARY LINNINGTON (born before 1687; died before 1750). 4 known children:
 - i) JACOB BEADLE: born about 1705; died 9 December 1763. He married MARTHA LAINS (died 9 September 1773). 2 children:
 - (1) BENJAMIN BEADLE: born 1731; married SARAH HERRIMAN (died 7 November 1812, Basking Ridge, Somerset County, NJ). BENJAMIN died 13 December 1793, New Providence, Essex County, NJ;

¹⁹ E.B. O'Callaghan, Lists of Inhabitants of Colonial New York, 1979, p. 144

- (2) JACOB BEADLE JUNIOR: born 1737; married PATIENCE FRAZIER. JACOB died 11 July 1768.²⁰
- (a) ISRAEL BEADLE: born 1767; married MARTHA LOWERY; died 25 January 1817. Surname changed to BIDDLE. 8 children:
 - (i) JOSEPH BIDDLE
 - (ii) SARAH BIDDLE: died 1828.
 - (iii) GERSHOM BIDDLE: born 1800; died 25 June 1859.
 - (iv) MARY LOWERY BIDDLE: born 10 May 1802; died 21 October 1877.
 - (v) ESTHER BIDDLE: born 1807; died 1869.
 - (vi) CLARKE BIDDLE: born 1809; died 1867.
 - (vii) ABRAHAM BIDDLE: born 1811; died 1870.
 - (viii) ISRAEL BIDDLE JUNIOR: born October 1815; died 18 April 1860.
 - ii) JOHN BEADLE, III: born about 1706, Long Hill Township, Morris County, NJ; died December 1763. He married SUSANNAH VALENTINE about 1725. She was born 1703, also in Long Hill Township, and died 9 September 1773 in New Providence, Essex County, NJ. 5 children:
 - (1) JACOB BEADLE: died 16 June 1777; married (first?) ELEANOR POWERS (died about 1803).
 - (2) WILLIAM BEADLE: died 30 January 1814; married ESTHER LITTELL (born 19 February 1739; died 18 October 1828).
 - (3) MARTHA BEADLE: married DANIEL CORY.
 - (4) MARY BEADLE: married HENRY GRAY.
 - (5) SUSANNAH BEADLE: born 10 June 1731, Turkey (near New Providence), Essex County, NJ; possibly died young.
 - iii) MARY BEADLE: born about 1716; died 12 March 1748. She married THOMAS KINNAN (born about 1715 in Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ; died after 6 July 1778 in Long Hill Twp., Morris County). 8 children:
 - (1) DEBORAH KINNAN.
 - (2) THOMAS KINNAN, JUNIOR: born 1 November 1733; died 1 January 1829; married (first) 4 June 1786 to SALLY RIGGS (born 19 August 1768; died before 1802); married (second) 15 February 1802 in Basking Ridge, Somerset, NJ to IRENA RAYNOR (born 8 February 1771, Long Island, NY; died 16 January 1829).
 - (3) JOHN KINNAN: born about 1735, Morris County, NJ; married MARY SUTTON (born 19 September 1744, Basking Ridge, Somerset County, NJ)
 - (4) ELLEN KINNAN: born about 1735; married ELEAKEN AYERS.
 - (5) JOSEPH KINNAN: born about 1740; died 1833, Derry Twp., Westmorland, PA; married about 1770 to REBECCA DOTY (born before 1750).
 - (6) SUSANNA KINNAN: born 7 May 1740, NJ; died 14 May 1807; married 3 April 1758 in Basking Ridge to GOYN MCCOY (born 1 January 1738; died 20 April 1800, Somerville, Somerset County, NJ.) He is noted as being a "Caledonia immigrant" but they may mean he was from Scotland or that he sailed from Scotland on a ship named *Caledonia*.
 - (7) PHOEBE KINNAN: born about 1742; died in Indiana, PA; married in 1768 to Peter Sutton (born 1743, Basking Ridge, Somerset, NJ; died April 1829, Indiana, PA).

²⁰ Rick Parrot, "Sarah (Southard) Bedell," 19 June 2012; <http://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Southard-325>

- (8) MARY KINNAN : born about 1746; died in Mendham, Morris County, NJ; married ISAAC BEADLE (born 1763; died in Athens, OH).
- iv) HENRY BEADLE: born c1715; surname changed to BEDELL; wife's surname was SUTTON.²¹
- (1) JOHN BEDELL: born 1735; married DEBORAH MULFORD (daughter of JONATHON MULFORD and ESTHER CONKLIN).
- (a) STEPHEN BEDELL: married PHEBE DRAKE (daughter of DANIEL DRAKE and PHEBE EXTELL). STEPHEN died 1839.
- (i) CHRISTINA BEDELL: born 14 December 1787, Sandystone, Sussex County, NJ; married THOMAS HOUGH (son of JOHN HOUGH JUNIOR and ELIZABETH) died 11 September 1859, Wyoming County, PA.
- b) SAMUEL BEADLE: born before 1698
- c) JACOB BEADLE: born before 1698
- d) BENJAMIN BEADLE: born before 1698
- e) MARTHA BEADLE: born before 1698
- f) ELIZABETH BEADLE: born after 1698
- g) PHEBE BEADLE: born after 1698
- 4) JOHN SOUTHARD: born about 1663, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; died about 1740; married about 1685 GRACE CARMAN. *Their story continues on page 21.*
- 5) ABIGAIL SOUTHARD: born about 1665, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; received 16 pounds 14 shillings from father's estate on 7 October 1690; married on same day (7 October 1690) or at the latest 31 December 1691 to EDWARD SPRAGG (b. 1666, Hempstead) EDWARD witnessed first payment made from estate of THOMAS SOUTHARD to single daughter ABIGAIL and then received, on wife's behalf, 3 pounds, 6 shillings, from estate on 31 December 1691. In 1698 the first three children are living in Hempstead with their parents but the family may have moved to Staten Island shortly after this. 4 known children from this marriage:
- a) HANNAH SPRAGG: born before 1698 in Hempstead
- b) SARAH SPRAGG: born before 1698 in Hempstead
- c) JACOB SPRAGG: born before 1698 in Hempstead
- d) EDWARD SPRAGG: born after 1698 on Staten Island.
- 6) MARY SOUTHARD: born about 1666, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; married THOMAS MARTIN. THOMAS received 20 pounds on MARY's behalf from her father's estate on 7 October 1690. They had 3 children by 1698:
- a) ELIZABETH MARTIN
- b) THOMAS MARTIN, JUNIOR
- c) ABRAHAM MARTIN
- 7) ABRAHAM SOUTHARD: born about 1667; never married, died about 1727, Hempstead, Queens County, NY. Lived with younger brother ISAAC most of his life and received one-half of the center division of his father's homestead in the 1706 court settlement; the deed for this transfer was not recorded until 29 March 1725. ABRAHAM and ISAAC jointly received at least two additional lots: the 1.5 acre tract bought from JAMES BALDWIN on 1 May 1688 plus the lot to the north that was referenced in the BALDWIN deed. These were sold by both to

²¹ Henry Bedell information from "Family Files June 2012," Genealogical Society of Bergen County (NJ); <http://www.njgsbc.org/files/familyfiles/p1786.htm#i56413> (update 25 June 2012)

WILLIAM TOTTEN for 50 pounds silver on 25 March 1707. ABRAHAM's will, dated 3 March 1726 (*o.s.?*), states:

In the name of God, Amen. I, ABRAHAM SOUTHARD, of Hempstead, in Queens County, being weak in body....

I leave to my brother, ISAAC SOUTHARD, all my movable estate.

I leave to my brother ISAAC'S son ABRAHAM, my dwelling house and the land adjoining, and all my other lands in Hempstead.

I make my brother ISAAC executor.

Witnesses were JOHN TREDWELL, CALEB CARMAN, JR., BENJAMIN BEADLE (his nephew) and CHARLES PETERS. The will was proved 15 March 1727. It was probably dated using the old style thus we can assume that ABRAHAM died between 3 and 15 March 1727.

- 8) UNICE SOUTHARD: born about 1670, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; married GEORGE (GORG) FOWLER before 7 October 1690 as he received 23 pounds on UNICE's behalf from her father's estate on that date. 1 known son:
 - a) GEORGE FOWLER
- 9) ISAAC SOUTHARD: was born about 1675 in Hempstead, Queens County, NY. He received one-half of the central division of father's homestead in 1706 and, jointly with brother ABRAHAM, at least the two additional lots mentioned previously: the 1.5 acre BALDWIN tract and the adjoining lot to the north; they sold both to WILLIAM TOTTEN for 50 pounds silver on 25 March 1707. He married GRACE TOTTEN (born 1683) at Saint George's Church before 1698 (*why?*). There was at least one other ISAAC SOUTHARD in Morris County at this time. He was a founding member of the Rockaway First Presbyterian Church in 1758 as was his son ISAAC SOUTHARD JUNIOR. ISAAC SOUTHARD supposedly died in 1750 in Basking Ridge NJ but there is no supportive evidence for such an assertion. (See discussion following Issue section). 1 known child:
 - a) ABRAHAM SOUTHARD: born about 1705; and died March 1777. In 1727 he received as a bequest from his uncle, also ABRAHAM SOUTHARD, the other half of the central division of his grandfather's homestead. He married on 28 January 1737 in Saint George's Church (Hempstead) to CORNELIA BARNES (daughter of JOHN and HANNAH BARNES, and sister of CATHERINE BARNES). They sold the SOUTHARD homestead property in 1750 and were living in Basking Ridge in Bernards Township, Somerset County, New Jersey by 1755. The existence of this deed may clear ABRAHAM from being the same as the ABRAHAM SOUTHARD arrested for counterfeiting in Morristown, NJ on 17 August 1747, released then arrested again on 20 September 1748 and breaking out of jail on 25 September – but maybe not: an accomplice was SYLVANUS TOTTEN – the same surname as ABRAHAM's mother! And a JOHN PIPES SENIOR was convicted for the same offense in July 1750, probably from the 1747 incident in Morris County, the same PIPES that was a founder of the Rockaway Church who moved from the area to Jersey Settlement in Surry County, North Carolina around 1770... where an ISAAC SOUTHARD is found in the 1780s, leaving a second wife, SARAH CARTER, widow in 1791. ABRAHAM was an elder of the Basking Ridge Presbyterian Church. [see Potter, page 67 for descendants] 8 children are:
 - i) AMOS SOUTHARD: born 1740 in Hempstead.
 - ii) ELIZABETH SOUTHARD: born 1742 in Hempstead.

- iii) ISAAC SOUTHARD: born 1745 in Hempstead.
- iv) HENRY SOUTHARD: born 7 October 1747 in Hempstead. Died 22 May 1842, Basking Ridge, Somerset, NJ. *This* is the father of HONORABLE SAMUEL LEWIS SOUTHARD.
- v) CHARITY SOUTHARD: born in 1749 in Hempstead.
- vi) RICHARD SOUTHARD: born in 1752 in Basking Ridge, NJ.
- vii) DANIEL SOUTHARD: born in 1755 in Basking Ridge, NJ.
- viii) ABRAHAM SOUTHARD: born in January 1759 in Basking Ridge, NJ.

Husband: **JOHN SOUTHARD**

Born:	About 1663	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Married:	About 1685	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Died:	About 1740	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Buried:		
Father:	THOMAS SOUTHARD (1615 – 1688)	
Mother:	ANNICA JANSEN VAN SALEE (~1630 – after 1698)	

Wife: **GRACE CARMAN**

Born:	
Died:	
Buried:	

ISSUE	BORN	WHERE
1. JOHN SOUTHARD, JUNIOR	About 1692	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
2. JOSEPH SOUTHARD	About 1695	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
3. CALEB SOUTHARD	About 1700	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
4. SOLOMON SOUTHARD	About 1703	Hempstead, Queens County, New York

JOHN SOUTHARD: born about 1663, Hempstead, Queens County, NY; died about 1740; married about 1685 GRACE CARMAN. CALEB CARMAN owned a farm adjacent to the SOUTHARD homestead and was probably related to GRACE, possibly an older brother or uncle. JOHN and GRACE lived on the north third of the SOUTHARD homestead which JOHN was awarded in the 1706 court settlement; this was passed to their second son JOSEPH. The “JOHN SOUTHWARD” listed as a sergeant in the 1738 Queens County Militia under command of CAPTAIN JACOB HICKS is probably this person. 4 known children from this marriage.

CALEB CARMAN was born 1 March 1639, probably in Boston, to JOHN CALEB and FLORENCE FORDHAM. His parents sailed on the ship *Lyon* in 1632. JOHN was a founder of Hempstead under the KIEFT patent of 16 November 1644. CALEB married ELIZABETH SEAMAN. He was in the whaling business with his eldest sons, spending much time at a settlement known as *Town Bank* in Delaware Bay during the whaling season. The family relocated to Cape May County by 1685 as CALEB was commissioned a Justice of the Peace in that year. On 25 March 1688 he was granted a 7-year lease with option to buy on 1200 acres along Cold Spring Creek, near Cape May by the West Jersey Governor. Purchase price was 5 per 100 acres for the 1st 400 acres and 10 per acre for the remainder; 1 for 20 acres and 1 for 1/10 acre, respectively. An early but undated deed on page 135 of Liber B provides the following: John Carman bought 100 acres in Oyster Point in *CS neck* and 41 acres from Randall Huitt; his sons Benjamin and William Carman sold the 100 acres to Jacob Spicer, Esq He died in 1693 owning over 1000 acres there; his entire estate was bequeathed to his widow ELIZABETH. A deed extract states the elder Caleb received a patent for 250 acres of the leased land from the proprietors on 27 March 1694; the assumption is the date is o.s. meaning the year using the current calendar is 1693. The following day the younger Caleb received a similar patent but his included *half of the water mill* on Cold Spring Creek; he sold the half-mill to John Crawford on 27 October 1698. On 11 April 1693 (assumed) Caleb and Elizabeth sold a small lot in Portsmouth Town to Jacob Spicer. Sons JOHN and CALEB JUNIOR bought 250 acres each from the estate as did son-in-law JONATHON FORMAN. ELIZABETH received a patent from the proprietors on 22 April 1695 for 300 acres at a cost of 20 and her sons

John and Caleb received similar patents that same day for 255 acres each, later giving 100 to son JONATHON. She died in 1699, before September, and her son Caleb administered the estate. She left 100 acres, located between lots owned by Ephraim Carman and Joshua Carman, to son DANIEL CARMAN which he sold to brother CALEB in 1700. CALEB sold 100 acres from the estate to another son (his brother) Joshua Carman on 4 September 1699 which CALEB bought back the following year. This tract was adjacent to his property and on the southeast side of Elizabeth's 300 acres. Another son, Ephraim Carman is identified when he sells 6 acres of land in Cold Spring where he lives to John Bradner that was bought by Caleb Carman, deceased.

ISSUE

- 5) JOHN SOUTHARD, JUNIOR: born about 1692 in Hempstead; was a member of the 1738 Queens County Militia with his father. Married HANNAH circa 1724. May have predeceased father as north third of SOUTHARD homestead passed to next younger brother JOSEPH. 3 children:
 1. GLORIANA SOUTHARD: born about 1726
 2. JOHN SOUTHARD, III: born about 1727
 3. ABRAHAM SOUTHARD: born c1728. Wife SUSANNAH; moved to Barnegat, NJ by 1750.
- 6) JOSEPH SOUTHARD: born c1695 in Hempstead; married in Hempstead on 23 December 1737 to CHIENCHE BARENTSE (CATHERINE BARNES; born 1710, Jamaica, NY, to JOHN and HANNAH BARNES). *Their story continues on the following page.*
- 7) CALEB SOUTHARD: born about 1700; married 31 July 1732 in St. George's Church, Hempstead to CHARITY BEAT. Owned a farm on Coe's Neck, Hempstead next to one owned by his brother JOSEPH. CALEB sold the Coe's Neck farm on 15 December 1752 and is thought to have moved across Long Island Sound to New Haven for about a decade before moving to Manahawkin, NJ becoming one of the progenitors of the SOUTHARD family in southern New Jersey. CALEB died in Stafford Township, Monmouth (now Ocean) County 1780-83.
- 8) SOLOMON SOUTHARD: born about 1703; married 31 July 1732 in St. George's Church, Hempstead to PHOEBE WOOD.

Husband:	JOSEPH SOUTHARD	
Born:	About 1695	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Married:	23 December 1737	Hempstead, Queens County, New York
Died:		
Buried:		
Father:	THOMAS SOUTHARD (1615 – 1688)	
Mother:	ANNICA JANSEN VAN SALEE (~1630 – after 1698)	

Wife:	CHIENCHE BARENTSE	
Born:	1710	Jamaica, Queens County, NY
Died:		
Buried:		
Father:	JAN BARENTSE	
Mother:	ANTJE	

JOSEPH SOUTHARD: born about 1695 in Hempstead; married in Hempstead on 23 December 1737 to CHIENCHE BARENTSE (anglicized to CATHERINE BARNES; born 1710, Jamaica, NY, daughter of JOHN and HANNAH BARNES) Inherited north third of SOUTHARD homestead from father; disposition unknown. Hopefully a deed will be located that has JOSEPH selling the north third intact which should give us an idea of the size of the undivided SOUTHARD homestead. He owned a farm on Coe's Neck next to one owned by his brother CALEB. It isn't clear if the Coe's Neck farm is one-and-the-same as the north third of the SOUTHARD homestead. May have moved to Clinton, Dutchess County, NY in later years.

ISSUE:

1. JOSEPH SOUTHARD, JUNIOR: was born 1715 in Hempstead, Queens County, NY; was baptized and married to ALICE LANDON on 6 June 1756 at St. George's Church (Hempstead); moved to Clinton, Dutchess County, NY
2. BENJAMIN SOUTHARD: born 5 June 1738; baptized on 23 June 1744 at St. George's Church, Hempstead; married JANE.²² *Their story continues on the following page.*
3. MARY SOUTHARD: baptized with older brother BENJAMIN on 23 June 1744 at St. George's Church, Hempstead; married JAMES BENTLEY on 1 February 1768 at St. George's Church (Hempstead)
4. JOHN SOUTHARD: born about 1745 in Hempstead; moved to Little Egg Harbor Township, NJ (near UNCLE CALEB SOUTHARD in Manahawkin) with older brother BENJAMIN before 1767. He possibly married HANNAH FALKINBURG in Little Egg Harbor Township, Monmouth County on 25 March 1767. The license to marry, issued five days earlier, bears the signature of JOHN's brother BENJAMIN SOUTHARD. Of note is the fact that this marriage also appears in records of Gloucester County (with same date) and Burlington County with date of 24 March.

²² Virginia (Holloway) Lee, Bible records of (extractor: Gertrude Brick, 1974, Genealogical Society of NJ)

Husband's Name: **BENJAMIN SOUTHARD**²³

Born: 5 June 1738 Hempstead, Kings County, N.Y.
Married: 22 December 1762 Hempstead, Kings County, N.Y.
Died:
Buried:
Father: JOSEPH SOUTHARD
Mother: CATHERINE BARNES

Wife's Name: **JANE COLLUM**

Born: 18 June 1744 Newtown, Queens County, N.Y.
Died:
Buried:
Father:
Mother:

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) JOHN SOUTHARD	7 June 1763	Hempstead, Kings County, N.Y.
2) REBECCA SOUTHARD	5 September 1765	Hempstead, Kings County, N.Y.
3) ABEL SOUTHARD	21 MARCH 1768	HEMPSTEAD, KINGS COUNTY, N.Y.
4) CALEB SOUTHARD	4 March 1771	

BENJAMIN was baptized, with his sister MARY, at Saint George's Episcopal Church in Hempstead on 1744. He married JANE at the same church. Some researchers have challenged the parentage of BENJAMIN as noted above, going so far as to have their positions published in the *New York Genealogical and Biographical* journal. While their substantiating "proof" is commendable, what is most noteworthy is not what it contains, but rather, what it does not contain. A New Jersey descendant of BENJAMIN and JANE by the name of VIRGINIA (HOLLOWAY) LEE maintained a family bible. Within its pages appear the names ABEL, and his first wife LYDIA and CALEB with reference to his wife, probably MARY GINNINGS. The children of both are completely listed as well. What are most interesting are the entries: "BENJAMIN SOUTHARD, born June 5, 1738" and "wife JANE SOUTHARD, born June 18, 1744." An assumption made on my part is that a person would not enter such information in something considered as precious as a family bible, unless there was a familial connection. As the date in the bible for BENJAMIN's birth match exactly the entry in the baptismal register of Saint George's Episcopal Church in Hempstead, an entry which gives BENJAMIN's parents names, it is a safe assumption that, indeed, these two records refer to the same person, exactly as RALPH K. POTTER asserted in his 1974 book.

A different assertion by POTTER however is tenuous, at best. That assertion is the three alleged marriages of BENJAMIN: first to JANE, a second license issued to marry ABIGAIL HEWITT on 21 April 1773 in Cumberland County, NJ, and the third license to marry PRISCILLA HILDRETH issued on 22 May 1789 in Cape May County, NJ. Having examined personally the two licenses,

²³Vide Potter, op. cit., pp.115-116.

the signatures do not match. The third license is “signed” with an X while the second one bears a full signature – unlikely that someone forgot how to write between 1773 and 1789!

That BENJAMIN did move to New Jersey is supported by the signature of BENJAMIN SOUTHARD appearing on the application for a marriage license issued for his brother JOHN to marry HANNAH FALKINBURGH in Little Egg Harbor Township, Monmouth County on 20 March 1767. Of course the existence of brothers named JOHN and BENJAMIN SOUTHARD in no way establishes, as fact, that they are the same as our ancestor and his brother.

ISSUE:

- 1) JOHN SOUTHARD:
- 2) REBECCA SOUTHARD:
- 3) **ABEL SOUTHARD**: married **LYDIA** ? *Their story continues on the following page.*
- 4) CALEB SOUTHARD: A CALEB SOUTHARD married MARY GINNINGS on 22 September 1808 in Monmouth County, NJ.²⁴ She died 3 January 1835.²⁵ It has not yet been determined that this marriage refers to the one of CALEB and MARY of this section. However, this marriage has not been documented in any published genealogies and would explain why his brother ABEL, with several children in tow, would move to New Jersey after his wife died in 1816.

²⁴ New Jersey Marriages, 1690-1900; Southard surname extracted from internet database by author.

²⁵ Virginia (Holloway) Lee Bible Records, Nettie Allen Collection, Bernards Township Public Library.

Husband's Name: **ABEL SOUTHARD**²⁶

Born:	21 March 1768	Hempstead, Kings County, N.Y. ²⁷
Married:	circa 1792	New Haven, CT. (?)
Died:	1830/40	Monmouth County, NJ
Buried:		

Father: BENJAMIN SOUTHARD (5 June 1738 -)
 Mother: JANE COLLUM (18 June 1744 -)

Wife's Name: **LYDIA**

Born:		
Died:	17 August 1816 ²⁸	New Haven, CT. (?)
Buried:		
Father:		
Mother:		

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
5) JOHN SOUTHARD	11 OCTOBER 1794	NEW HAVEN, CT.
6) PHOEBE SOUTHARD	5 August 1796	
7) MARY ANN SOUTHARD	19 July 1798	
8) CHARITY SOUTHARD	20 July 1800	
9) ABEL SOUTHARD, JUNIOR	July 1802	New Haven, CT.
10) JOSEPH SOUTHARD	3 March 1804	
11) ABNER SOUTHARD	1 July 1806	
12) CHARLOTTE SOUTHARD	12 June 1809	
13) LYDIA SOUTHARD	3 April 1811	
14) CALEB SOUTHARD	22 March 1814	
15) BENJAMIN SOUTHARD	3 August 1816	

Much of the information obtained so far is circumstantial and conjecture. An ABEL SOUTHARD signed the Long Island Declaration of 1776; however, since this ABEL was only 8 years old at the time, it is doubtful that it was he.

It appears that ABEL left Hempstead early and moved to New Haven. Whether his parents were with him is not known. In the book *Early Southards of New York and New Jersey*, cited above, RALPH POTTER errantly asserts that ABEL died on 17 August 1816. POTTER cites the Bible records of VIRGINIA (HOLLOWAY) LEE; those records clearly state that LYDIA SOUTHARD died on this date. Further disputing an 1816 death of ABEL are the following marriage records, none of which appear in the POTTER book. Shortly after LYDIA's death, records show that ABEL and his children moved to New Hanover Township, Burlington County, N.J.

Three marriage records from Burlington County, N.J. can be attributed to this family:

²⁶ vide Potter, *op. cit.*, pp.115-116.

²⁷ Brick, Gertrude. "Bible of Virginia (Holloway) Lee," 1964; in the collection of Genealogical Society of NJ, New Brunswick, NJ.
 Copy in possession of author. This record gives birthdates of Abel's children and the death date of his wife Lydia.

²⁸ Brick, Gertrude See note 2

- License issued to ABEL SOUTHARD and LOUISA HOPKINS on 9 March 1817 in New Hanover Township, married 29 March 1817, recorded 27 May 1817;
- Marriage record for ABEL SOUTHARD, JR. and MARY HOPKINS on 27 May 1824 in New Hanover Township;
- Marriage record for BENJAMIN SOUTHARD and ABIGAIL COLEMAN, both of Monmouth County, married 10 January 1838 at Cookstown.

ABEL'S marriage to LOUISA HOPKINS was reported in the *Trenton Federalist* and the *True American* newspapers.²⁹ From the *Trenton Federalist*:

MARRIED – On Saturday evening the 29th ult[imate] by JOHN EMLEY, Esq. MR. ABEL SOUTHARD to Mrs. LOUISA HOPKINS, both of the township of New Hanover, Burlington County.

The Burlington County recording states:

Personally appeared before me the subscriber, one of the Justices of the Peace in and for said County of Burlington, on the 29th day of March 1817 Abel Southard and Louisa Hopkins both of the Township of New Hanover, Burlington County. I then did pronounce husband and wife agreeable to the laws of the State.

*Jno Emley
Recorded May 27, 1817
Jm Huinech*

Likewise, in Monmouth County Courthouse records appear several marriages that may be from this family:³⁰

- License issued to MARY SOUTHARD and WILLIAM SOPER, both of Stafford Township, at Good Luck, on 2 May 1822;
- License issued to PHEBE SOUTHARD and SAMUEL CHELOR on 17 August 1818;
- License issued to PHEBE SOUTHARD and JASPER GOLDEN, of Philadelphia, in July 1820.
- In 1826 there are two marriages with a groom named JOSEPH SOUTHARD, undoubtedly one is ABEL's son. The first is with MARY ANN DAUGH on 29 January 1826 and second with LIDIA ANN HAYS on 31 December 1826.

The 1830 Federal Census returns have an *ABEL SUTHARD* in Dover Township.³¹

Females: (1) 60-70 y.o. (LOUISA)

Males: (1) 60-70 y.o. (ABEL)

(2) 20-30 y.o. (JOSEPH, ABNER)

(1) 15-20 y.o. (CALEB)

(1) 10-15 y.o. (BENJAMIN)

²⁹ *Trenton Federalist*, 14 April 1817, page 3, volume XVIII, number 916, viewed at the New Jersey State Library, Trenton; and *True American*, 21 April 1817, page 3, viewed at the New Jersey State Archives, Trenton.

³⁰ Marriage Licenses, Monmouth County, Liber B, pp. 175 and 189, Freehold, NJ.

³¹ 1830 U.S. Census; Monmouth County, NJ, Dover Township, p. 372.

ABEL SOUTHARD, SENIOR does not appear as head-of-household in the 1840 census and it seems that he may have died in the previous decade. It is interesting to note that an ABEL SOUTHARD who died on 26 November 1833 was interred in a cemetery in Hempstead, Long Island. This Cemetery has since been covered and is now Denton Green Park.³² Preliminary research indicates that this is not the same ABEL.

To summarize: ABEL SOUTHARD, SENIOR moves his family to New Hanover Township in Burlington County shortly after his wife dies in New Haven in August 1816. He marries a second time there in 1817 and relocates to Dover Township in Monmouth County by 1830. ABEL dies in the 1830s, probably in Dover Township but this is not certain. His widow LOUISA moves in with her step-son ABEL SOUTHARD, JUNIOR who may have married her daughter MARY.

While it seems that all of ABEL and LYDIA'S children were born in New Haven, this has not been thoroughly researched. In fact, the entire time supposedly spent in New Haven needs to be researched as supporting evidence appears limited to statements of some of the children who state they were born in New Haven.

ISSUE:

PHOEBE, MARYANN, CHARITY, JOSEPH, ABNER, CHARLOTTE and CALEB: no more information.

- 1) JOHN SOUTHARD: married PHEBE MALSURY. Their story is continued following the remaining siblings.
- 5) ABEL SOUTHARD, JUNIOR: married MARY HOPKINS 27 May 1824. A notice of the marriage of ABEL SOUTHARD, JUNIOR to MARY HOPKINS appears in the *Trenton Federalist* reporting such specifics as they were married on the 27th of May by JOHN EMLEY, ESQUIRE, as was his father, *at Jacobs Town*.³³ From the Federal Census Returns for Monmouth County it seems that ABEL SOUTHARD, SENIOR may have died in the 1830s and his widow LOUISA moved in with her step-son ABEL and his wife MARY (who may have also been her daughter).

A review of Monmouth County deeds reveals two transactions probably applicable to this family. On 8 April 1842 JOHN COLLIER of Upper Freehold Township sold a tract of 8 and $\frac{22}{100}$ acres for \$15.00 to ABEL SOUTHARD, also from Upper Freehold Township. Located near the *Head of Wood Swamp*, its boundaries included the *road leading from Head of Wood to Toms River by the line of the HANOVER land by which it runs....to SYKE's land by which it runs....to a post in the first-named Tom's River Road*.³⁴ This JOHN COLLIER sold three tracts to Abel's brother John in the 1840s. A second indenture, dated 10 April 1847, details the purchase of $\frac{95}{100}$ acres in *the Village of New Egypt* by ABEL SOUTHARD, of Plumsted Township, for \$250.00. Sold by JOHN and MARY HODSON, of New Hanover Township, who inherited the house and land from JOHN'S Aunt, MARY RODGERS; it bordered Mill Pond and was situated between tracts owned by BARZILLA HORNER and the *WIDOW ALLEN*, as well as being *on the road from New Egypt to Williams Mills*.³⁵ ABEL died 4 November 1848 in New Egypt, Plumstead Township, in *Ocean Co.* (Ocean County was not formally as such until 1850). The cause of death is listed as *suicide*. It also states he was born in New Hanover, Burlington County, the son of ABEL and LYDIA SOUTHARD. He was 46 years old, married

³² "Once A Graveyard, Now A Public Park," *Yesteryears* (N.Y.), William L. Huffman, Vol. 13, No. 52, Summer 1977, p. 222.

³³ *Trenton Federalist*, 7 June 1824, page 3, volume XXV, number 1319, viewed at the New Jersey State Library, Trenton.

³⁴ Monmouth County Deeds, volume E4, page 377, recorded 26 April 1842.

³⁵ Monmouth County Deeds, volume H5, page 99, recorded 20 November 1848.

and a blacksmith.³⁶ Letters of Administration were issued to THOMAS B. ANTRIM of *Monmouth County* for the estate of ABEL SOUTHARD on 8 November 1848.³⁷ Of note is the fact that the Letters of Administration were issued the same date of the latter of the two deeds above was recorded. This may reflect the custom of having several proceedings taken care of all on the same day, when one was in Freehold, the County seat. Other records pertaining to his estate include an inventory in book Q, page 335, and the estate proceedings, volume 18, page 144, block 10. Descendents include the surnames STEWARD, STRATTON, STOW, SLOCUM, EMLEY, BROWN and SMires. (Author has more information)

- 9) LYDIA SOUTHARD: born 3 April 1811. She was once believed to have married SAMUEL STOCKTON around 1840. In fact, a *single, 69 year old* LYDIA SOUTHARD appears with the widowed SAMUEL STOCKTON in Cookstown in the 1880 and 1885 census returns; in the latter LYDIA R. and ELLA M. STOCKTON, both between 5 and 19 years of age, are living with them.³⁸
- 11) BENJAMIN SOUTHARD: married ABIGAIL COLEMAN (both of Monmouth County) on 10 January 1838 at Cookstown. By 1850 BENJAMIN was a blacksmith with 5 children and the family had moved to Washington Township in Montgomery County, Ohio. In 1860 and 1870 they are still in Ohio but have moved to Union Township in Highland County, not too far from BENJAMIN's niece LYDIA ANN CHALLENGER, daughter of his brother JOHN.

³⁶ Return of Deaths, Monmouth County, Volume AA, page 247.

³⁷ Monmouth County Surrogate Court, Letters of Administration, volume B, page 165.

³⁸ 1880 Federal Census, Burlington County, New Hanover Township, Cookstown, p. 478, Line 3; and NJ State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, House number 312, family number 329, Nos. 47-48.

Husband's Name:

JOHN SOUTHARD³⁹

Born:	11 October 1794	New Haven, Connecticut
Married:	1817-18	
Died:	1 September 1851	"Hotel Hill," Burlington County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery</i> , Jacobstown, NJ	
Father:	ABEL SOUTHARD (21 March 1768 to 1830-40)	
Mother:	LYDIA _____ (unknown to 17 August 1816)	

Wife's Name:

PHOEBE MALSURY⁴⁰

Born:	25 May 1798
Died:	13 May 1841
Buried:	unknown
Father:	GILBERT MALSURY (unknown to circa January 1814)
Mother:	SARAH BURGESS

Issue:

Born:

Where:

1) LYDIA ANN SOUTHARD	19 July 1818	Cookstown, Burlington Co.
2) LEVI H. (or M.) SOUTHARD	26 March 1820	NJ
3) GILBERT M. SOUTHARD	25 October 1821	NJ
4) JOSEPH S. SOUTHARD	28 December 1823	Burlington Co., NJ
5) JOHN M. SOUTHARD	26 June 1826	Cold Spring Hill, Burlington Co.
6) ABIGAIL M. SOUTHARD	26 February 1828	New Hanover Tp., Burlington Co.
7) PHOEBE ANN SOUTHARD	16 January 1830	New Hanover Tp., Burlington Co.
8) AMANDA MELVINA SOUTHARD	20 June 1831	New Hanover Tp., Burlington Co.
9) SAMUEL LEWIS SOUTHARD	8 November 1834	Jacobstown, Burlington Co., NJ
10) EDNA E. SOUTHARD	7 January 1836	New Hanover Tp., Burlington Co.
11) HENRY CLAY SOUTHARD	31 May 1839	New Hanover Tp., Burlington Co.

It is believed that JOHN moved to New Jersey shortly after his mother's death in 1816 when his father and siblings moved there. The family had moved by 9 March 1817 for that is when a license to marry was issued to JOHN's father ABEL and LOUISA HOPKINS in New Hanover Township; they were married there 29 March 1817. That PHOEBE'S father was GILBERT is strongly suggested by the Monmouth County Orphan's Court Minutes of 1814 which state that GILBERT MALSURY, deceased, had a daughter named PHOEBE who was underage and by the addition of the given name GILBERT to the SOUTHARD family with this couple.

On 10 April 1821 JOHN purchased 20 acres of land in New Hanover Township from DAVID and CHARLOTTE CURTIS for \$500.00.⁴¹ Boundaries include Monmouth Road and the road *from Jacobstown to New Egypt* which places the lot at the intersection of Route 537 (Monmouth Road) and Route 528. This lot bordered the lands of AVIS WRIGHT, JOSEPH HARTSHORNE AND DAVID CURTIS' *other land*. Four years later JOHN SOUTHARD bought property on road *from*

³⁹ Vide Potter, *op. cit.*, p.116; Brick, Gertrude, "Bible Record of Virginia (Holloway) Lee," 1964, NJ Genealogical Society Library.
Author also has more information regarding descendants.

⁴⁰ Death certificate of son Samuel lists mother as Phebe Malsbury.

⁴¹ Burlington County Deeds, Book P, Volume 2, p. 375, recorded 14 May 1825.

Jacobstown to JOHN BROWNS in New Hanover Township. On 2 April 1825 he bought the property, which measured *one acre, one rood and twenty-nine perches*, with a house, from RICHARD and ANN BIRD for \$220.00.⁴² PETER EMLEY was one of his neighbors here.

They were listed in New Hanover Township in 1830.⁴³ JOHN is known to have been a farmer. There is a JOHN SOUTHWARD enumerated in *Hanover Township* in 1840. As most of the census data concurs with the family, in conjunction with having many of the same neighbors as ten years earlier, this is JOHN and PHOEBE. JOHN is employed in agriculture and 5 of the 6 persons counted correspond to JOHN, PHOEBE and their children SAMUEL, HENRY and EDNA. There is a 10-15 year old female that could be ABIGAIL, PHOEBE ANN or AMANDA. The most likely explanation is that PHOEBE ANN, who was living with ROBERT and ANNA HOLLOWAY in Chesterfield Township in 1850, was already there by 1840 and the census information correlates well with this theory; and that ABIGAIL, now about 22 years old, had probably married and moved away.⁴⁴ The following year PHOEBE died. It is not known where she was buried as no grave marker has been located. There is an unmarked grave next to her husband in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery* or she may have been buried in a MALSURY family plot. Without knowing her ancestors, this possibility is difficult to perform as there appear many such plots throughout the many cemeteries in this rural area.

Just after his wife's death, JOHN sold a house on $1\frac{43}{100}$ acres located on the road *from the Cold Spring to Jacobstown* to his daughter LYDIA ANN CHALLENDAR. This sale occurred so close to his wife's death that the possibility of a connection between the two events can not be dismissed; unfortunately, it can not be documented at this time either. JOHN had purchased this property, at the time measured as *one acre, one rood and twenty-nine perches*, from RICHARD and ANN BIRD in 1825 for \$220.00. He sold it to his daughter for just \$150.00 leaving it to later generations to ponder over the transaction – so close to his wife's death, to his daughter and for \$70.00 less than he paid for the property 16 years before.⁴⁵

There are several other Burlington and Monmouth County property deeds with the name of JOHN SOUTHWARD. Ocean County was created in 1850 and, as many of these deeds predate that time, land that is now in Ocean County, as in the New Egypt and Plumsted Township tracts, at that time were in Monmouth County. Five are as follows:

- Recorded on 22 April 1845 is the transfer of a tract of land in Plumsted Township from JOHN COLLIER to JOHN SOUTHWARD.⁴⁶ The details of this purchase have not yet been obtained.
- On 1 April 1846, JOHN, of Plumsted Township, purchased $8\frac{85}{100}$ acres from JOHN and LEAH COLLIER, of Jackson Township for \$106.20. This Plumsted Township tract, adjacent to lands of WILLIAM EMLEY and JAMES MOOR; adjoined a tract that JOHN had previously purchased from JOHN and LEAH COLLIER.⁴⁷
- On 21 February 1848 JOHN SOUTHWARD, SENIOR sold to JOHN SOUTHWARD, JUNIOR, for \$200.00, $5\frac{35}{100}$ acres on Jacobstown-New Egypt Road.⁴⁸ This land is part of the 20 acre tract JOHN SENIOR bought from DAVID CURTIS in 1821. Borders include *the road from Jacob's Town to New Egypt* and ABRAHAM Y. CURTIS' and JOHN BRANSON'S lands. This tract is on Route 528, east of Jacobstown in New Hanover Township.

⁴² Burlington County Deeds, Book R, Volume 2, p. 374, recorded 14 May 1825.

⁴³ 1830 U.S. Census, Burlington County, NJ, New Hanover Township, p. 38.

⁴⁴ 1840 U.S. Census, Burlington County, NJ, Hanover Township, p. 168.

⁴⁵ Burlington County Deeds, Book A, Volume 4, p. 365, recorded 24 August 1841.

⁴⁶ Monmouth County Deeds, Book P4, page 229, recorded 22 April 1845.

⁴⁷ Monmouth County Deeds, Book H5, page 26, recorded 8 November 1846.

⁴⁸ Burlington County Deeds, Book S, Volume 4, p. 92, recorded 14 March 1848.

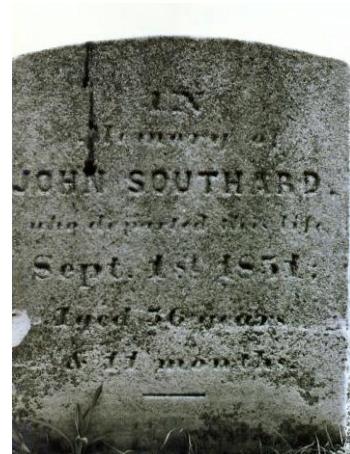
- On 7 April 1848, JOHN bought 15 $\frac{48}{100}$ acres from WILLIAM I. and ELIZABETH EMLEY for \$185.76.⁴⁹ This tract of woodland was located in Plumsted Township and was on the south side of the road from Collier's Mills to New Egypt; as well as being bounded by *the New Road* and *the Old Road* to Collier's Mills. This tract was probably the one mentioned in the April 1846 deed when he bought 8+ acres from JOHN COLLIER that bordered WILLIAM EMLEY'S property.

Their daughter AMANDA MELVINA died of “consumption” on 13 April 1849. In the 1850 census, JOHN is listed as a 55-year-old laborer on the farm of MICHAEL ROGERS in New Hanover Township.⁵⁰ The ROGERS farm was close to where JOHN had lived in Plumsted Township.

JOHN died the following year in *Hotel Hill* which has eluded identification; it is known to have been in New Hanover Township. There was a hotel near the ROGERS farm, owned by TILTON and HANNAH CURTIS; perhaps this is the location of the thus far elusive *Hotel Hill*. He signed his Will on 18 August 1851 and it was recorded on 18 September 1851. MICHAEL ROGERS, whom he was living with, was named executor and also signed the inventory. His total estate was estimated at \$30.75 and his only bequests were to his sons SAMUEL, 17 years old; and HENRY, 12 years old, whose care he entrusted to MICHAEL ROGERS by naming him their guardian. It is not known why none of his surviving children were named in the Will nor considered as appropriate guardians. The witnesses of the Will and appraisers of the estate, WILLIAM BRANSON and his wife ALICE, OLIVER EMLEY and JOSEPH HARTSHORN, were all neighbors.⁵¹ On 1 November 1851 MICHAEL ROGERS, executor for JOHN SOUTHARD, deceased 1851, auctioned 4 $\frac{49}{100}$ of an acre at the home of JOSEPH BUSSUM. Bought by HIGBEE PULLEN for \$82.00, this was recorded 18 March 1852 and witnessed by OLIVER EMLEY.⁵²

A small, granite marker with the inscription marks his plot:

IN
Memory of
JOHN SOUTHARD
who departed this life
Sept. 1st 1851
Aged 56 years
& 11 months



The adjacent plot next is unmarked and may be that of his wife, but this is not known for certain, as the cemetery records that would contain this information have not been located, or no longer exist.

⁴⁹ Monmouth County Deeds, Book H5, page 28, recorded 8 November 1848.

⁵⁰ 1850 U.S. Census, Burlington County, NJ, New Hanover Township, 20 July 1850, p. 262A, lines 39-40 and p.262B, lines 1-7, dwelling 53, family 56.

⁵¹ Burlington County Wills, John Southard, Book E, No.15716 and Inventories, Book F, p.177; available at NJ Archives, Trenton.

⁵² Burlington County Deeds, Book H, Volume 5, p.153.

ISSUE:

- 1) LYDIA ANN SOUTHARD: born 19 July 1818 near Cookstown, Hanover Township, Burlington County.⁵³ She was married in New Egypt (then in Monmouth County) on 1 October 1836 to JOHN H. CHALLENGER (born December 1814 in Cookstown). He was the son of STACY CHALLENGER (1775 – 1853) and ELIZABETH DENNIS (1780 – 1852) who moved to Fairfield County, Ohio with two of their children around 1825. LYDIA ANN and JOHN lived close to her father in New Hanover Township in 1840 and, as mentioned, bought a house on 1 $\frac{43}{100}$ acres on the road *from the Cold Spring to Jacobstown* from him in early June 1841. In the 1840 census there is a 5-10 year old female who may have been a younger sister of LYDIA ANN or JOHN. About 5 years after buying the house, they moved to Fairfield Township, Highland County, Ohio. This was close to JOHN'S parents who passed away soon thereafter. By 1860 they had relocated to Union Township in the same county where LYDIA'S uncle BENJAMIN SOUTHARD was a blacksmith. By 1880 they had moved again, to Clark Township in Clinton County, Ohio. A couple of their children moved to Eaton County, Michigan so the restless JOHN and LYDIA once again moved by the early 1890s to that area. JOHN died 21 February 1894 in Eaton County, Michigan. LYDIA died 13 August 1906 in Frankfort, Benzie County, Michigan (from her death certificate we find her father named as JOHN SOUTHARD) and was buried in *Crystal Lake Township Cemetery North* in Frankfort. They had many children most of whom lived and had large families:
 - a) WASHINGTON CHALLENGER: born 22 November 1838, Burlington County, NJ. Married (1) MARY ELLEN OWENS (born 1836, Ohio) on 18 June 1858 in Hillsboro, Highland County, OH. They had 7 children and moved to London Mills, then in Fulton County, IL. MARY died there on 12 June 1896. Knox County was created, in part, from Fulton County around this time. WASHINGTON married (2) SARAH ISABELLA DYER on 16 September 1897 in Galesburg, Knox County, IL. WASHINGTON died in London Mills in Knox County on 3 December 1923.
 - b) CHARLES A. CHALLENGER: born 1839 Burlington County, NJ. Married (1) MARY J. DOVE (born c1849, Ohio) on 6 February 1864 in Highland County, OH; 2 children. MARY probably died soon thereafter as CHARLES is found marrying (2) *MRS.* REBECCA WEST, née ANCHOR, (born 1836) on 12 March 1872 in Clinton County, OH. They had 3 children. CHARLES died on 4 July 1885 in Martinsville, Clinton County, OH. REBECCA died on 17 July 1916.
 - c) MITCHELL CHALLENGER: born August 1841, Burlington County, NJ. He married MARTHA A. (born May 1843, OH) about 1865; they moved to Benton Township, Eaton County, Michigan before 1900; had 7 children. MITCHELL died in 1911.
 - d) JOSEPH CHALLENGER: born 6 March 1843, Monmouth County, NJ. Married NANCY A. PIERSON on 14 August 1870 in Highland County, OH. They were living on Taylor Street in West Liberty Village, Logan County, OH in 1900. They had 3 children. JOSEPH died 1 March 1932.
 - e) PHEBE CHALLENGER: born 1844, Burlington County, NJ
 - f) JOHN CHALLENGER: born 1846, Burlington County, NJ
 - g) CHARLOTTE H. CHALLENGER: born 1847 and died 20 November 1847 in Ohio.
 - h) RACHEL A. CHALLENGER: born 1849 and died 16 July 1850 in Ohio.

⁵³ Much information from "Descendants of Stacey Challender" at grandmastree.com

- i) WILLIAM HENRY CHALLENGER: born 1849 Ohio. Married SARAH KENNEDY (born 10 March 1855, Saint Clair County, Michigan) on 21 April 1873 in Traverse City, Grand Traverse County, Michigan. They had 7 children. SARAH died on 24 May 1888 in Michigan and WILLIAM died 6 April 1920 in Escanaba, Delta County, Michigan.
 - j) ROXANNE ANNIE CHALLENGER: born 1852, Ohio.
 - k) LYDIA CHALLENGER: born January 1854, Ohio. She married CHRISTIAN C. FORNEY (born August 1849, OH) around 1871 in Kansas or Michigan; 10 children.
 - l) STACEY CHALLENGER: born April 1855, Ohio. He married (1) RACHAEL A. CLARK on 27 September 1876, probably had children but none are known for certain; RACHAEL may have died not long after marrying. STACEY married (2) ALICE TEMPLIN (born 7 September 1855, Ohio) in 1880 and had 5 children. They moved to Washington where, in 1900, they were living on Thomas Street in Chehalis in Lewis County. They divorced in the following decade and ALICE died there on 10 February 1911. STACEY then married (3) SARAH JANE STANLON; they were living near Deer Harbor in San Juan County, Washington by 1930. STACEY died there on 3 February 1933.
 - m) THOMAS CHALLENGER: born 1857, Ohio. Married LILLIE B. SLABAUGH; 11 children.
 - n) ALFRED CHALLENGER: born 1859, Ohio.
 - o) SAMUEL CHALLENGER: born c1863, Ohio.
 - p) ULYSSES GRANT CHALLENGER: born c1866, Ohio; married TERESA M. c1899; 3 children.
- 2) LEVI SOUTHARD: no definite information. LEVI was married (1) *unknown* c1850; she died in 1853. They had at least 1 child:
- a) JOSEPHINA SOUTHARD: born 1853. Married (1) JOHN BRINDLY c1873. JOHN died by 1880. They had:
 - i) BENJAMIN BRINDLY: born in 1874.
- JOSEPHINA married (2) JOHN EPWORTH BROWN and they lived in Jersey City in 1900. She married (3) MILTON E. PIER.
- LEVI married (2) MARY J. by 1860 and they had at least 3 children:
- b) HENRY L. SOUTHARD: born circa 1860
 - c) CHARLES W. SOUTHARD: born circa 1863
 - d) WALTER E. SOUTHARD: born circa 1874
- In the 1880 census LEVI H. SOUTHART, 60, a cooper is found living in Brooklyn with his wife, MARY J., 46, their 3 children as well as LEVI's widowed daughter from his first marriage, JOSEPHINA BRINDLY, 24 and her son BENJAMIN BRINDLY, 6.⁵⁴ LEVI was still living with his oldest daughter 20 years later, this time in Jersey City. The home of JOSEPHINA BROWN, at the time married to her 2nd husband, was where LEVI died on 23 March 1900. His death certificate does not give his mother's maiden name.⁵⁵

⁵⁴ 1880 Federal Census, Kings (Brooklyn), New York City-Greater, New York; Roll T9-852, Family History Film: 1254852; page 172.3000; E.D. 177; Image: 0349.

⁵⁵Ancestry.com; Message Boards > Surnames > Southard > Levi H. Southard, 1820-1900, NJ/NY/NJ, Levi H. Southard, 1820-1900, NJ/NY/NJ Posted: 12 Mar 2006 12:23PM
<http://boards.ancestry.com/surnames.southard/450/mb.ashx>

- 3) GILBERT SOUTHARD: married MARTHA ANN MCCOY on 2 December 1843. He worked on farms around Jacobstown his whole life.⁵⁶ He died 23 January 1900 in Mansfield Township, Burlington County from pneumonia. His death certificate lists his parents as JOHN and PHOEBE SOUTHARD and further states that he is a widower. Some have incorrectly assumed that the MARTHA SOUTHARD who died on 4 December 1906 in New Brunswick, New Jersey was his wife; comparing the names of the children confirms she is not. They are interred at *Jacobstown Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*. Their children are:
- a) PHOEBE A. SOUTHARD: born c1845.
 - b) LOUIS SOUTHARD: born c1847.
 - c) ZACHARIAH TAYLOR SOUTHARD: born 4 February 1849; Civil War veteran – Company E, 1st New Jersey Infantry. Married (1) unknown between 1880 and 1892. Married (2) Mary E. in 1892. No known children from either marriage. He died 8 March 1920, interred in *Jacobstown Cemetery* (aka *Schoolhouse Road Cemetery* and *Jacobstown Masonic Cemetery*).
 - d) MARY ELIZABETH SOUTHARD: born circa 1852.
 - e) CALEB SOUTHARD: born circa 1854.
 - f) THOMAS H. SOUTHARD: born circa 1856.
 - g) MINOR T. SOUTHARD: a son, born August 1860; never married. Was an *inmate* in the Burlington County Almshouse in Pemberton in 1930.
 - h) HANNAH SOUTHARD: born circa 1862.
 - i) THEODORE SOUTHARD: born circa 1866.
 - j) LAURA SOUTHARD: born circa 1867.
- 4) JOSEPH SOUTHARD: married MARYANN SMIRES in 1844. *Story continues in next part.*
- 5) JOHN SOUTHARD: married MARGARET _____. He died 6 June 1850. One known son is:
- a) FREDERICK SOUTHARD: born 1848; died 28 August 1850.
- MARGARET appears to have then lived with THOMAS E. HARRISON in Plumstead Township.
- 6) ABIGAIL SOUTHARD: married WILLIAM T. POTTS on 16 January 1847.⁵⁷ They moved several times within Burlington County. At first they lived in New Hanover Township; by 1880, they moved to Chester Township and had four children.⁵⁸ By the time the 1885 New Jersey State census was done they had moved again, this time to Pemberton Township, where they are found again in 1895.⁵⁹
- a) JOHN S. POTTS: born circa 1848.
 - b) SARAH F. POTTS: born circa 1857.
 - c) IDA POTTS: born circa 1864.
 - d) WILLIAM H. POTTS: born circa 1866.

⁵⁶ 1860 Federal Census, Burlington County, NJ; New Hanover Township, p. 211, lines 5-11; (and) Gary Gary L. Morgan, Assistant Branch Chief, Military Reference Branch, Textual Reference Division, National Archives, Washington, D.C.; letter to author dated 9 November 1992; extract from Consolidated Enrollment Lists of the 2nd Congressional District of New Jersey, June 1863; (and) 1870 Federal Census, Burlington County, NJ; New Hanover Township, p. 745, lines 5-112; (and) 1880 Federal Census, Burlington County, NJ; New Hanover Township, p. I486, lines 36-37.

⁵⁷ *Burlington Gazette*, January 29, 1847, p. 3, col. 4

⁵⁸ 1880 Federal Census, Burlington County, NJ; Chester Township, p. 211b.

⁵⁹ 1895 New Jersey State Census, Pemberton Township, Burlington County, p. 29, persons 857-859.

- 7) PHOEBE SOUTHARD: was living with ROY and ANNA HOLLOWAY in 1850 and may have been there in 1840 as well. A PHEBE A. SOUTHARD married WARREN DISBROW on 19 July 1866 in New Hanover Township. REVEREND J.J. GRAW, a minister in Jacobstown, officiated. The surname “DISBROW” was unknown in that township in the 19th century but it was well-known in South Amboy. In the 1880 Federal Census Returns of Middlesex County, in South Amboy is WARREN DISBROW, married, forty-three, carpenter and “PHEBE” A. DISBROW, presumably his wife with a given age of twenty-three, which is an error.⁶⁰ There are four persons young enough to be there children (assuming that PHOEBE is older than stated) they are:
- a) ANNIE H. DISBROW, born circa 1868
 - b) VOORHEES DISBROW, born circa 1871
 - c) SARAH E. DISBROW, born circa 1874
 - d) LILLIAN DISBROW, born circa 1876
- 8) AMANDA SOUTHARD: died unmarried on 13 April 1849 from consumption.
- 9) SAMUEL SOUTHARD: married EMELINE PULLEN. They appear to have lived in and around Ellisdale, in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County. They lived in New Hanover Township for a number of years, being found there in the 1860, 1870 and 1880 Federal and the 1885 and 1895 State censuses.⁶¹ SAMUEL died 26 January 1913 from heart disease in Ellisdale and the death certificate lists his parents as “JOHN SOUTHARD” and “PHEBE MALSURY.” EMELINE died 21 March 1914. Both interred in Jacobstown. Descendents include CHAFETY, VAN HISE, TAYLOR, HOLLOWAY, LONGSTREET, REMSTINE AND MILLER.
- a) LEVENIA (?)SOUTHARD: born 1855
 - b) ROXANNA SOUTHARD: born circa 1857
 - c) HOWARD SOUTHARD: born ca 1858; married MARTHA F. ___ in 1897; living at 176 Prince Street, Bordentown in 1920; died 6 November 1924 in Bordentown.⁶²
 - d) AMANDA SOUTHARD: born 10 July 1860; married W. HENRY CHAFETY.
 - e) ELLSWORTH SOUTHARD: born April 1864; married MAMIE E. ___ in 1890; living in Plumsted Township, Ocean County in 1900.
 - f) LIZZIE P. SOUTHARD: born circa 1865
 - g) FLORENCE SOUTHARD: born circa 1868
 - h) SAMUEL L. SOUTHARD: born circa 1861; may have had a wife named ROXANNA by 1895.
 - i) EMILY SOUTHARD: she may have actually been a daughter of SAMUEL L. SOUTHARD and his wife ROXANNA, making her a granddaughter of SAMUEL and EMELINE.
- 10) EDNA SOUTHARD: married ANTHONY VAN HISE (born 1830) on 26 September 1857, by REVEREND VINCENT MESSLER: *ANTHONY W. VAN HISE of Ocean Co. to EDNA SOUTHARD, daughter of JOHN & PHEBE SOUTHARD of Monmouth Co* is found in REVEREND MESSLER’s marriage book. In 1880, and again in 1895, they appear in Upper Freehold Township with

⁶⁰ 1880 Federal Census, Middlesex County, New Jersey, South Amboy,, Roll: T9-791; Family History Film: 1254791; page 508.2000; E.D. 145; Image: 0046

⁶¹ 1860 Census, Burl Co, NJ, N Hanover Tp, 10 Jul 1860, S M653, r684, p297, l 14-18; dw 210, f 215; (&) 1870 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, Ser M593, roll 857, p.749, lin 6-17; dw 81, f 89; (&) 1880 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, SerT9, roll773, p.481, lin 25-33; dw 322, f 376; (&) 1885 New Jersey State Census, New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, house # 275, family # 292; (and) 1895 New Jersey State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, p13, person # 382-388.

⁶² *Mount Holly Herald*, 15 November 1924, page 8, column 3.

their family.⁶³ EDNA died in 1905 and was buried in the family plot of JESSE and MARY VAN HISE in the *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery* at where their three sons who died young – JAMES, COLLIN, and CHARLES – had been buried; ANTHONY died in 1920 and was buried next to his wife. As this was a family plot, it is likely that ANTHONY was the son of JESSE and MARY VAN HISE. Ten known children are named and other than their name, year of birth and death are known for the three children that are buried in the same family plot as ANTHONY and EDNA. The year of birth for NETTIE is an estimate based on her age given in the 1880 census and she and JAMES may have been twins. The ten children are:

	Born	Died
a) ANNIE VAN HISE	1858	
b) EDWARD VAN HISE	1860	
c) NETTIE VAN HISE	1863?	
d) JAMES VAN HISE	1863	1874
e) ALBERT VAN HISE	1864	
f) COLLIN M. VAN HISE	1866	1869
g) CHARLES H. VAN HISE	1869	1872
h) CARRIE VAN HISE	1873	
i) LOUISE VAN HISE	1875	
j) ANTHONY VAN HISE	1879	

11) HENRY SOUTHARD: One “HENRY SOUTHARD” married JOSEPHINE IMLAY on 9 October 1860. It is not known if this person is the same HENRY, son of JOHN and PHOEBE. In either event, HENRY and JOSEPHINE were living in Upper Freehold Township during the 1880 census with seven children: ELLEN, 18; LOUIS, 14; ROBERT, 12; ADDIE, 8; THOMAS, 6; GEORGE, 5; and GUSSIE, 2.⁶⁴ Their home was located close to that of EDNA and ANTHONY VAN HISE, HENRY’s sister and brother-in-law. HENRY died of heart disease on 11 June 1911 while at the Hospital for the Insane at New Lisbon in Pemberton Township. There is no information provided on the death certificate that allows us to positively identify HENRY as the son of JOHN SOUTHARD and PHOEBE MALSURY. JOSEPHINE SOUTHARD died in 1921. They are interred at the *Ellisdale United Methodist Cemetery*. The death certificate of 1911 does not list his parents. There was another HENRY SOUTHARD from this same area who was born at the same time and it has not been clearly established which HENRY married JOSEPHINE.

⁶³ 1880 US Census, Imlaystown, Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County; Roll T9-792; Family History Film: 1254792; Page 527.4000; E.D. 126; Image 0391; [old style: page 527b, line 26]; and 1895 NJ Census, Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County, page 14, person 404.

⁶⁴ 1880 US Census, Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County, page 511a.

Husband's Name:

JOSEPH S. SOUTHARD⁶⁵

Born:	28 December 1823	Burlington County, NJ
Married:	18 January 1845	New Egypt, Monmouth County, NJ
Died:	8 February 1906	Ellisdale, Burlington County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery</i> , Jacobstown, NJ	
Father:	JOHN SOUTHARD (11 October 1794 – 1 September 1851)	
Mother:	PHOEBE MALSURY (25 May 1798 – 13 May 1841)	

Wife's Name:

MARYANN SMIRES

Born:	1827	Monmouth County, NJ
Died:	29 October 1887	Ellisdale, Burlington County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery</i>	
Father:	JOSEPH SMIRES (1789/99 – 23 December 1854)	
Mother:	NANCY THOMAS (10 December 1807 – 7 October 1869)	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) LEVI L. SOUTHARD	9 April 1845	Arneystown, Burlington County, NJ
2) EDWARD A. SOUTHARD	1846/7	Cookstown, Burlington County, NJ
3) REBECCA M. SOUTHARD	1848	New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ
4) JOHN H. SOUTHARD	24 February 1850	Shelldown, Burlington County, NJ ⁶⁶
5) JOSEPH S. SOUTHARD, JR.	11 May 1852	Shelldown, Burlington County, NJ
6) HANNAH SOUTHARD	1853	New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ
7) PHEBE ANN SOUTHARD	4 July 1854	Shelldown, Burlington County, NJ ⁶⁷
8) CHARLES SOUTHARD	6 August 1856	Arneystown, Burlington County, NJ
9) MARGARET SOUTHARD	1 August 1858	Arneystown, Burlington County, NJ
10) SARAH JANE SOUTHARD	7 May 1861	New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ
11) LYDIA E. SOUTHARD	1862	New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ
12) MARY L. SOUTHARD	13 December 1864	Shelldown, Burlington County, NJ
13) ROBERT SOUTHARD	13 December 1864	Shelldown, Burlington County, NJ

They were married by T.C. HARRISON, Esq., in New Egypt. The only known record is the announcement in *The Burlington Gazette and New Jersey Agricultural Register* of 7 February 1845. This states they were both from Burlington County. At that time New Egypt, and all of Plumsted Township, was still part of Monmouth County; Ocean County was formed in 1850. If the date of their son LEVI's birth is correct, MARY was 7 months pregnant at the time of their marriage. After

⁶⁵ Much information from *Early Southard's of New York and New Jersey*, Ralph K. Potter (published privately) 1974, pp.118-119; *Burlington Gazette & New Jersey Agricultural Register*, 7 February 1845, page 3, column 3; and author's research.

⁶⁶ Date obtained from grave marker in Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery and Burlington County Births Vol. D1, p. 54, line 4.

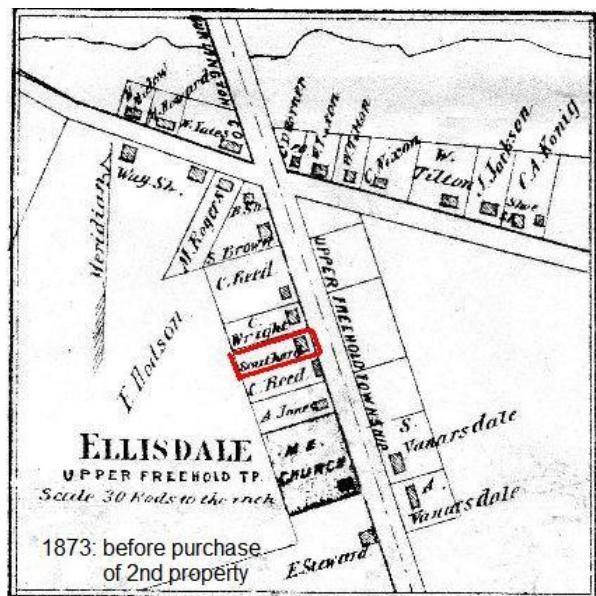
⁶⁷ NJ Archives, 185 W. State St., Trenton has the following birth records:

John Southard	#D1-54-Line 4	"no name" Southard	#AA-30 (Joseph)	Phebe Ann Southard	#D1-234-Line 29
Charles Southard	#D1-306-Line 32	Margaret Southard	#D2-374-Line 5	Mary Southard	#D2-566-Line 38
Robert Southard #D2-566-Line 39					

their marriage, they lived near Cookstown in New Hanover Township, Burlington County, NJ for awhile.⁶⁸ In 1860, all their children born by this time were still with them with the exception of HANNAH who died in the first half of 1860 from scarlet fever. Their daughter SARAH JANE died on 22 August 1861 and was buried in Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery. One year later found JOSEPH following after his eldest son LEVI who was trying to enlist in the New Jersey Volunteer Infantry. Ultimately unsuccessful with his pleas, JOSEPH resigned himself to the realities of the Civil War as he watched his son sign up at Beverly, NJ.

In early 1864 JOSEPH found a property in Shelltown that he thought would be a wise purchase. As JOSEPH could not afford the property, he contacted LEVI who was away at war in Virginia, described the property and waited for LEVI'S reply. LEVI agreed with his father's assessment and he relinquished the necessary funds so that his father could make the purchase. According to LEVI, the property was to be purchased in his name or, in the alternative, in his fathers name with JOSEPH giving LEVI a mortgage on the property. On 28 March 1864 JOSEPH "of Plumstead Township" bought 35/100ths acre from the heirs at law of JOHN HODSON for \$675.00.⁶⁹ The property had a house and a barn on it. Boundaries included the road from Shelltown to Arneystown, HODSON'S "other" lot, and JOSEPH H. KESTOR'S lot. This was located north of the

Methodist-Episcopal church in Ellisdale on the west side of Province Line Road. Shelltown was renamed Ellisdale within a few years and Province Line Road, on which the property is situated, serves as a boundary separating Plumsted Township in Ocean County to the East from New Hanover Township in Burlington County to the West. Upon his return from the war, LEVI was dismayed to learn that he was not listed as the grantee of the property, nor had he received a mortgage from his father, who was living in the house with MARYANN and their younger children. JOSEPH would live in this house for the rest of his life. Apparently upset that his father had cut down several Locust trees on the property, he protested, only to learn then he did not own the property. LEVI paid for several grapevines from "gardener ABBET" that were planted on the property in 1868



and 1869.⁷⁰

An 1873 survey of Ellisdale shows the third house north of the church owned by "SOUTHARD" bounded by C. WRIGHT to the north, C. REED to the south and F. HODSON to the west.⁷¹ On 20

⁶⁸ 1850 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, 22 July 1850, p.267, lines 16-21; (8)

1860 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, 28 June 1860, p. 274, family 46, dwelling 42, lines 25-34;(8)

1870 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, 14 July 1870, p.743b, family15, dwelling 13, lines 24-30.

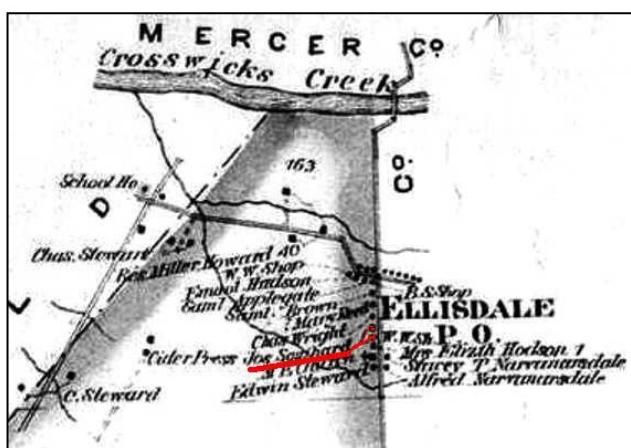
⁶⁹ Burlington County Deeds, Book O, Volume 8, page 496, recorded 17 September 1872.

⁷⁰ New Jersey Court of Chancery, Trenton, Case A-30-892-892, Levi Southard (complainant) versus Joseph S. Southard, et ux. 19 December 1894. Much of the description of the property and what occurred in connection with it is to be found in the court records which are 112 pages long. Descriptions and other mention of this dispute in this section all refer back to this reference though, due to sheer number, the individual items are not referenced. NJ State Archives, 2004.

⁷¹ Atlas of Monmouth County, NJ, F.W. Beers (pub: Beers, Comstock and Cline, NY) 1873.

March 1868, JOSEPH bought 47/100ths of an acre of land from JOSEPH KESTER.⁷² It appears that this tract is located at the northwest corner of the intersection of Province Line Road and Ellisdale-Crosswicks Road. In 1870 their children CHARLES, MARGARET, LYDIA, MARY and ROBERT were with them. Their son EDWARD was living with WILLIAM APPLEGATE in Jackson Township and was a farm laborer.⁷³ On 28 November 1876, JOSEPH "and MARYANN his wife" sold, or rather exchanged the corner property with GILBERT H. WORDEN. The deeds indicate that JOSEPH took possession of another tract of land, 40/100ths of an acre, also on Province Line Road, "the road that leads from Allentown to Arneystown," further south of the one he relinquished.⁷⁴ This new tract was adjacent to the property he purchased in 1864, just south of it.

On an 1876 atlas of New Hanover Township a "Jos. SOUTHARD" is shown as owner of 2 adjacent houses in Ellisdale. According to the map, these are the second and third houses north of the Methodist-Episcopal Church there, the first house belonging to MRS. ELIZABETH HODSON.⁷⁵



This is undoubtedly the one he "bought" in 1876 as the HODSON property is mentioned in the deed. The barn on the 1864 property was taken down and a small orchard was planted in the 1870s and 1880s. These two houses are still standing and in good condition. The 1880 Federal Census show JOSEPH and MARYANN, with their youngest son ROBERT, living in the Village of Ellisdale, New Hanover Township, with their daughter LYDIA nearby at the home of JOHN and MARY STEWART.⁷⁶ In 1885 they are in the same house and their daughter MARGARET BIRD with three of her children, JACOB, OLIVE and FIRMAN G. BIRD, have

moved in with them.⁷⁷ JOSEPH apparently insured the property through the Insurance Company of North America and Fire Association of Philadelphia with a policy written on 8 September 1886 through CHARLES HUTCHINSON of Allentown.⁷⁸ MARYANN passed away in 1887. It is hard to understand the writing on her death certificate, but it appears that she died after a 9-day bout of pneumonia. The attendant was H. P. JOHNSON of Allentown and the Undertaker was S. W. FIEDLER, also of Allentown. She was buried in the SOUTHARD family plot in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*.⁷⁹

JOSEPH then married LOUISA L. HOPKINS (born 1835-40) on 7 September 1888 at the Methodist-Episcopal Church in Jacobstown. LOUISA was a former neighbor of JOSEPH in Cookstown. LOUISA had been married to a much older WILLIAM YATES previously. REVEREND

⁷² Burlington County Deeds, Book O, Volume 8, page 494, recorded 17 September 1872.

⁷³ 1870 U.S. Census, Ocean County, NJ, Jackson Township, 9 September 1870, p.12, lines 20-25.

⁷⁴ Burlington County Deeds, Book Q, Volume 9, page 590, recorded 15 January 1878; and Book Q, Volume 9, page 629, recorded December 1876.

⁷⁵ Scott Combination Atlas, Burlington County, NJ, 1876, New Hanover Township.

⁷⁶ 1880 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp, 24 June 1880, E.D. 31, p. 484, family 425, dwelling 421, lines 47-49.

⁷⁷ 1885 NJ Census, Burlington Co, New Hanover Tp, 30 June 1885, p. 22, dwelling 156, family 170, persons No.635-640.

⁷⁸ Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold NJ; Collection 49: Fire Insurance Records, 1885 – 1947; Box 1 / Folder 3: Policies 100 - 150, issued July – September 1886. Insurance Company of North America and Fire Association of Philadelphia: Southards, Joseph, Ellisdale, 9/8/1886.

⁷⁹ *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*, section 4, number 59.

WILLIAM FRANKLIN of Jacobstown performed that ceremony on the 25th of July 1858 between LOUISA HOPKINS, then 23 years old, and WILLIAM YATES, 50 years old of Hamilton Township. He was a farmer and the son of GEORGE YATES, in Cookstown, NJ. There were 4 children by this marriage. In the 1870 census, not far from JOSEPH and MARYANN lived WILLIAM YATES, 55 years old with LOUISA, 26; JOHN N., 10; IDA, 8; and GILBERT, 5. LOUISA moved in with JOSEPH in LEVI's 1864 home.

In the spring of 1894, LEVI purchased 30 raspberry plants and several peach trees from a supplier in Baltimore, MD and had them planted at the 1864 house. During this period, LEVI was attempting to affect a solution to the ownership of the house. In May of the same year, he had a discussion with his father while in the *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*. JOSEPH had just conveyed one-half of the remaining burial lot to LEVI but it is not known if that transaction was done as an attempt to resolve the ownership question. JOSEPH had maintained throughout the past thirty years that he hadn't the money necessary to convey the lot though he refused or ignored his sons' offer to assume the costs. The situation deteriorated and on the 12th of September, JOSEPH and LOUISA relayed their story to FRANKLIN B. HARRIS, Justice of the Peace of Cookstown. Mr. HARRIS heard them out and decided to act. He did so by forbidding LEVI from entering the premises of the 1864 house for the *serious complaint* which is not known for certain, but may concern allegations that LEVI would turn his father and stepmother out of the house if he could. He found out about this on the first of October, *the first day of the Mt. Holly Fair* as he later recalled, when he received Mr. HARRIS' letter barring him from the premises. LEVI responded by filing a complaint against his father in the New Jersey Court of Chancery at Trenton on the 12th of December, 1894. Depositions were taken in February 1895 and on the 10th of May a decree was made in the Court of Chancery in Trenton in favor of LEVI in the amount of \$1101.68.

However, JOSEPH and LOUISA did not move, nor did LEVI want them to move, as he had maintained over the years. In 1895, JOSEPH and LOUISA were still living at the same house in New Hanover Township.⁸⁰ Two houses from them lived a SAMUEL C. and FANNIE S. SOUTHARD, both over 60, who were distant relatives. One of LOUISA's children, JOHN W. YATES (born March 1867) was living with them in 1900.⁸¹

JOSEPH passed away in 1906. The State of NJ has no record of his death. The *New Jersey Mirror* of 28 February 1906 has the following: *SOUTHARD - At Ellisdale, February 8, JOSEPH SOUTHARD, aged 81 years.* He was buried next to his first wife MARYANN in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*. Their plot is marked by a gray granite marker inscribed with their names and years of birth and death.

Unfortunately, the troubles over the 1864 house weren't finished. LOUISA refused to relinquish the property and LEVI sought redress, once again, in the courts. On 22 May 1907 a writ of *fieri facias* was issued in Trenton which directed the Sheriff of Burlington County to seize the property purchased by JOSEPH in 1864. This property was ordered to be sold by another writ on 8 May 1907.⁸² Notices of this sale appeared in the *Mt. Holly News* and the *New Jersey Mirror* throughout June with the last appearing in the latter on 3 July 1907.⁸³ The property was auctioned off on 5 July 1907 at which time LEVI bid \$500.00 and received the property. This sale was validated by the Chancellor of New Jersey on 2 August 1907 and acknowledged by the Master

⁸⁰ 1895 New Jersey Census, Burlington Co, New Hanover Tp, p 5, house number 29, family number 32, person No. 134-135.

⁸¹ 1900 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Township, 9 June 1900, E.D. 25, p. 6B, family 145, dwelling 139, lines 98-100.

⁸² NJ Court of Chancery, Executions, Book R, volume 8.

⁸³ *New Jersey Mirror*, 3 July 1907, "Sheriff's Sale" (2 listings). Available at Burlington County Library, Mt. Holly, NJ.

of the Court of Chancery on 20 September 1907. It was recorded on 14 February 1910.⁸⁴ But not to end on a tenuously peaceful note, LOUISA refused to budge. She stayed put even after LEVI obtained an order for possession as well as for the help of the Sheriff's in removing her. On the 26th of November in 1907 she was served with orders to vacate the premises, either voluntarily or through force. And there ends the 112 page long court record of this property dispute. The records do not reflect what occurred subsequently, but it is doubtful that LOUISA resisted much more.

That there may have been some animosity is hinted at by Louisa reverting to the use of her first married name of YATES. With her son JOHN, she moved to Upper Freehold Township, appearing as a 60 year-old widow in 1910.⁸⁵ An obituary appeared in the *Trenton Sunday Times Advertiser* on 19 October 1913 for a LOUISA H. SOUTHARD who died the day before.⁸⁶ No other information is given in the extract found.

ISSUE:

- 1) LEVI SOUTHARD: against his father's wishes, he enlisted in Company D, 23rd Regiment of the NJ Infantry on 26 August 1862 at Beverly, NJ.⁸⁷ Apparently followed by his father to Beverly, an argument ensued, with LEVI eventually winning out, but not before turning over his \$60.00 enlistment bonus to JOSEPH. On 13 December 1862 he was wounded near Fredericksburg, VA.⁸⁸ This injury left a 3 inch long scar on the right side of his chest. He continued on for the duration of his nine month tour, being mustered out at Beverly on 27 June 1863. He re-enlisted, at Trenton, on 25 January 1864, for a three-year or duration-of-the-war tour with Company D, 4th Regiment. He received a substantial bonus, in excess of \$700.00, for the second tour. LEVI entrusted \$400.00 to a friend from Jacobstown, THOMAS PLATT. The remainder was turned over to his father. In March, the land transaction detailed earlier took place. On 5 May 1864, he was once again, wounded. The Battle of the Wilderness cost LEVI one of the fingers on his left hand. It also may have cost him a lot more as it was this battle in which the knapsack containing the letter from his father, confirming the purchase on his behalf of a property in Shelltown was lost. He tells two different accounts of this lost, in one saying the knapsack was shot off him and the other account detailing how all the knapsacks were in a pile and lost to the enemy when they had to retreat. He was mustered out at Halls Hill, VA on 9 July 1865, receiving an Honorable Discharge. He married ABIGAIL H. GROOM on 28 October 1868 in Creamridge, Monmouth County or in Wallingford, Burlington County depending upon which document you consult. ABIGAIL names both places in different records in Levi's Civil War Pension file. The ceremony was performed by the REVEREND B.M. WITHROW. ABIGAIL was a few years older than LEVI, being born on 24 April 1841 at Scudders Mills, Burlington County. By 1880 they had five children and lived in Chester, Burlington County.⁸⁹ When LEVI applied for an "Invalid Pension" in 1890 he was a resident of Bordentown, and it appears he spent the rest of his life in that town. His pension file records present us with a bit of a mystery. LEVI states that he had seven children and that his first child ELLIS was born in November 1865, 3 years before he married ABIGAIL.

⁸⁴ Burlington County Indentures, Book 455, p. 437; 18 September 1907. Burlington County Court House, Mt. Holly, NJ.

⁸⁵ 1910 U.S. Census, Monmouth County, NJ, Imlaystown, Upper Freehold Township, E.D. 113, p. 215, line 17.

⁸⁶ *Trenton Sunday Times Advertiser*, 19 October 1913, sect. 1, p. 5.

⁸⁷ Civil War Military Record, New Jersey Volunteers, Company D Muster Rolls 13 September 1862 to 27 June 1863 and Civil War Pension File number 84434, Levi Southard.

⁸⁸ *New Jersey Mirror*, December 18, 1862, p.3, col.2 "Local facts and Fancies / Postscript. We have just received from Lieut.-Colonel Brown, a correct list of the killed, wounded and missing in the Burlington County Regiment, as follows: ... Levi Southard, [Co.] D, wounded. ...

⁸⁹ 1880 US Census, Burlington County, Chester; roll 0772, page 214c.

The first half of 1865 saw LEVI in Virginia. ABIGAIL'S statements found in the file relay that she had six, not seven children; and that ELLA, REBECCA and JAMES were the only three alive in 1899. The 1880 census lists the eldest child of LEVI as ELLIS G. SOUTHARD, 14 years old, born in New Jersey. They both state that they were only married once, to each other. Scarlet fever struck six of their seven children in the spring of 1884; it proved fatal for ISAAC who died on 6 April and WILBERT who died three days later.⁹⁰ As detailed in the main body of this section, he became embroiled in a forty-plus year dispute with his father over ownership of a property purchased in 1864. He finally was able to obtain possession in December 1907. He described himself as being 5'7" tall, dark complexion, hazel eyes and dark hair in a 1907 pension declaration. He was receiving a Civil War pension of \$50.00 per month at the time of his death on 8 May 1923 from a stroke. The undertaker was CLARK B. ROGERS and he was buried in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery* on 12 May, in the SOUTHARD family plot of which he took possession of half in May of 1894 from his father. His death certificate correctly names his parents as JOSEPH SOUTHARD and MARY A. SMIRES. ABIGAIL applied for, and received a Widow's Pension of \$30.00 per month. She continued to live in Bordentown, at Park and Green Streets. She died 14 August 1925.

- a) ELLIS G. SOUTHARD: born 18 November 1865. He married EMMA HANNALD, daughter of SIMEON HANNALD and ANN NEWELL. They apparently lived for a time next door to EMMA'S parents on the north side of Front Street in Crosswicks. Two children are known:⁹¹
 - i) MELVIN SOUTHARD: Wife was named RAY.
 - ii) IONA SOUTHARD: Was a librarian at Crosswicks Library.
 - b) ELLA C. SOUTHARD: born 3 July 1869.
 - c) WESLEY W. SOUTHARD: born 10 March 1872. He was a painter for T.G. Bunting in Crosswicks. He was bathing in the *mill ponds* of Crosswicks Creek on 21 June 1889 when he encountered trouble and drowned. The funeral and burial were at *Jacobstown Baptist Church and Cemetery*.⁹²
 - d) REBECCA S. SOUTHARD: born 12 November 1875.
 - e) WILBERT S. SOUTHARD: born 25 September 1877; died 9 April 1884 (scarlet fever)
 - f) ISAAC W. SOUTHARD: born 22 March 1881; died 6 April 1884 (scarlet fever)
 - g) JAMES C. SOUTHARD: born 22 March 1881.
- 2) EDWARD SOUTHARD: was living with WILLIAM APPLEGATE in 1870 as mentioned above. He married MARY MURPHY and their story continues in the next part.
- 3) REBECCA SOUTHARD: married DAVID HURLEY and was living in Asbury Park, NJ in 1907.
- 4) JOHN SOUTHARD: married ELLA G. HORNER on 3 April 1872 by REVEREND J.W. McDougall at the Methodist-Episcopal Parsonage in Crosswicks according to the Bordentown Register of 21 February 1873. They moved to Philadelphia in 1880 where JOHN worked as a *wharf hand* at an ice plant along with his brother-in-law HORACE G. HORNER, who also shared their home.⁹³ They lived in Philadelphia at least until JOHN'S death on 22 March 1908. It is not known what ELLA did subsequently but she lived until 1933. They are buried in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*. In Early Southard's of New York and New Jersey, MR. POTTER confuses this JOHN SOUTHARD with another of the same name.

⁹⁰ *Bordentown Register*, 11 April 1884, pages 2 & 3.

⁹¹ *Chesterfield Township Heritage* (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ) 1964, page 178.

⁹² *Bordentown Register*, 28 June 1889, page 3, column 2.

⁹³ 1880 US census, Philadelphia, 31st ward, district 5; roll 1189, page 375a.

- a) SARAH SOUTHARD, born circa 1874, NJ.
 - b) ANNA SOUTHARD, born circa 1878, NJ.
 - c) FRANK SOUTHARD, born circa 1880, NJ.
- 5) JOSEPH SOUTHARD: his birth record states *no name SOUTHARD, boy*. His father is JOSEPH, lived in Shelltown and is a laborer. This information coincides with what we know and it is assumed to be JOSEPH'S record. He married LOUISE BUCKELIN who was a couple years younger. By mid-1880 they had moved to Falls in Bucks County, PA.⁹⁴ LOUISE died in that decade and JOSEPH married ANNA LEUTNER on 6 March 1889 in Hamilton, Maryland. In 1907 JOSEPH is found with his wife ANNA, living in Getting, Baltimore County, MD. He died 10 May 1921 in Maryland. He is reported to have been a farmer and had thirteen children.⁹⁵
- a) HELEN SOUTHARD, born circa 1870, NJ.
 - b) JOSEPH O. SOUTHARD, born circa 1878, NJ.
- 6) HANNAH SOUTHARD: died of scarlet fever in the first half of 1860.
- 7) PHOEBE A. SOUTHARD: In 1880 a PHEBE SOUTHARD, 25 years old, appears as a servant to ALFRED and EMILY SCHENK in Imlaystown, Upper Freehold Township.⁹⁶ PHOEBE, living in Ellisdale, married JOHN P. BIRD, son of GEORGE and CHARITY BIRD, of Georgetown on 17 February 1883, REVEREND J. WARD CLARK officiating in Jacobstown; was living in Plattsburg, Burlington County in 1907.
- 8) CHARLES SOUTHARD: lived in Virginia for awhile where he was the overseer on a farm owned by JASON C. and ANNIE TAYLOR in Western Branch, Norfolk County.⁹⁷ He moved back to New Jersey around 1887, settling in Neptune City, Monmouth County. He married JENNIE R. _____ but it isn't known when or where. They were living in Asbury Park, NJ by 1907.
- 9) MARGARET SOUTHARD: She married GEORGE BIRD (born circa 1857) whose brother, JOHN P. BIRD, would become the husband of MARGARET'S older sister PHOEBE ANN. In 1880 they are in New Hanover Township with their three-year-old daughter OLIVE.⁹⁸ It is not known if their son CLIVE had already been born and died young or was born after 1880. If born after 1880, the last four named children were born in rapid succession. GEORGE BIRD, a farm laborer, died before 1885 and, in that year, MARGARET and three of her children, OLIVE, JACOB and FIRMAN are found living with her parents in the 1864 house owned by LEVI on Province Line Road. Their fourth child, Clive, has not been located at this time. Five different names have been found for the children of MARGARET and GEORGE but it may be that CLIVE and ELLIS are in fact the same person:
- a) OLIVE BIRD, born 1877
 - b) JACOB BIRD
 - c) CLIVE BIRD
 - d) FIRMAN G. BIRD, born 1881
 - e) ELLIS BIRD

⁹⁴ 1880 US Census, Bucks County, PA, Falls; roll 1106, page 250c.

⁹⁵ Ancestry.com, [Message Boards > Surnames > Southard](#) > Joseph Smires Southard, Posted: 18 Jun 2008 6:45AM; <http://boards.ancestry.com/surnames.southard/495/mb.ashx>

⁹⁶ 1880 U.S. Census, Monmouth County, NJ, Imlaystown, Upper Freehold Township, page 532, line 9.

⁹⁷ 1880 US Census, Norfolk County, VA, Western Branch; roll 1381, page 272d.

⁹⁸ 1880 Census, New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ; R T9-773; page 482.4000; E.D. 31; Image: 0159.

Around 1891, MARGARET married CHARLES LAWYER, the widower of MARGARET'S younger sister LYDIA who had passed away in the previous decade. MARGARET and CHARLES, with CHARLES' daughter by his first wife LYDIA, ETTA or EDNA, and two of MARGARET'S children, FIRMAN and ELLIS BIRD are found in New Hanover Township in 1895 with two other people in the house: RUTH COLBER, under 20, and JOHN FORT between 20 and 60.⁹⁹ They lived on Georgetown Road in Chesterfield Township at some point. This house would later be occupied by Margaret's nieces LYDIA SOUTHARD CHAFETY and MARGARET D. SOUTHARD HOLLOWAY.¹⁰⁰ [Photograph of this house in the section detailing the children of EDWARD and MARY (MURPHY) SOUTHARD] In 1910 they were living in North Hanover Township with CHARLES' grandson FRANK LAWYER, five years old and CHARLES twenty-four year old "nephew" FRANK BIRD and his wife of three years MARY.¹⁰¹ This enumeration poses three separate problems: CHARLES' daughters from his first marriage are unlikely to have been mothers to FRANK as they would have taken the surname of their husband upon marrying. As to his nephew, FRANK is not one of the known children of MARGARET'S first marriage to GEORGE BIRD. The third problem is MARGARET'S declaration of having two children – if this refers to the children of CHARLES and MARGARET it means that they had children as yet unidentified in addition to their respective offspring from earlier marriages. If this refers to total number of children, then the offspring of MARGARET'S first marriage may be incorrectly given above.

- 10) SARAH JANE SOUTHARD: died on 22 August 1861 at three and a half months old, buried in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery*.
- 11) LYDIA E. SOUTHARD: married CHARLES LAWYER of Jacobstown. In 1885 CHARLES and LYDIA are found living with RICHARD and SARAH HARRISON in New Hanover Township, next door to LYDIA'S uncle and aunt, SAMUEL and EMELINE SOUTHARD.¹⁰² She died before 1891 as CHARLES married LYDIA'S older sister MARGARET SOUTHARD in that year.
 - a) MABEL LAWYER HIGGINS: was legally adopted by GEORGE HIGGINS after LYDIA'S death. In 1895 she is found with GEORGE and SUSAN HIGGINS, listed as "MABLE L. HIGGINS," less than 20 years old.¹⁰³ They were living near Cookstown in 1907.
 - b) EDNA or ETTA LAWYER: born 1890/91.
- 12) MARY SOUTHARD: In 1880 she was living on the farm of ALFRED B. and LAVINIA R. REED, 38 and 25 years old, respectively. This farm was in Chester, Burlington County and located next to the home of MARY'S brother LEVI.¹⁰⁴ She married EDWARD BUCKALEW. MARY died before 1906. EDWARD lived in Bordentown in 1907.
- 13) ROBERT SOUTHARD: married ANNA _____. In 1907 they were living in Rahway.
 - a) MARY EMMA SOUTHARD, born and died 1886, buried with grandparents in *Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery* with a small stone bearing the inscription:

MARY EMMA - Daughter of R & A SOUTHARD – 1886.

⁹⁹ 1895 New Jersey State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, house number 84, family number 87.

¹⁰⁰ *Chesterfield Township Heritage* (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ) 1964, page 70.

¹⁰¹ 1910 Census, Burlington Co, NJ, North Hanover Tp, ED 69, sht 5B, dw 124, fa 128, lin 87-91; Series T624, roll 871, p 186.

¹⁰² 1885 New Jersey State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, house number 276, family number 294.

¹⁰³ 1895 New Jersey State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, house number 173, family number 182.

¹⁰⁴ 1880 Census Burlington County, Chester. See note 24

Husband's Name: **EDWARD A. SOUTHARD**

Born:	1846/7	near Cookstown, Burlington County, NJ
Married:	1870/2 ¹⁰⁵	
Died:	24 September 1898	Chesterfield, Burlington County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery</i> , Jacobstown, NJ	
Father:	JOSEPH S. SOUTHARD (28 December 1823 to 1906)	
Mother:	MARY ANN SMIRES (1827 to 29 October 1887)	

Wife's Name: **MARY A. MURPHY**

Born:	22 April 1852	County Wexford, Ireland ¹⁰⁶
Died:	20 July 1943	Chesterfield, Burlington County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery</i> , Jacobstown, NJ	
Father:	JOHN MURPHY (1811 to 14 August 1889)	
Mother:	MARGARET MONAHAN (1823 to 7 April 1891)	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) ANNA MARY SOUTHARD	November 1872	
2) JOSEPH C. SOUTHARD	November 1874	
3) EMILY H. SOUTHARD	5 April 1877	Upper Freehold Tp, Mon Co, NJ
4) JOHN LAWRENCE SOUTHARD	15 July 1879	Hornerstown, Monmouth Co, NJ
5) WILLIAM M. SOUTHARD	May 1882	
6) MARGARET N. SOUTHARD	December 1884	
7) LYDIA J. SOUTHARD	March 1891	New Hanover Tp, Burlington Co, NJ
8) EDWARD ALBERT SOUTHARD	30 October 1894	Jacobstown, Burlington Co, NJ

EDWARD married MARY A. MURPHY sometime between September 1870 and February 1872. They were probably married at the Roman Catholic Church of the Assumption in New Egypt. The *Daily True American* newspaper carried no marriage announcement for them during 1870 or 1871. MARY was born 22 April 1852 to JOHN MURPHY and MARGARET DONOVAN, his wife, in County Wexford, Ireland, probably in the vicinity of Monageer.¹⁰⁷

¹⁰⁵ Birth and marriage dates estimated from existing records in possession of author.

¹⁰⁶ Information obtained from death certificate of Mary Southard and letter from Lydia Chaffey to Paula Radwanski, dated 21 April 1980, copy of which is in author's possession.

¹⁰⁷ Information obtained from death certificate of Mary Southard and letter from Lydia Chaffey to Paula Radwanski, dated 21 April 1980, copy of which is in author's possession.

They most likely met when MARY'S family moved to Cookstown between 1860 and 1870. In the 1870 Census, EDWARD and MARY'S parents are found not far from each other and both were enumerated on the same date indicating that they lived close to each other.¹⁰⁸

They were living on Jacobstown-Chesterfield Road in Chesterfield Township, Burlington County by 1876; it is believed the house pictured was within the "Village of Recklesstown" which became the village of Chesterfield in 1888.

EDWARD and MARY were followed, possibly immediately, by WESLEY and HARRIET TANTUM in this two-story clapboard house.¹⁰⁹ By 1879, they lived in Hornerstown in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County where their son JOHN was born. They were living in the same township for the 1880 census.¹¹⁰ By 1885 they moved to Cookstown in New Hanover Township, Burlington County and the family was still there a decade later.¹¹¹

A family story has it that EDWARD scratched his leg on a rusty nail and got blood poisoning that resulted in the loss of his leg.¹¹² According to the death certificate, EDWARD took ill in January 1898 with some type of tumor. At the time of his death, 24 September 1898, they were still living in Cookstown, New Jersey. EDWARD died of complications of the surgical removal of the tumor and was buried in Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery, plot 234. The plot is marked by a tall, white marble monument. It is greatly eroded but the inscription is thought to read:

EDWARD A. SOUTHARD
Died Sept. 24 1898
Aged 52 years

*Farewell My Wife and Children Dear
Oh Hush That Troubled Sigh
For God Thy Sorrowed Hearts Will Cheer
Shed Not For Me That Bitter Tear
I Did Not Fear To Die
From You A Father Christ Doth Call
Mourn Not For Me It Is In Vain
To Call Me To Your Sight Again*



Home of Edward A. & Mary (Murphy) Southard, circa 1875
Jacobstown-Chesterfield Road, Chesterfield Township

¹⁰⁸ 1870 U.S. Census (Free Schedule) Burlington County, NJ, New Hanover Twp., 14 July 1870, p.744, lines 24-30 and p.745, family 30, dwelling 27, lines 26-28.

¹⁰⁹ *Chesterfield Township Heritage* (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ) 1964, page 75. NOTE: Edward is incorrectly listed as "M.A. Southard."

¹¹⁰ 1880 U.S. Census (Free Schedule) Monmouth County, NJ, Upper Freehold Twp., 18 June 1880, p.15, family 140, dwelling 136, lines 42-47, enumeration district 126.

¹¹¹ 1885 NJ State Census, Burlington Co, New Hanover Twp., 30 June 1885, p. 35, Dw.239, Fa.255, Person No.1036-1043. (&) 1895 NJ State Census, Burlington County, New Hanover Twp., pp.26-27, person No.777-785.

¹¹² Marion Minard (second cousin of Edward through Gilbert M. Southard), Trenton, NJ, letter to author dated 19 October 1989.

There is also emblem thought to indicate the deceased was a member of the Baptist Church, but this has not been verified.¹¹³



Farmhouse of Mary Southard, Jacobstown-Chesterfield Road, Chesterfield Township, NJ
Pictured here as it probably looked when purchased in 1908

containing 89 and 18/100ths acres north of "the road from Chesterfield to Arneystown and Jacobstown" and two tracts on the south side of the same road containing 3 and 14/100ths acres for \$5000.00.¹¹⁵ In the 1910 Federal Census, JOSEPH is found with his mother MARY, and siblings LYDIA and EDWARD at the farm on "Jacobstown Road." In the 1915 State Census MARY and her sons JOSEPH and EDWARD are found with CHARLES MCCABE, a 39-year-old laborer; JAMES BRISTALL, a 24-year-old black laborer and JESSIE CRAIG, a 30-year old black servant; all three were born in Pennsylvania.¹¹⁶ In 1920, MARY and her son JOSEPH are on Jacobstown-Chesterfield Road with CORNELIA WOODWARD, "boarder," and ERNEST BOROGIS, "hired man." The census relates that MARY, now sixty-five years old; came to the United States in 1855 and that she was not naturalized.¹¹⁷

After the death of EDWARD in 1898, MARY remained with the family on the farm. In the 1900 census she is found with her son JOSEPH as the head of household and all eight children still together.¹¹⁴ CHRIS WOODWARD, a physician, is listed as a brother-in-law and, indeed, he was the husband of EMILY, even though she was listed as being single. EDWARD's doctor was CHARLES WOODWARD of New Egypt. Whether CHRIS and CHARLES were related is not known. On 11 March 1908 MARY and her son JOSEPH purchased 3 tracts of land, one



Farmhouse of Mary Southard, Jacobstown-Chesterfield Road, Chesterfield Township, NJ, circa 1940

¹¹³ Erosion is due to the soft quality of white marble. In 1994 an estimate for repairs was \$1470.00 to redo the existing inscription and \$140.00 to add "Mary A. Murphy Died July 20, 1943" as her separate small stone is only inscribed "Mother." JM Bowker & Sons of Bordentown, NJ provided this estimate and suggested a longer-lasting solution, that being to erect a supplemental gray granite marker on this plot for \$975.00.

¹¹⁴ 1900 U.S. Census, Burlington Co, NJ, New Hanover Tp., 5 June 1900, p.3A, fa 57, dw 55, l 32-41, ED 25.

¹¹⁵ Burlington County Deeds, Book 459, p.292

¹¹⁶ 1915 NJ State Census, Burlington County, Chesterfield Township, 1 June 1915, Sheet 2B, Lines 79-84, Dwelling 36, Fam 41.

¹¹⁷ 1910 U.S. Census (Free Schedule) Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Twp., 10/11 May 1910, p.7A, family 195, dwelling 192, lines 4-8, enumeration district 58.

Descendants of EDWARD describe a farm at which they visited several times between the 1920s and 1960s as a big, white farmhouse without electricity, water, or heat. The house had a large dining room, large enough for the family and several farmhands. Family members included MARY, "GRANDMOM SOUTHARD," her son "UNCLE JOE," and an "UNCLE JOHN" who is an unknown as MARY'S son JOHN had died in 1911. "GRANDMOM SOUTHARD." was described as having a "stooped-over" posture and long, white hair, always in braids. There are several pictures of the farm when owned by the SOUTHARD family in existence and it appears in the book *Chesterfield Township Heritage* as their pre-1876 residence does.¹¹⁸ A picture appeared in an unidentified area newspaper with the caption *Five Generations In One Family* with the names as MRS. MARY SOUTHARD of Chesterfield, MRS. ROBERT LUTES, her daughter, MRS. CHARLES BURTIS, her grand-daughter, MRS. HOWARD SPRAGUE, great-grand-daughter and CARLTON SPRAGUE, great-great-grandson. It is also thought that each child had a charcoal and water-color portrait done and these were given to MARY as a gift and they hung in the farmhouse for years. Two of the portraits, that of JOHN and the one of JOSEPH, were in the care of WILSON and OLIVE SOUTHARD for many years and were given to this author because of his expressed interest in preserving them. The three photographs included here show the farmhouse as it looked when purchased in 1908, mid-way through the fifty-six year ownership and how it looked when sold in 1964 (below) which is the way most people that visited the farm who are reading this will remember it.

MARY died on the 20th of July in 1943 on the farm in Chesterfield. An obituary, thought to be from the *Trenton Times*, under the title *MRS. SOUTHARD's Rites Tomorrow* relays that she had died on *Tuesday night at her home; services will be held from her home July 23rd at 2:00 pm with REVEREND ALFRED L. BANYARD, Rector of Christ Church in Bordentown officiating.* The funeral director was NORMAN T. PEPPLER. The obituary continues she was born in Ireland and is survived by three daughters: MRS. ANNA LUTES of Ellisdale, MRS. ROY HOLLOWAY of Chesterfield, MRS. HARRY CHAFAY of Mount Holly; two sons: JOSEPH of Chesterfield and EDWARD of Trenton; and several grandchildren and great-grandchildren. *More than 50 of her grandsons and nephews are in the armed services.* She was buried in Jacobstown Baptist Cemetery, next to her husband. In her will, dated 15 February 1943, she left her entire estate to her son JOSEPH.¹¹⁹

ISSUE:¹²⁰

- 1) ANNA M. SOUTHARD: married ROBERT LUTES; lived in Ellisdale, New Jersey. The *Allentown Messenger* of 23 March 1933 has the following notations: *MRS. ROBERT LUTES was hostess to the Ladies Aid Society last Wednesday afternoon... and ...MRS. S.L. SOUTHARD and MRS. ROBERT LUTES were Hightstown visitors on Wednesday.* The identity of "MRS. S.L. SOUTHARD" hasn't been determined. Descendents include the surnames BURTIS, SPRAGUE and O'HAGAN. ANNA is buried in Aicedale, New Jersey. The *Allentown Messenger* of 15 May 1941 lists the death of JAMES O'HAGAN, the eight-month old son of MR. & MRS. STANLEY O'HAGAN of Church Street in Allentown. Survivors included two brothers CHARLES and STANLEY, grandparents MR. & MRS.



Mary (Murphy) Southard, Chesterfield Farmhouse (c1940)

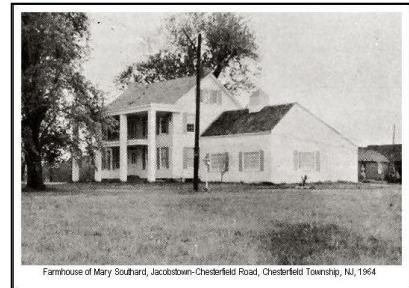
¹¹⁸ *Chesterfield Township Heritage* (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ) 1964, page 80.

¹¹⁹ Mary Southard, will of; Burlington County, Book 81 of Wills, p.27, #C9729; dated 15 Feb. 1943, probated 1 Dec.1943; Hughes Justice Complex, CN 971, Trenton, NJ 08625.

¹²⁰ Regarding the children, the author has more detailed information in his possession.

CHARLES BURTIS, grandmother MRS. ROBERT LUTES and great-grandmother, MRS. MARY SOUTHARD of Chesterfield. ANNA died before October 1964.

- 2) JOSEPH SOUTHARD: lived in Chesterfield all his life, never married. He died at Buttonwood Hall, a nursing home in Lisbon, NJ, on 29 October 1964.¹²¹ He was buried in the family plot with his parents in *Jacobstown Cemetery*. After he passed away, the farm and farmhouse was eventually sold. After remaining empty for a few years, it was completely destroyed by fire.
- 3) EMILY SOUTHARD: married first CHRIS WOODWARD. A second marriage to WALTER C. POWELL occurred on 25 September 1916 in Trenton. She died before October 1964.
- 4) JOHN LAWRENCE SOUTHARD: moved to Oceanport, Eatontown Township, Monmouth County in late 1900 or early 1901 to work on the farm of SAMUEL SMOCK.¹²² He married ELIZABETH PARKER in 1901. *Their story continues on page 52.*
- 5) WILLIAM SOUTHARD: married SALLY P. VANARSDALE. They were living on Chesterfield-Jacobstown Road in Chesterfield Township in 1920 with their children.¹²³ WILLIAM died 7 February 1943, and SALLY in 1966. They are buried in *Bordentown Cemetery*. Descendents may include the surname DANBURY.
- VERNON LAWRENCE SOUTHARD: born circa 1909; married (1) IRMA KLEIN, daughter of JOSEPH and RACHEL KLEIN. Received a preliminary decree of divorce in August 1936, at which time VERNON lived in Chesterfield and IRMA in Roebling.¹²⁴ VERNON married (2) LILIA ROGERS. Interred at *Bordentown Cem.*
 - LILA SOUTHARD: born circa 1913; married (1) LEWIS KLEIN, perhaps a brother of IRMA; married (2) LLOYD NEWELL. Interred at *Bordentown Cemetery*.
 - VERNON L. NEWELL: married GAIL DANBURY.
 - NANCY NEWELL: born 26 March 1971.
 - DONALD NEWELL: born 15 October 1973. (TWINS)
 - PAUL NEWELL: born 15 October 1973.
 - VICKI NEWELL: born 8 January 1979.
 - WILLIAM SOUTHARD: born in 1919. Interred at *Bordentown Cemetery*.
- 6) MARGARET D. SOUTHARD: married ROY HOLLOWAY on 9 September 1906 in the Methodist-Episcopal Parsonage in Crosswicks. They lived in the same home on Georgetown Road in Chesterfield Township that her sister LYDIA did, but it is not clear if that was immediately before or afterwards.¹²⁵ The 1910 census places them on "Crosswicks-Georgetown Road" in that township which may be the same road as a Georgetown Road does not appear in that census. There is also a Bordentown-Georgetown Road in that census that could be the same as Georgetown Road.¹²⁶ By 1920 they moved to Millers Lane in Chesterfield.¹²⁷ She was living in Bordentown in 1964; she died in 1981 and was buried in Crosswicks.
- DELIA A. HOLLOWAY: born 1908; married RALPH McDANIELS.
 - ALICE M. HOLLOWAY: born May 1918; married EDGAR SATTERWAIT.



¹²¹ *Bordentown Register*, 5 November 1964, page 24, column 5.

¹²² *Red Bank Register*, 25 Sep 1901; Wedding announcement of John Lawrence Southard and Elizabeth Parker.

¹²³ 1920 United States Census (Free Schedule) Burlington County, NJ. Chesterfield Township. ED 78, sheet 4B, page 234, family 80, dwelling 78, nos. 98-100, and sheet 5A, page 235, nos. 1-2.

¹²⁴ *Mount Holly Herald*, 28 August 1936, Sect.2, p.3, col.1

¹²⁵ *Chesterfield Township Heritage* (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ)1964, page 70.

¹²⁶ 1910 U.S. Census (Free Schedule) Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Twp., 13/14 May 1910, family 270, dwelling 265, lines 80-82, enumeration district 58, sheet 11B; Series T624, roll 871, page 11.

¹²⁷ 1920 U.S. Census (Free Schedule) Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Twp., Village of Chesterfield, 7/8 January 1920, family 120, dwelling 117, lines 56-60, enumeration district 78, sheet 6B; Series T625, roll 1020, page 237.

i) ROY SATTERWAIT

- 7) LYDIA SOUTHARD: married HARRY CHAFAY on 29 November 1911. They lived on Georgetown Road in Chesterfield Township in a house that had been previously occupied by LYDIA'S aunt "MAGGIE" SOUTHARD LAWYER.¹²⁸ In 1920 they were on Chesterfield-Sykesville Road in Chesterfield Township where HARRY was a farmer. LYDIA was living in Princeton in 1964; she died around 1987; buried in Mt Holly.
- a) DORIS CHAFAY: born circa 1913; married _TAYLOR; lived in Atco, NJ.
 - b) IRIS CHAFAY: born circa 1914.
 - c) JOHN CHAFAY: born circa 1915.
 - d) EVELYN EMILY CHAFAY: born March 1916.
 - e) LYDIA CHAFAY: born March 1917.
 - f) MARTHA CHAFAY: b Dec 1918; married _PETERS.
 - g) HARRY CHAFAY.
 - h) HELEN CHAFAY.
 - i) WILLIAM CHAFAY.
 - j) MARY CHAFAY.
 - k) ELIZA CHAFAY: married (1)_____, widowed, (2)
HARTSHORNE TANTUM.¹²⁹
- 8) EDWARD ALBERT SOUTHARD: In a short biography from 1922 (referenced herein) he said he was born in Jacobstown while on his WW II draft card he said he was born in Cookstown. After completing high school around 1911, he became an auto mechanic as well as tire "vulcanizing" which entails the use of high heat to fuse the various parts together and add the tread pattern. He moved to Trenton around 1915 where he worked as an auto mechanic and lived in a row home at 1726 East State Street near Nottingham Way. His widowed sister-in-law ELIZABETH moved in 1916 and was still there the following year as shown by the city directories for 1917 and 1918. EDWARD entered the United States Army on 22 February 1918 and was honorably discharged 20 May 1919. Probably in part due to the vagaries of war, and in part because MARGARET was pregnant, he married shortly before an expected deployment in France. On 1 April 1918 he married MARGARET J. (JENNY) LYONS (born 4 July 1894 at Trenton to DANIEL J. LYONS and MARY GREBBON) at Allentown. He opened his own tire business in Allentown after being discharged but remained a resident of Trenton. By 1922 he had become a member of the Roman Catholic Church and was a Democrat.¹³⁰ In 1930 EDWARD, MARGARET and JACK were living at 117 Montgomery Street in Trenton. It is thought that EDWARD SOUTHARD was married two more times: MARY BOGDANE is named as his second wife and JULIANNE as his third. It is not known how long he remained in Allentown but the 70-year-old EDWARD was definitely living in Trenton when his brother JOSEPH died in October 1964. EDWARD died in Willingboro, Burlington County, NJ in December 1975.
- a) MARY E. SOUTHARD: born December 1918; died 18 Feb 1919; buried *Saint John's Cemetery*,
¹³¹ Allentown.
 - b) JOHN "JACK" L. SOUTHARD: born 22 February 1921.



This house on Georgetown Road in Chesterfield Township was home to three Southard families: Margaret Southard (daughter of Joseph) and her second husband Charles Lawyer, circa 1900; Margaret Southard (daughter of Edward) and her husband Roy Holloway, circa 1910; and Lydia Southard (daughter of Edward) and her husband Harry Chafay, circa 1915.

¹²⁸ *Op.cit.* Note 19.

¹²⁹ *Op.cit.* Note 19.

¹³⁰ *History of Monmouth County, New Jersey 1664 – 1920, Volume III* (NY: Lewis Publishing Company; 1922) page 373.

¹³¹ *Trenton Evening Times*, 19 February 1919.

Husband's Name: **JOHN LAWRENCE SOUTHARD**

Born: 15 July 1879 Hornerstown, Monmouth County, NJ
Married: 22 September 1901 Oceanport, Monmouth County, NJ
Died: 23 October 1911 Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ
Buried: *Bordentown Cemetery*, Bordentown, NJ

Father: EDWARD A. (ABEL) SOUTHARD (1846 to 24 September 1898)
Mother: MARY MURPHY (1850/2 to 20 July 1943)

Wife's Name: **ELIZABETH RUTH PARKER**

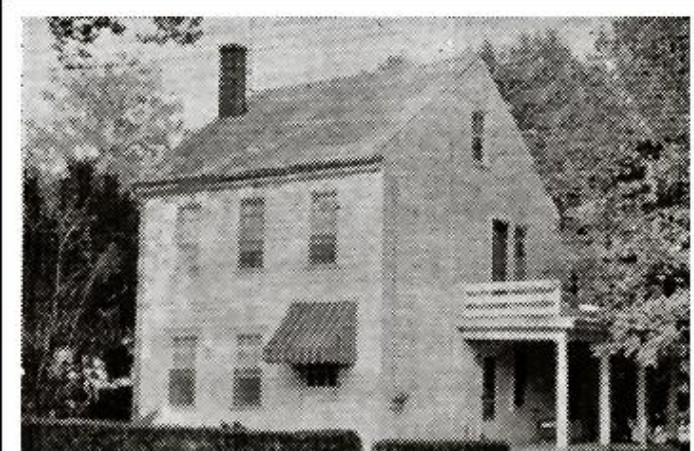
Born: 5 October 1882 Monroe Township, Middlesex County, NJ¹³²
Died: 22 January 1932 Trenton, Mercer County, NJ
Buried: *Bordentown Cemetery*, Bordentown, NJ

Father: WILLIAM HENRY PARKER (19 April 1854 to 26 February 1901)
Mother: SARAH M. (MARY) PERRINE (14 September 1854 to 20 March 1933)

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) EDITH WILSON SOUTHARD	9 June 1903	Crosswicks, Burlington County, NJ
2) MARION E. SOUTHARD	7 February 1904	Crosswicks, Burlington County, NJ
3) DOROTHY RUTH SOUTHARD	17 January 1907	Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ
4) JOHN WILSON SOUTHARD	29 April 1910	Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ

They were married by PASTOR MATTHIAS S. MESSLER at the Oceanport Methodist Episcopal Church in Eatontown Township. HENRY HENDRICKSON and his wife NANCY stood as witnesses. A wedding announcement in the *Red Bank Register* stated:

*MISS ELIZABETH PARKER of
Clarksburg and JOHN L. SOUTHARD
of Chesterfield were married
Sunday night at Oceanport
Methodist parsonage by REV. M. S.
MESSLER...The couple are living at
Oceanport where MR. SOUTHARD is
employed by SAMUEL SMOCK.*¹³³



Home of John L. and Elizabeth Southard, Main Street, Crosswicks, circa 1905

¹³² Birth date obtained from death certificate of Elizabeth VanKirk. Birthplace surmised from census returns.

¹³³ *Red Bank Register*, 25 September 1901. Available at the Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold, NJ.

JOHN worked on the Eatontown Township, Monmouth County farm of SAMUEL SMOCK for a short time in the early 1900s.¹³⁴ Soon after marrying, no later than June 1903, ELIZABETH and JOHN moved to Crosswicks in Burlington County. It is known they lived in the house pictured on Main Street (Indian Trail) around 1906 but it is not known if this was their only home in that town for the four or more years they lived there. They apparently moved into the Main Street house after HENRY and AMANDA STOUT moved out. The next tenants were HERMAN and MOLLIE PITMAN.¹³⁵



By 1907 they had moved to 54 Crosswicks Street in Bordentown. JOHN was employed as a railroad coachman during some of this time. By 1910 he had become an assistant to an undertaker, probably CLARK ROGERS or NORMAN PEPPLER as they are the only two known undertakers in Bordentown at that time.¹³⁶ Also in this year EDITH attended the kindergarten at the First Methodist Church in Bordentown. EDITH and a fellow student caught diphtheria in September 1910 and both were dead the following month. ELIZABETH contracted the disease while caring for her daughter. It was reported that an "aunt" of EDITH's also contracted the

disease but she was not named. The First Methodist Church building was immediately closed to prevent further spread of the deadly disease. EDITH died from diphtheria on 3 October 1910, though two area newspapers reported that it was "MARION SOUTHARD, 7 year old daughter of JOHN SOUTHARD" that had died.^{137,138,139} She was buried in *Bordentown Cemetery*.

Just over a year after the tragic loss of her eldest daughter, ELIZABETH suffered another major loss – her husband JOHN died of pulmonary tuberculosis on 23 October 1911.¹⁴⁰ Obituaries appeared in several local papers.¹⁴¹ The funeral was conducted at 9 am on Friday October 27th from their home at 54 Crosswicks Street under the direction of CLARK B. ROGERS, followed by a Requiem High Mass at 10 am at Saint Mary's Roman Catholic Church in Bordentown and burial in *Bordentown Cemetery*. One family story is that he died of complications of an auto accident in which the handcrank in front struck his chest, while another was the exertion of cranking over the engine led to his death, however neither one is not mentioned on the death certificate as a contributing factor. Both are possibilities in that JOHN may have had tuberculosis that was not acute and a chest injury or the overexertion could lead to complications. Just how a mass came to be said at a Roman Catholic Church is not known. One possibility is that the grieving widow, unable to cope, left the details to her mother-in-law MARY (MURPHY) SOUTHARD who was of that religion.

¹³⁴ 1900 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ; Eatontown Tp, ED 111, Sht. 4, Ln. 5. LDS T623, roll 986.

¹³⁵ Chesterfield Township Heritage (Chesterfield Township Tercentenary Committee, Crosswicks, NJ) 1964, page 219.

¹³⁶ 1910 U.S. Census, Burlington County, NJ, Bordentown City, 15 Apr 1910, p.1A, fa 9, dw 9, lines 36-40; roll 871, ED 43.

¹³⁷ New Egypt Press, October 7, 1910

¹³⁸ Mount Holly Herald, October 15, 1910, p.2, col.4

¹³⁹ Phyllis Craig, Bordentown Cemetery Association, 210 Crosswicks Rd., Bordentown, NJ 08505, letter to author, dated 28 April 1986.

¹⁴⁰ Bordentown Cemetery, Avenue C, lot 16, section A.

¹⁴¹ Trenton Evening Times, 26 October 1911, p unk, col. 1; Bordentown Register, 27 October 1911, p.3, col.1; Mount Holly Herald, 28 October 1911, p.2, col.4; Trenton Sunday Advertiser, 29 Oct 1911, p.5

Unable to manage, ELIZABETH was forced to separate the children at first. MARION lived with JOHN's sister, EMILY WOODWARD, in New Egypt; and DOROTHY lived with her mother's sister, LILLIAN on the CHAPMAN farm in Sykesville, New Jersey during part of the time. While there DOROTHY's friendship with her cousin MYRTLE CHAPMAN, LILLIAN's daughter, deepened.¹⁴² In 1915 DOROTHY SUTHARD, born in January 1907, is attending Bordentown Public School and living with R. MARGARUM, a 66-year-old widowed farmer living in Bordentown Township. Also in the house are two females in their 30s, presumably the farmer's daughters: MARY and MAND.¹⁴³ WILSON (JOHN), just 1 1/2 years old, went to live with his grandmother, MARY SOUTHARD. In later years WILSON told his wife that he stayed with his grandmother until he was sixteen, which would have him returning to his mother in 1926. As will be shown, he was mistaken in this observation, possibly due to his young age, as mother and son were reunited by 1920 if not earlier.¹⁴⁴ However, ELIZABETH's whereabouts do remain a mystery for about five years.¹⁴⁵ It may be that eventually her daughter DOROTHY, and perhaps MARION, were cared for by the nuns at Saint Mary's Cathedral in Trenton and ELIZABETH wanted to be near them.¹⁴⁶ In 1917 ELIZABETH SOUTHARD, the "widow of JOHN," resurfaces in the Trenton City Directory. In that year she is living with her brother-in-law EDWARD SOUTHARD at 1726 East State Street in Hamilton Township, Mercer County. It is a safe assumption that ELIZABETH had moved to this address by mid- to late 1916 so as to allow inclusion in that directory. EDWARD SOUTHARD was an auto mechanic who specialized in tires. They are at the same address the following year.¹⁴⁷



During 1918 ELIZABETH moved to her own home at 886 East State Street at Hampton Avenue where she was running a confectionary store as found in the 1919 Trenton City Directory. Her listing in the 1920 Trenton City Directory: "SOUTHARD, ELIZABETH, widow of JOHN," is identical to the one of 1919.¹⁴⁸ Finding ELIZABETH in the 1920 census proved extremely difficult. The author has a few photographs which were "taken at the store" according to DOROTHY (MATELENA) NABINGER. One photograph has ELIZABETH with "a neighbor, EDNA DENELSBECK," in the backyard of the property. Locating the DENELSBECK family in the 1920 census proved to be the key. Found living at 878 East State Street, DR. JULIUS DENELSBECK and his wife EDNA were neighbors of ELIZABETH SHOURDS and her three children: MARJORIE, DOROTHY and WILSON at 886 East State Street.¹⁴⁹ The incorrect surname of SHOURDS is a mystery, as SUTHARD is a well-known name in Trenton. Living with ELIZABETH in 1920 were two lodgers: WILLIAM SMITH, thirty years old, and WALTER BRETON, thirty-five.

ELIZABETH soon thereafter, if not by this time, met

¹⁴² Marion Major, Longmeadow, MA, telephone conversation with author, 9 March 1986.

¹⁴³ 1915 NJ Census, Burlington Co, Bordentown Tp, 22 June 1915, Sts 5A, Lns 49-50 & 5B, Lns 51-52, Fa & Dw # 84

¹⁴⁴ Olive (Smith) Southard, Lawrenceville, NJ, personal correspondence to author from, dated 3 March 1995.

¹⁴⁵ For the 1915 NJ Census Elizabeth Southard is not found in Burlington, Ocean or Mercer Co.

¹⁴⁶ Marie Nabinger, conversation with author, 19 October 1985.

¹⁴⁷ Fitzgerald's Trenton City Directory, 1917 and 1918 (page 967).

¹⁴⁸ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1920, page unknown; Fitzgerald Dir Co, Trenton, NJ; trentonhistory.org

¹⁴⁹ 1920 Census Mercer Co, NJ, Trenton City, 12th ward, 28 Jan 1920, r1054, p 227; ED 99, sht 23A, l 16-24.

JOSEPH VANKIRK who lived at 522 Ingham Avenue, a few blocks north of the Battle Monument, with RALPH VANKIRK, presumably his son, in 1922 and 1923.¹⁵⁰ JOSEPH earlier lived in Pennsylvania, where two children were born, RALPH and ANNA.¹⁵¹ JOSEPH was the superintendent of an insurance company, the Equitable Beneficial Association. More of a match-maker than an insurance company, the Equitable resulted in three SOUTHARD marriages: the first was in November 1922 when ELIZABETH'S daughter DOROTHY married ALBERT MATELENA who was an insurance agent there followed by ELIZABETH and JOSEPH's marriage in March 1923; the third marriage was when her daughter MARION married DANNY NAPLES in 1923-4. A "BEN" NAPLES worked at the Association as an agent but available records suggest the name BEN may be wrong, as no known BEN NAPLES lived in Trenton. MARION maintained that she worked for JOSEPH VANKIRK as a secretary, probably in 1919 or 1920. According to MARION events transpired as follows: she met DANNY NAPLES at a dance held at Woodlawn Pavilion, she then took a job as a secretary at the Association where she introduced DANNY to her boss JOSEPH. DANNY became an agent for the Association and it is believed that he brought his friend, ALBERT MATELENA, into the Association as an agent.¹⁵²

Following in the footsteps, and train tracks, of her daughter DOROTHY, ELIZABETH and JOSEPH VANKIRK headed to Elkton, Cecil County, Maryland where they were married on 15 March 1923. The ceremony was presided over by D. F. LOCKERBIE, Minister, the same official who presided over the marriage of her daughter DOROTHY six months earlier.¹⁵³ A notice in the *Mount Holly Herald* says that ELIZABETH was from Chesterfield despite her living in Trenton since 1918.¹⁵⁴

ELIZABETH and JOSEPH moved to 1620 South Broad Street shortly after marrying; they were joined there briefly in 1924 when her daughter and son-in-law, DOROTHY and ALBERT MATELENA, moved in with them.¹⁵⁵ ELIZABETH may have continued to run the confectionary store at 886 East State Street. By 1927 ELIZABETH and JOSEPH had separate homes: ELIZABETH VANKIRK lived at 127 Columbus Avenue while JOSEPH lived at 114 Pennington Avenue, Trenton.¹⁵⁶ In 1928 JOSEPH is still at 114 Pennington Avenue where he was joined by his wife in 1929 when ELIZABETH is found as a clerk. In 1930 ELIZABETH is living at 114 Pennington Avenue and still a clerk while JOSEPH is living at 10 West End Avenue.¹⁵⁷ She may have opened a lunch stand at the end of the 1920s but this is based on information from her death certificate and the informant was not accurate in at least one area so perhaps the mention of running a lunch stand actually refers back to the East State Street business. ELIZABETH's granddaughter DOROTHY NABINGER related that she believed both DOROTHY and MARION SOUTHARD had lived at 114 Pennington Avenue, and even identified a photograph of a young DOROTHY SOUTHARD as being taken at that address. However, as shown in records, 1928 is the first year that this address has been definitely connected to the family and both DOROTHY and MARION were married and had started families of their own by that year.

¹⁵⁰ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1922, p.843; 1923, p.?: Fitzgerald Directory Company, Trenton.

¹⁵¹ 1920 US Census Mercer County, NJ, City of Trenton, 522 Trent Street, Vol. 75, ED 32, sheet 11, line 76.

¹⁵² Marion Major, telephone conversation with author, 22 December 2004.

¹⁵³ Cecil County (MD) Circuit Court, 129 East Main Street, Elkton, MD.

¹⁵⁴ *Mount Holly Herald*, 24 March 1923, page 4, column 5.

¹⁵⁵ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1924, p.980; Fitzgerald Directory Company, 14 N. Warren St., Trenton, NJ;

¹⁵⁶ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1927, p.918; Fitzgerald Directory Company, 14 N. Warren St., Trenton, NJ;

¹⁵⁷ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1928, p.934; 1929, p.963; 1930, p.946; Fitzgerald Dir Co, 14 N. Warren St.

ELIZABETH died at her home at 114 Pennington Avenue on 22 January 1932 and was buried in *Bordentown Cemetery* next to her first husband. Her death certificate states she was a "lunch stand keeper" for five years; a resident of Trenton for five years (incorrect, she moved to Trenton fifteen years earlier); and cause of death was coronary sclerosis. The undertaker was CLARK B. ROGERS of Bordentown. Her parents are listed as WILLIAM PARKER and SARAH FRANCIS; "FRANCIS" was the surname of SARAH'S first husband. Her daughter MARION was the informant and however unlikely it is, she reported her mother's time in Trenton as five years when it was actually fifteen, so the lunch stand keeper information is also suspect. ELIZABETH definitely had the confectionary store on East State Street from 1918 until 1923 and she may have ran it for a number of years after moving from that property in 1923 but there is no documentation or personal recollections that have her running a business at some other location. After her death, the store became a shoe shop and repair business.

An obituary in the *Trenton Times* stated accurately that she was forty-nine years old and she "died suddenly." Funeral services were conducted from the home of her daughter MARION, at 320 Euclid Avenue, Trenton.¹⁵⁸ The SOUTHARD grave marker is inscribed "ELIZABETH P. VANKIRK," the "P" thought to stand for PARKER. A family story is that, at the funeral, ELIZABETH'S mother SARAH asked to have her daughter's winter coat.¹⁵⁹ It's not known if she got it!



ISSUE:

1. EDITH SOUTHARD: Her birth certificate states her father is JOHN LAWRENCE, 24 and a laborer and her mother is LIZZIE PARKER, 21 and this is her first child. The medical attendant was a CHARLES L. DEY of Crosswicks. She died on 3 October 1910, at the age of 7, from diphtheria. Ptomaine poisoning is listed as a contributory cause on her death certificate. In the *Trenton Evening Times* of Wednesday, 5 October 1910, it was reported:

EDITH W. SOUTHARD

Special to the Times

BORDENTOWN, Oct. 5 – The funeral of EDITH W., the 7-year-old daughter of MR. and MRS. JOHN SOUTHARD, took place from the parents' residence, Crosswicks Street, Tuesday afternoon. Services were conducted at the grave by the REV. WILLIAM MITCHELL, pastor of Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church. Internment was at the Bordentown Cemetery under the direction of CLARK B. ROGERS.¹⁶⁰

The Baptismal Register of Trinity United Methodist Church shows that EDITH was baptized there on the day of her funeral, 4 October 1910. As noted earlier, two newspaper accounts of her death inexplicably give her name as MARION SOUTHARD.

2. MARION SOUTHARD: Her birth date is not certain: the family Bible, in the possession of MARION'S daughter, MARION MAJOR, shows 7 February 1904; the New Jersey Registrar of Vital Statistics records 10 March 1905 and the Social Security Administration has 7 February

¹⁵⁸ *Trenton Evening Times*, 23 January 1932.

¹⁵⁹ Olive (Smith) Southard. See note 13.

¹⁶⁰ *Trenton Evening Times*, 5 October 1910 and *Trenton Sunday Advertiser*, 9 October 1910, page 5.

1905.¹⁶¹ One possible explanation is the time delay between the event and the reporting of the event. Of course, this uncertainty when coupled with the inexplicable reporting of the death of MARION SOUTHARD from diphtheria in 1910 does raise some unanswerable questions. MARION moved to Trenton with her mother before 1920 and lived at the same addresses until marrying. MARION stated she worked for JOSEPH VANKIRK, her future step-father, as a secretary, probably in 1919 or 1920. In the 1921 Trenton City Directory she is found as a phone operator living at 385 Brunswick Avenue.¹⁶² At some point before marrying she was a secretary at the Equitable Beneficial Association. She met DANNY NAPLES at a dance held at Woodlawn Pavilion; She married DANIEL NAPLES in 1923-4 and resided in Trenton most of her life. DANNY was born 28 March 1901 and was an insurance agent for Equitable Beneficial Association. For more information on the NAPLES family, see the end of this section. He had lived with his family at 343 Elmer; after marrying they had set up their own home at 6 Hollywood Avenue, in the 6th ward. In 1930 they are found at that address with two children and DANNY's sister LUCY. By 1932 they had moved to 320 Euclid Avenue as this is where ELIZABETH VANKIRK funeral took place in that year. In 1940 DANNY gave his home-based occupation as an "authority in fishing" and their son John is not enumerated in the census at the Euclid Avenue home.¹⁶³ Ten years later, MARION's sister DOROTHY MATELENA and her family would become their neighbors at 328 Euclid Avenue. They later moved to Lawrence Township. DANNY passed away in December 1968. Several years after her husband's death MARION moved in with her daughter in Longmeadow, Massachusetts. She passed away on 3 September 1988.

- a) MARION NAPLES: born 1924-5; married PAUL MAJOR, lived in Longmeadow, Massachusetts through the 1970s and 80s; moved to neighboring Agawam where she now resides.
- b) DANIEL NAPLES: born December 1925.
- c) JOHN NAPLES: died of peritonitis in the 1970s?
- d) FRANK NAPLES: born 1932.

NAPLES FAMILY¹⁶⁴

ANGELO NAPLES was 27 years old in 1887 when he left Italy and moved to the United States. MARIA, his wife, was two years his junior, being born in 1862. She had arrived in the US as a young girl in 1870. They married in the late 1880s or early 1890s and lived in Trenton where all their children were born. In 1900, they lived at 551 Chestnut Avenue¹⁶⁵ and by 1920, they had moved to 343 Elmer Street in Trenton's 9th ward and had 9 children! ANGELO worked as a *parkman* for the city. Their children were:

SAM NAPLES:	born 1892.	Worked as a State Prison <i>keeper</i> in 1920.
MARY NAPLES:	born 1905.	
ELIZABETH "LIZZIE" NAPLES:	born 1906.	
FRANK NAPLES:	born 1895.	
ROSE NAPLES:	born 1909.	
DANIEL NAPLES:	born 28 March 1901.	Married MARION SOUTHARD (<i>above</i>).
ROCCO NAPLES:	born 1911.	
GEORGE NAPLES:	born 1913.	
ANGELO NAPLES, JUNIOR:	born 1903.	

¹⁶¹ Application for Social Security Card, 043-58-9060, Social Security Administration.

¹⁶² Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1921, p.771; Fitzgerald Directory Company, 14 N. Warren St., Trenton

¹⁶³ 1940 Census, Mercer Co, NJ, Trenton City, 12th wd, blk 7-8, 4 Apr 1940; ED 27-121, sht 3B, l 47-51.

¹⁶⁴ 1920 Census, Mercer Co, NJ, Trenton City, 9th wd, 5 Jan 1920, r1054, p227; ED99, sht23A, l16-24 (&)

1930 Cen, Mercer Co, NJ, Trenton City, 10th wd, blk422,17 Apr 1930,r1364,p212;ED41,s20A, l34-38 (&) Social Security Death Index, Daniel Naples, 146-26-4407.

¹⁶⁵ Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory, 1900; trentonhistory.org

- 3) **DOROTHY SOUTHARD:** While all three girls were given names that do not appear to have a familial origin, there was a DOROTHY D. SOUTHARD who died on 3 December 1905 in the area.¹⁶⁶ That she probably accompanied her father to the funeral home where he worked in Bordentown is indicated by descendants relating that she worked in a funeral home. DOROTHY was just four years old when her father died which means that, while she may have recalled the funeral home, she did not work there. Another family story, this one about her marriage, is that her mother got her a job working in the Little Gem Restaurant where **ALBERT MATELENA** worked in 1922. ELIZABETH's husband JOSEPH and ALBERT both worked at Equitable Benefit Association at this time. The story continues with ELIZABETH promising the twenty-seven year old ALBERT that he could marry the fifteen year old DOROTHY, with DOROTHY's consent. A colorful story, but not quite accurate. ALBERT worked for JOSEPH VANKIRK at the Equitable Beneficial Association and through this he probably met DOROTHY. JOSEPH VANKIRK did marry ELIZABETH, but not until six months *after* DOROTHY and ALBERT married.

This is where the story ends (*as the song goes*) as our English & Irish forebears merged with the Italian MATELENA line. You should be able to remember most of ALBERT & DOROTHY's offspring and their families, after all, that's us, AUNT DOT'S family and AUNT MARIE'S family. An interesting observation: the SMITH and two NABINGER husband's of the 3 MATELENA girls shared certain characteristics: all 3 were German and Eastern European and lived in Lalon Tract. Perhaps they were attracted to the quietness that was more typical of a German household after growing up in an Italian and Irish One, neither of which is usually described as being "quiet"!

- 4) **WILSON SOUTHARD:** married OLIVE MAY SMITH (born 1909) in 1929. In 1930 they were living at 156 Mercer Street in Trenton and WILSON worked in a garage.¹⁶⁷ By 1935 they moved to 87 Cherry Hill Road in Princeton Township and WILSON managed a dairy.¹⁶⁸ They later moved to 170 Marlboro Road in Lawrence Township, a suburb of Trenton. WILSON worked for ARTHUR SCHMIDT as a heating serviceman. He later worked for Trenton Lehigh Oil Co., retiring in 1990. He was a captain of the Lawrence Township First Aid Squad and a lifetime member of the Lawrence Road Fire Company. OLIVE recalls visiting "GRANDMOM" SOUTHARD in Chesterfield. "*She was a small woman. She showed me how she cleaned the parlor rug, no vacuum or carpet sweeper. We tore newspaper in small pieces, then soaked them in water, then spread them on the carpet, then we swept the rug with brooms. She never complained.*"¹⁶⁹ WILSON died 1 September 1994 and was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Trenton, NJ. OLIVE continued to live in their home until her death in 1998.
- a) **CAROL ANN SOUTHARD:** born 20 May 1938, worked for the New Jersey Department of Health and lived in Pennington, New Jersey. After retiring she moved to Flemington, NJ.

¹⁶⁶ "Obituaries," *Trenton Sunday Advertiser*, 10 December 1905, page 15.

¹⁶⁷ 1930 Census, Mercer Co, NJ, Trenton City, 3rd wd, blk 88, 2 Ap 1930; ED11-9, sht 1B, lines 56-57.

¹⁶⁸ 1940 Census, Mercer Co, NJ, Princeton Township, 11 April 1930; ED 11-65, sheet 5A, lines 21-23.

¹⁶⁹ Olive (Smith) Southard. See note 13.

BACKGROUND II

BEING A BAPTIST WHEN IT WAS NOT THE POPULAR THING TO DO

Being a member of a church was not a matter of choice, it was law – if you wanted to count, your baptism had better be done in a Church of England; a Dutch Reformed Church would also work if you were a colonial; if you didn't appear regularly in your parish church you could expect enormous fines and possible loss of property. Interestingly, marriage was not a function of a church; it was reserved to the State. In many jurisdictions marriages could only be performed by State officials, such as when a colonial governor issued licenses to marry and marriage bonds in lieu of a couple posting announcements of their impending nuptials for several weeks beforehand (which is where we get the tradition of placing engagement announcements in local newspapers!). Marriages were usually performed by a Justice of the Peace; when notice of a marriage by a Reverend is found, he is more often than not, a J.P. as well. Ministers still performed marriages but those they kept listed in personal registers which never made it to a State office.

ANABAPTISTS *in general*

Anabaptist is the name given to those who believed they had to personally be baptized again as adults, they were *baptized anew* or *re-baptized*; it was not their choice of name for the simple reason that their own new baptism was not a *function* of their beliefs; it was a *result* of those beliefs. They believed that, for a baptism to be real, the one being baptized had to make that decision of their own free will. That belief, called *credobaptism*, flew in the face of *infant baptism*, or *pedobaptism*, which, they correctly pointed out, is not found anywhere in Scripture. However *pedobaptism* existed by the 3rd century, and probably by the 1st, which provided sufficient proof of its validity to most Christians. Baptists also disagreed with the way a baptism was conducted, noting that all Scriptural baptisms were *full body immersions* and not the *sprinklings* of the Anglican and Catholic congregations. All Anabaptists supported a separation of church and state that allowed for personal choice in matters of religion.

References to Anabaptists are found in English letters and documents over a century earlier. Dutch Anabaptists included a prohibition of taking up arms which did not find favor in the English branch. VENNER's Uprising of January 1661 caused CHARLES II to issue a proclamation prohibiting meetings of Anabaptists and other religious sects. There were two primary Baptist traditions in England before 1660: the **GENERAL BAPTISTS** and the **PARTICULAR BAPTISTS**. Many of the early Baptist congregations were independent affairs with a mix of variant tenets; many died out while others merged together.

GENERAL BAPTISTS

Free will: General Baptists laid strong emphasis on individual personal salvation and an acceptance of persecution as an opportunity to testify for Christ. Pastors were elected by the casting of lots. Set prayers and recitations were regarded as a discouragement to true religion and some congregations encouraged prophesying, where members said whatever they believed God had inspired them to say. Travelling General Baptist preachers were regarded as troublemakers by local civil and church authorities throughout the kingdom. They believed in free will rather than the Calvinist doctrine of predestination which brought about

the first split in the Anabaptists. Salvation was available to all, hence *general* as opposed to the later adoption of CALVIN's theory in which only a *particular* few could be saved.

The Anabaptist tradition adopted by our GROVER ancestors is often said to have followed the 1660 STUART restoration. Our ancestor JAMES GROVER, III, born in 1607, was probably involved in one of the independent congregations from which Anabaptist doctrine sprouted in the 1640s. JAMES GROVER was described in 1654 by Dutch authorities as an *Anabaptist sent to OLIVER CROMWELL with a petition on behalf of the English inhabitants of Gravesend*. JAMES GROVER was definitely Baptist but probably more for their staunch support for the separation of Church and State—there's no recorded instance of a GROVER being punished for denying infant baptism but he was a wanted man from instigating some protests against the State (and in one instance, advocating for the overthrow of government!), being the United Provinces of the Netherlands.

PARTICULAR (CALVINISTIC) BAPTISTS

Predestination: PARTICULAR BAPTISTS supported a separation of church and state that allowed for personal choice in matters of religion. JOHN CALVIN's doctrine of predestination in which individual's had little affect on what was to come in the afterlife as that was a *fait accompli*; it had already been determined by God. They believed in salvation for a "particular" few, rather than the "general" salvation preached by the General Baptists.

Our SHEPPARD ancestors were PARTICULAR BAPTISTS but because of marriage, many were sympathetic to the Quakers and several descendants would adopt that religion in the years ahead. By June 1653 there were nine Baptist congregations in Ireland: Dublin, Clonmel, Kilkenny, Cork, Limerick, Galway, Wexford, Kerry and Waterford; there was just one in Northern Ireland at Carrickfergus. The Clough Keating church became the tenth parish in Ireland in the latter half of 1653 and it was this congregation our ancestors were affiliated with despite the Waterford church being much closer. It seems that many Baptists returned to England after the Restoration in 1660 assuming, incorrectly, a tolerant Parliament.

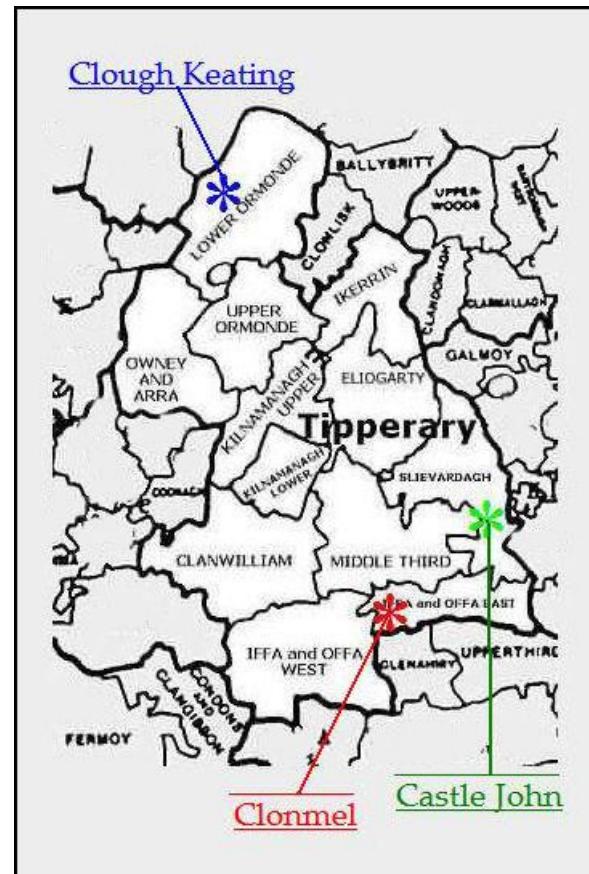
The origins of the PARTICULAR BAPTISTS are unclear. The distinction of being PARTICULAR BAPTIST'S may have developed directly from dissident radical congregations in London during the 1630s though its roots are much older. The Jacob-Lathrop-Jessey congregation in London is often cited as the mother congregation of the early PARTICULAR BAPTISTS. The Baptist tradition in Shropshire, possible birthplace of THOMAS SHEPPARD, dates to at least 1630 in Shrewsbury when what would become the Claremont Church began meeting regularly. The Confession of Faith of 1643 is one of the earliest declarations of the PARTICULAR BAPTISTS which was signed by fifteen people including THOMAS PATIENCE.

During the Commonwealth and the Protectorate the PARTICULAR BAPTISTS attained large memberships throughout England and in Ireland because of the large number of English soldiers given land there. By 1644 there were some forty-seven congregations outside of London while the Irish congregations only took root after 1651. They were particularly strong within the New Model Army. THOMAS SHEPPARD did not arrive in Ireland and suddenly become a PARTICULAR BAPTIST so it is highly likely that he was affiliated with one of the approximately fifty congregations that were present in England by 1650 and available evidence suggests it was either the congregation at Shrewsbury in Shropshire or Hay-on-Wye in Wales.

There are indications that some tension developed between the ANABAPTISTS and CROMWELL in the mid-1650s but this may be an incorrect interpretation of events. Several Baptists were known to be *Fifth Monarchy Men* – a group that believed that the Second Coming of Christ was close-at-hand and it was their responsibility to prepare the country for His coming. CROMWELL opposed them; the fact that some were Baptists is coincidental. There were instances that could be construed as prejudicial against ANABAPTISTS by Cromwell but these seem to be isolated incidents and, on the whole, the ANABAPTISTS, if not thriving, at that least they survived through the Commonwealth and the Protectorate.

Clough Keating

THOMAS PATIENT (died 1666) an “old officer of OLIVER CROMWELL” was one of six ministers chosen by Parliament to go to Dublin. At the time he was a ministerial assistant to WILLIAM KIFFIN, pastor of the Baptist congregation in Devonshire Square, London. In Ireland he first went to Kilkenny where he established a church in 1650, followed by Waterford in 1651 where he left a MR. FOSTER as pastor before proceeding to Dublin. He is credited with being the founder and one-time pastor of the church at Clough Keating, which must have came about before 1660 when he returned to England. The congregation was severely prosecuted during Monmouth’s Rebellion when all members were tried “for their lives” but were spared when the jury foreman died before sentence was passed and the remaining jury members, with concurrence of a judge with Protestant sympathies, acquitted all those charged. Cleagh or Clough Keating is not found in a letter from PATIENT dated 1 June 1653 which lists the nine Baptist churches in Ireland (ten if you include Northern Ireland) however the church records of the Baptist congregation at Cork do make mention of this church in 1653 so we can accurately date the founding to the second half of 1653. Records from this church indicate a SHEPPARD presence while the records of its daughter congregation, the Cohansey Baptist Church in Bridgeton, New Jersey, confirm a very significant involvement. Now this is somewhat puzzling when one considers the difficulty of travel in mid-17th century Ireland – Clough Keating was more than a forty mile trip while the closest church was in Clonmel (the county seat) and even the congregation in Waterford, with its older Baptist Church, was less than half that distance. More research needs to be done but a SHEPPARD involvement with the Clonmel or Waterford congregations may be found.



In our time and place, it seems peculiar that religious divisions within Protestantism could be the root of so much dissension – is it *really* that important if one is Presbyterian, another a Baptist, a third a Lutheran? In England it was – for their KING was also the Head of the Church of England – the *Anglican Pope* if you will. And it was up to the King and Parliament to determine the form

the Anglican Church would take. Before the English Civil Wars of the mid-17th century, the Church of England (a creation of HENRY VIII) had adopted much of the Scottish Presbyterian forms (in part due to the large number of Presbyterian M.P.s after the Scots Parliament was forcibly merged with that of England); these forms were based on Roman Catholicism but to many English, they were too *Popish*, too *Roman Catholic* to be allowed, mimicking the Pope and his Church is just one tiny step away from adopting the Pope and his Church which they were all too aware of in England. In some sort of Divine Retribution (if you place stock in such a thing), it would be two Scottish imports that caused so many headaches (figuratively *and* literally speaking) throughout the realm – religion & monarch. When England forced the Scottish Parliament to disband, they hadn't banked on the number of Scottish M.P.'s in the newly formed British Parliament. These Tea Party *wanna-be*'s were able to hold Parliament hostage until their hair-brained ideas were agreed to such as the adoption of the Church of Scotland's form of service which closely mirrored that of the Roman Catholic Mass. The reigning monarch was the first Scot to sit on the English throne, JAMES VI STUART. He was no friend of Protestantism; he actually leaned towards Roman Catholicism which always enjoyed more support in Scotland, if only to torment England (where you were fined and imprisoned into bankruptcy just for attending Mass and executed if you were the one saying that Mass). His mother MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS was sloppily beheaded by JAMES' predecessor, and last of the TUDOR monarchs, ELIZABETH I on trumped-up charges of plotting with the Vatican to overthrow the English government. Luckily, for England, JAMES didn't like his mother very much and lost little sleep over her lost head (which only came with the 3rd swing of the axe by an executioner with a dull brain and a duller axe. The English authorities had taken him out to the local pubs the night before to insure a hang-over and hoped that hang-over made his aim poor; it did.) After his 1st blow scalped the lower part of her skull she was heard to murmur *Sweet Jesus!*

The KING *personally* authorized what was to be included in the Book of Common Prayer as well as what rites could be performed by his Churches of England and of Scotland – with Parliament's approval. The Civil Wars brought the military to power and the military leaders brought with them a strong Baptist presence which was reversed upon the 1660 Restoration. Imagine the shock of going to your church one Sunday and finding in place of the fine tapestries, marble statues, the ornate crucifix, the resounding chants, the elaborate rituals and a preacher in rich vestments you were greeted with plain white walls decorated with a single, unadorned cross, no music or choir and a pastor dressed in plain white reciting previously-unheard prayers from an unknown book and dryly lecturing the congregation! The most important point to remember is that the Anglican Church was, basically, a state department. An Englishman had to be loyal to the KING which meant they had to be loyal to the KING's Anglican Church, whatever its form. How could a person reject one without rejecting the other? At least that is how the problem was seen in 17th century England – herein lays the basis for our separation of church and state. From these discussions and altercations were born the Puritans and the Pilgrims who fled to their Promised Land in the New England colonies to practice *their* type of religion unfettered – and force everyone else to do well with more violence and prejudice than that which they had ever experienced in Merry Old England..... *The persecuted became the persecutors.*

Grover



Chesham: The primary industries in the 17th century and earlier were flour production, woodworking and weaving of wool. Baptist history records the Chesham, Tring and Berkhamsted Baptist congregations may date to 1640. A church building was in Berkhamsted no later than 1660 while available records place one on Broadway in Chesham in 1712. The Chesham church may have used the name General Baptist Chapel and today, its successor church, Broadway Baptist, still serves the Baptist community from the same location today.

Buckinghamshire: is northwest of, and borders Greater London with our family coming from the Chiltern district in the southeast, placing them about 35 miles from the city itself; close by today's standards but not-so-close in the 17th century.

Husband: **JEAMES GROVER¹**

Born: Circa 1524 Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Married: 9 February 1550 Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Died: October 1552 Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Buried: Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England

Wife: **ALICE CLAATER**

Born:
Died:
Buried:

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) JAMES GROVER	1552	CHESHAM, BUCKINGHAMSHIRE, ENGLAND

JEAMES GROVER was buried on 31 October 1552 in Chesham is the only *factoid* unearthed about this family to dat.

Issue:

1) **JAMES GROVER**: married **JOAN**. *Their story continues on the following page.*

¹ The information contained herein has been obtained solely by the research performed by other genealogists and posted on the internet. None of the presented information has been verified by this author.

Husband:	JAMES GROVER	
Born:	1552/53	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Married:	Circa 1579	
Died:	January 1614/15	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Buried:	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England	
Father:	JEAMES GROVER (1524 – October 1552)	
Mother:	ALICE CLAATER	
Wife:	JOAN	
Born:	Circa 1584	
Died:		
Buried:		
<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) JAMES GROVER	1581	CHESHAM, BUCKINGHAMSHIRE, ENGLAND
2) MATTHEW GROVER	May 1584	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England

JAMES was christened on 8 January 1552/1553 in Chesham. His occupation was that of a weaver. He was buried on 7 January 1614/1615 in Chesham.

ISSUE:

- 1) **JAMES GROVER:** married **ANNE EAMES**. *Their story continues on the following page.*
- 2) MATTHEW GROVER: christened on 24 May 1584 in Chesham.

Husband:	JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR	
Born:	1581	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Married:	24 April 1606	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Died:		
Buried:	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England	
Father:	JAMES GROVER (c1553 – 7 January 1615)	
Mother:	JOAN	
Wife:	ANNE EAMES	
Born:	Circa 1584	
Died:		
Buried:		
ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) JAMES GROVER, III	November 1607	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
2) HANNAH GROVER	circa 1625	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
According to the Chesham Parish Register: JAMES, son of JAMES GROVER, married ANNE EAMES on 24 April 1605. Their son JAMES was baptized on 8 November 1607. JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR died on 7 January 1616. ²		
ANNE was a servant to MISTER ANTHONY SAWREY before they married. JAMES occupation is given as a weaver when he married and a glover when his son was baptized. With both professions he may have been required to belong to a guild. Glovers were members of the leather guild.		
There is some confusion surrounding this couple as another JAMES GROVER was born around 11 July 1621 in Chesham to JOHN GROVER and MARTHA MONK. Establishing which JAMES is our direct ancestor has been problematic.		
Records from the area confirm that both surnames were in town in the 17 th century and in the late 18 th /early 19 th centuries, one father-and-son GROVERS were brewers.		
The CHEESEMAN family may come from the same town but that surname has been elusive; the closest spelling was <i>CHERSLEY</i> in nearby Amersham.		
ISSUE:		
1) JAMES GROVER, III :	married REBECCA CHEESEMAN . <i>Their story continues on the following page.</i>	
2) HANNAH GROVER :	married WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE around 1656 in Gravesend. <i>Their story continues on page 126 in CHAPTER 5: LAWRENCE.</i>	

² Al Rosenfield, Date: May 11, 1999 at 07:52:10; In Reply to: Re: Grover, James, Chesham (UK) by Donald Grover

Husband: **JAMES GROVER, III**

Born:	November 1607	Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England
Married:	circa 1647	<i>Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England</i>
Died:	December 1685	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs, Monmouth County	

Father:	JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR (1581 -)
Mother:	ANNE EAMES (circa 1584 -)

Wife: **REBECCA CHEESEMAN**

Born:	circa 1628	<i>Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England</i>
Died:	January – October 1686	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs, Monmouth County	
Father:	WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, JUNIOR	
Mother:	CHARITY	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) JOHN GROVER	circa 1648	<i>Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England</i>
2) JOSIAH GROVER	circa 1649	<i>Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England</i>
3) JAMES GROVER, IV	circa 1651	Gravesend, New Netherland
4) JOSEPH GROVER	1653	GRAVESEND, NEW NETHERLAND
5) ABIGAIL GROVER	27 September 1654	Gravesend, New Netherland
6) SAFETY GROVER	1658	GRAVESEND, NEW NETHERLAND
7) HANNAH GROVER	circa 1660	Gravesend, New Netherland

Many pages have been written regarding JAMES and REBECCA GROVER, most concern themselves with the identity of REBECCA – was she a CHEESEMAN or not? Others dispute the parentage of JAMES. It is not the purpose of this work to delve into those arguments as this author believes there are sufficient facts that warrant the statements contained herein (and insufficient facts to support any alternative version). However, a brief description of the facts will allow the reader the basis for what is contained in these pages. Much of the substance of the arguments is not included as it is not germane to the topic at hand: the life of JAMES and REBECCA GROVER. After reviewing the arguments, the information presented has the most credence such as: substantiating evidence, or the lack thereof; the correlation of ages (simple math eliminates many choices as in the case of the father dying, yet continuing to father children for another 4 years!); the inherent logic of the argument (is it *logical* to argue that a man in his late 40s marries for the first time, starts a family and is still fathering children at 60+ years? Yes, such a scenario is *possible* but definitely *not probable*.) While many writers and researchers use a keen eye and keener brain before they spread errors, far too many who do not rightfully belong to either category blindly repeat others past errors or, worse, make up a fantasy but present it as fact. The extraordinary is just that – not ordinary! And now, back to our story.

ENGLAND – 17TH CENTURY

JAMES GROVER, son of JAMES and ANNE, was christened on the 8th of November 1607 in Chesham. There have been four sets of parents offered: (1) JOHN GROVER, married to MARTHA MONK, who was born 20 June 1596; (2) LAZARUS GROVER who married GODS GRACE KING in

1611; (3) JAMES GROVER who was born in 1552 and married to JOAN; or (4) THOMAS GROVER. Three of these are easily dismissed: (1) JOHN GROVER was 11 years old when JAMES was christened; (2) LAZARUS GROVER married 4 years *after* JAMES was born; and (3) JAMES GROVER born in 1552 was the *grandfather* of this JAMES, not his *father*. The last, (4) THOMAS GROVER is possible, but as no one has produced any evidence documenting that such a person even existed, (4) can be dismissed. Lest we forget – the baptismal register of Chesham names JAMES' parents as JAMES and ANNE – at least according to the published transcriptions. The logical choice concurs with the registers and intelligent choice dismisses (1) through (4). JAMES was the third male in direct patrilineal succession to bear that given name, fourth if one considers that his great-grandfather "JEAMES" was the first "JAMES."

At 40 years old he married the 19 year old REBECCA. The case for REBECCA being the daughter of WILLIAM CHEESEMAN carries more weight than any of the others put forth; however she was the daughter of WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, JUNIOR and CHARITY and not WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, SENIOR and MARTHA DORSETT as previously believed. REBECCA CHEESEMAN could not have been born in Gravesend as it did not exist when she was born. The surnames GROVER and CHEESEMAN do not appear among the original 28 patentees but James Grover is named when the town was expanded to 40 lots the following year.

MASSACHUSETTS & NEW YORK

The next we hear of JAMES, it is 1643 and he an apprentice in the Massachusetts Bay Colony at Lynn (Essex County). JAMES came to America as an indentured servant of MATHEW BANCKE. BANCKE recouped his costs and then some when JAMES HUBBARD took him on as an apprentice in an unspecified trade. JAMES wanted to learn carpentry and to that end, had himself re-apprenticed to EDWARD TOMLINS for that express reason, paying HUBBARD £8 to be released from their contract. Apprenticeships typically lasted 3 years to pay off the costs of being transported to the colonies. WILLIAM NELSON's is wrong in claiming *JAMES belonged to the seafaring GROVER family of Gloucester*.

Lynn was home to a large Anabaptist community under the LADY DEBORAH MOODY that included JAMES GROVER and JAMES HUBBARD. LADY MOODY was banished from the colony on 24 June 1643 and many of the Anabaptists fled. Their destination was the Dutch New Netherland colony as recorded in the journal of Governor John Winthrop in July. They made way for the English settlement called Hopton but found it deserted, the residents having taken refuge in Fort Amsterdam during *Kieft's War*. By 1643 the areas only residents had been at the deserted Hopton plus a scattering of farms – including *Turk's Plantation* owned by ANTHONY JANSEN VAN SALÉE. LADY MOODY asked for, and received, a patent in the summer of 1643 for an English settlement on Long Island from the DIRECTOR-GENERAL of the New Netherland colony, WILLEM KIEFT. This first patent is only known from being referenced in later documents. The first extant charter for Gravesend is dated 19 December 1645; it contains the names of the original 28 land holders which includes LADY DEBORAH MOODY, her son SIR HENRY MOODY, ENSIGN GEORGE BAXTER and SERGEANT JAMES HUBBARD. The town proper was laid out with 28 lots but, possibly due to high demand, was reconfigured in 1646 into four quadrants of ten lots each with a total of 28 lots against the 7' high palisade that enclosed the town and 12 lots inside. Two roads bisected the town: the north-south Gravesend Road (now McDonald Avenue) and the east-west Gravesend Neck Road. That JAMES appears only after the number of lots has increased is indicative of the demand. Each of the 4 blocks had a portion set aside for the common good: town hall, cemetery, school and eventually a church. JAMES was granted 20 acres plus lot #20 with a house on 20 February 1646 (this had been lot # 18 in the 1645 division). Each of the 28 peripheral lots included 25 morgens of land immediately adjacent to their town-lot but outside the palisade; the owner was required to erect a

fence at the outside perimeter of their outer lots. Sand dunes and salt marsh made up a significant part of the out lots, especially those closest to the bay. At some point he bought *plantation lot # 6* which was his farmland which he would hold until 1667. He headed back to England in late 1646 or early 1647. Once there, he marries REBECCA CHEESEMAN and starts a family. By the time he returns at the end of 1649, he has 2 children. JAMES' sister HANNAH GROVER accompanied the family to Gravesend. Back just a couple weeks, JAMES was appointed Gravesend's Collector for the Poor for 1650.

As tensions grew between the Dutch rulers and their English subjects, JAMES felt his loyalties fall to England. On 9 March 1654 he, along with JAMES HUBBARD (probably the same person he had been apprenticed to) and GEORGE BAXTER, hoisted the British flag in Gravesend and declared:

that we, as freeborn British subjects, claim and assume to ourselves the laws of our nation and Republic of England over this place, as to our persons and property, in love and harmony, according to the general peace between the two states in Europe and this country.

They sought the protection of the Connecticut or Rhode Island colony but neither was forthcoming. When that attempt failed, GROVER was sent to England via Boston in March 1655 (given the declaration in March 1654, it seems unlikely that they would have waited a whole year before contacting CROMWELL) to present a declaration of allegiance and a petition for protection to OLIVER CROMWELL; hopefully such protection with a powerful backer would give STUYVESANT something to ponder. Their declaration and the attempt to secure English protection constituted acts of treason under Dutch law and all three became "wanted" men. HUBBARD and BAXTER were captured and imprisoned at Fort Amsterdam on Manhattan. JAMES managed to not only escape (which further supports a March 1654 departure for England; if he remained in Gravesend, why was he not arrested and imprisoned as his compatriots?). LADY DEBORAH MOODY successfully appealed to GOVERNOR PETER STUYVESANT for the release of HUBBARD and BAXTER.

Among the British Colonial State Papers is a proposal made by JAMES GROVER on 19 August 1656, for transporting persons from Long Island to Jamaica Island. He was quite possibly a sea captain trading between New England and the West Indies which ties in nicely with the assertion mentioned earlier that he was a seaman. About this time ADMIRALS PENN and VENABLE had obtained Jamaica as a British possession, and CROMWELL, who was much interested in its settlement, encouraged emigration from New England.³

The absence of children's births from September 1654 until 1658 gives credence to the supposition that JAMES spent about three years in England, or, at the least, not in Gravesend. When he left in March 1654, REBECCA was three months pregnant with ABIGAIL. Leaving in March 1654 supplies the reason for JAMES not being arrested; it also explains the August 1656 transport proposal and the available records are quite certain that he was back in Gravesend no later than 24 August 1657. CROMWELL may have sent him to command the British forces in the Spanish West Indies which would explain his extended absence from his wife and children.

In 1657 he grew 6 *morgans* of tobacco in the southeastern part of town, probably on plantation # 6, which was probably the work of his seventeen year old son JOHN; it is not known if this was a portion of the twenty-acre tract bought in 1645. JAMES returned to the colonies in 1657 with a letter from CROMWELL to be read to all English inhabitants of Long Island and then presented to the Magistrates of the Village of Gravesend. They sent it unopened to New Amsterdam. STUYVESANT, suspecting that the English had petitioned CROMWELL for liberation from the Dutch, sent the letter unopened to Amsterdam on the ship *de Waegh*. Assuming that what

³ William Nelson (ed), The New Jersey Coast in Three Centuries, Volume 1 (Lewis Publishing, Co., NY, 1902) pages 153-4.

the letter contained was serious enough to be addressed, GOVERNOR STUYVESANT penned his own letter on 24 August 1657 to the Magistrates:

Honorable, Dear. Faithful, the Schout and Magistrates of the village of Gravesend

We received quite late your information that one JAMES GROVER had come there with a letter from the Lord Protector to the English inhabitants on Long Island. The Indians and English inhabitants outside of our jurisdiction and Government can take and read them to their people, but we are unable to understand how any letters from any foreign Prince or Potentate can be accepted within our Government by subjects under oath and obedience to us. Therefore you are hereby requested, and at the same time authorized to send said JAMES GROVER, with his letters to us in order to exhibit to us in our Council what writing he has for our subjects.

*Awaiting which, after cordial greeting, we shall commend you to God's protection, and remain,
Honorable, Dear, Faithful, Your affectionate friends.*

*The Director and Council of New Netherland.
PETRUS STUYVESANT.*

After leaving the letter, JAMES fled to escape certain imprisonment. It would seem that he brought his family away from Gravesend at this time, possibly settling briefly in Whitehall, Washington County, NY. He remained active on Long Island though and actively sought the support of the English towns in opposing the Dutch and their Mohawk allies in the First Esopus War which began in 1659.

With the growing English threat, many English on Long Island saw this as an opportunity to obtain lands they had been denied by the Dutch. Twenty men stepped forward headed by CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE, boarded a sloop in 1663 and set out for an inspection tour of lands they hoped to purchase or acquire through title from the Indians. CAPTAIN JOHN was born in Yorkshire, England and the older brother of JAMES BOWNE whose son WILLIAM married JAMES and REBECCA's daughter REBECCA in 1704 (see below for their ancestry).⁴ RICHARD STOUT and his wife PENELOPE VANPRINCIS are also connected to the same daughter of JAMES and REBECCA as CAPTAIN JOHN was. RICHARD and PENELOPE'S daughter MARY STOUT was the mother of REBECCA'S husband WILLIAM BOWNE; her husband was JAMES BOWNE, CAPTAIN JOHN'S younger brother. Across the Bay they sailed up the Raritan River, back along the northern shores of Monmouth and into the mouths of the Matawan, Waycake, and Coopers Creeks, landing now and again to scout out the land. Finally, they camped on Sandy Hook, where they explored both arms of the Shrewsbury River. The movement of so large a group of Englishmen caught the attention of the ever-suspicious Dutch.

Alarmed by this English move, on 6 December 1663, STUYVESANT dispatched an armed force of 10 soldiers, 2 sailors, and 4 officials of the government, on the *Company yacht*, to intercede in any illegal sale of lands without the blessing of the Company. The next day, at the mouth of the Raritan River, they heard from the natives that 19 Englishmen had gone up the Raritan the day before. If they went up the Raritan, it is not recorded; the Dutch were at Sandy Hook on 10 December where they were able to see the Englishmen standing under arms. The Dutch first shadowed the English and both groups were hit by a storm. After that blew over, the Dutch intercepted the Englishmen who were without arms at this point. The Dutch later named those encountered: WILLIAM GOULDING, RANDALL HUET, DERRICK (RICHARD) STOUT, JAMES HUBBARD, JAMES GROVER, THOMAS WHITLOCK, SERGEANT RICHARD GIBBONS, JOHN RUCKMAN, SAM SPICER, a man named KREUPELBOOS, one from Flushing, two from Jamaica, and some others they did not know. By the

⁴Red Bank Register, 19 February 1908, p. 3, column 1.

Dutch account the *schout* CHARLES MORGAN approached CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE and asked what business they had there.

BOWNE: We came to trade.

Dutch: *Why are you come in such numbers if you only come to trade?*

BOWNE: The savages are rascals and cannot be trusted therefore we are in such numbers.

Dutch: *We heard you had come to buy land from the savages.*

BOWNE: We only go to look at it.

Dutch: *They should not undertake to buy any land from the savages as it has been mostly been bought from the Dutch already.*

BOWNE: Under what government do you consider us to be?

Dutch: *(no reply)*

BOWNE: Why may we not go to look for land just as well as you do?

Dutch: *You must not undertake to buy land from the savages unless you have proper permission from the Director-General and Council.*

The Dutch force retreated to Manhattan, and the Englishmen continued since they were a scouting party and were not in a position to make any purchases just yet.

New Netherlands was lost to the English the following year but JAMES GROVER and some others *jumped the gun* and headed back in 1663 to pick out sites for the towns, make contact with the natives to inform them of their desire to purchase land, start the rudimentary steps of road building and probably pick the site for their own home and start framing it out. One of the first tasks of the new settlers was to clear and upgrade the paths and pick the locations of the 3 towns: Middletown, Shrewsbury and Portland Point. The settling of New Jersey was resurrected as soon as hints of the Dutch overthrow were heard. They immediately set out to settle Middletown, Shrewsbury and Portland Point as well as a scattering of plantations. In the spring or early summer of 1664, CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE, RICHARD STOUT, JAMES GROVER and RICHARD GIBBONS located themselves more-or-less permanently a few miles west of Middletown village and began to erect houses for shelter and protection of their families which were moved in as soon as the buildings were completed.

JAMES and REBECCA's lands extended south from Middletown towards Shrewsbury over land where iron would be found, and west of Middletown along the Hopp River. He was also helping with the building of the only Baptist Church between Philadelphia and New York. This *suburb* of Middletown on the Hopp River was the center for the Baptist community and was called Baptisstown at first.⁵

THOMAS WHITLOCK from the 1st scouting party located here as did WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JOHN BROWNE and many others. The name changed in the early 1700s to Freehold (the Freehold we know was Monmouth Courthouse at the time) and finally Holmdel. The appointed English Governor of New York (which extended to the Delaware River), RICHARD NICOLLS, wasted no time in granting permission for the Gravesend men and others to settle the lands located across the narrows in Monmouth:

Upon the request of WM GOULDING, JAMES GROVER and JOHN BOWNE [BOWNE], on behalf of them and their associates, I do hereby authorize them to treat and conclude with the several sachems of the Nevisans or any others concerned about the purchase of a parcel of land lying and being on the maine, extending from Changoranis, near the mouth of the Raritan River, unto Pontobecke. For the doing whereof this shall be their warrant.

Given under my hand at Fort James, in New York, on Manhattan Island,

the 17th day of October 1664.

R. NICOLLS

⁵ Thomas S Griffiths, A History of Baptists in New Jersey (Bar Press Publishing Company: Hightstown, NJ; 1904) p.15.

EAST JERSEY PATENTEE & PROPERTY OWNER

JAMES was one of the pioneer settlers of Monmouth County – he used SENIOR to identify him rather than his son in these records despite being the third in line with this name. At least nine of the original patentees that moved to Middletown Township in the Navesinks were from Gravesend: JAMES GROVER; THOMAS WHITLOCK; WALTER WALL; JOHN TILTON, JUNIOR; SAMUEL SPICER; JOHN RUCKMAN, JUNIOR; JOHN BOWNE; WILLIAM GOULDING and RICHARD STOUT. (There were probably others that moved to Shrewsbury Township). The majority of pioneer settlers hailed from Newport, Rhode Island, as did the money, where the activities of the Rhode Island Monmouth Association ran an effective promotional campaign that was heard throughout all of New England. The English settlers from Long Island, mainly Gravesend, Middleburgh and Hempstead, accounted for the strong and interrelated minority. A total of 60 patentees are identified as being from Rhode Island and Long Island; of this number, 39 came from Rhode Island and 21 from Long Island. Investors shared a similar breakdown, twice the amount of money to cover the start-up costs of the new venture came from Rhode Island when compared to Long Island. Long Islanders provided the actual manpower to scout the territory and negotiate with the natives for purchasing the land. Once everything was in place, they approached the Governor for a patent.

JAMES GROVER continued to appear in Gravesend land records for a couple years; he was one of several to receive *rights to a tract* from 8 Native American sachems on 5 June 1665. JAMES was 1 of 7 named buyers to which was added the unnamed *rest of the company*.⁶ This may be the date of recording the document with the actual document being dated much earlier. JAMES GROVER sold his Gravesend farm, plantation lot #6, to THOMAS DELAVALL on 21 March 1667. Somewhat ironically, another Baptisstown resident from Gravesend, THOMAS WHITLOCK, on 11 April 1670 bought from NICHOLAS STILLWELL lot 29 in Gravesend. This was the same lot that had changed hands between NICHOLAS STILLWELL and our ancestor ANTHONY JANSEN VAN SALÉE in the 1640s.

In 1667 or 1668 a list of inhabitants was drawn up because each eligible resident living in Monmouth when the 1665 Patent was three years old became eligible for the additional 120 acres, 240 for husband and wife, grants. JAMES appears on this list as does his son JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR which he received as lot number 25.⁷

In 1669 JAMES was one of four *Patentees* (RICHARD STOUT, JOHN BOUND and RICHARD GIBBONS were the other three) caught up in a dispute with the local tribe. It seems that RICHARD HARTSHORNE occupied a building that had not been purchased from the Native tribes. The Patentees informed him that it was considered a trading house only but they agreed to buy the land and structure. The transaction was delayed and HARTSHORNE was repeatedly threatened by the tribesmen to either buy the property or vacate otherwise they would kill his cattle, burn his hay and turn him by force. Fed up, HARTSHORNE went to Hempstead and bought out WILLIAM GOULDER'S share and returned to *Wake-cake* where he bought the land from the tribe and thus becoming a Patentee. This transaction was witnessed by JAMES GROVER, RICHARD STOUT and SAMUEL SPICER who were then at *Wake-cake* in Middletown [referring either to *Wakake Creek* near Holmdel or to *Waackaack port* where the *Waackaack Creek* drains into Raritan Bay northwest of Keansburg].⁸

A second partitioning of meadowland got underway along Wakake Creek when 35 lots were ordered to be laid out; the 36th lot had already been reserved for JAMES on the *eastward side of Shoal*

⁶ Secretary of State, Albany, NY, Deeds, *Liber 3*, page 5.

⁷ Edwin Salter, *A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties*, (Bayonne, NJ: F. Gardner & Son, Publishers; 1890)

⁸ Samuel Smith, *History of the Colony of Nova-Cæsaria, or New Jersey*, (James Parker: Burlington, NJ; 1765) p.63

Harbor Creek and adjacent to his field lot #16. The courtesy of drawing lots first was granted to several people with JAMES being 3rd to draw, due to some defect of the Field lot.

JAMES continued to act for the investors as shown by a deed of 24 August 1674, in which JOHN BOWNE, RICHARD HARTSHORNE, and JAMES GROVER gave sundry species of trading goods to MATAPPEAS, TAWAPUNG, and SEAPECKNE, CHIEF SACHEMS OF TOPONEMESE, for a tract of land, size unspecified, on Navesink River.⁹ This tract may be one-and-the-same referenced in a subsequent modification to the *Monmouth Patent* in which the *pretended patentees who laid out money in purchasing land from the Indians shall have in consideration thereof five hundred acres of land* which was dated 31 July 1674.¹⁰ This wasn't a modification but an attempt by the Proprietors, using their appointed Governor, GAWIN LAWRY, and Sheriff, ROBERT HAMILTON, to force the Monmouth patentees to pay rent on the property they held before the Proprietors ever took possession. The 500 acres was supposedly to compensate the Patentees for their financial outlay but the Proprietors used them to prove the Patentees had voluntarily agreed to relinquish their rights as they agreed to pay the quit rents on this 500 acres, they were responsible to pay quit rents on all property.

Recorded in *Liber 1* of East Jersey deeds is the following: on 30 June 1676, GOVERNOR CARTERET granted to JAMES GROVER of Midleton, County of Midleton & Shrewsbury a patent totaling 561 acres: a 330 acre tract called *Grover's Inheritance*, bounded on the east and south by the *Swimming River*, in Middletown Township; a 200 acre triangular tract called *Grover's Addition* on Ramanesse Creek in Middletown (also called *Hopp River, Brook, Creek or Crique*, which runs a north-south course between Holmdel and Middletown before entering the *Swimming River* just outside of Tinton Falls); 25 acres of meadow in a triangular tract on Navesink Bay; and 6 acres of swamp land at the head of *Jumping River* (just north of Tinton Falls). The "annual rent" or illegal *quit-rent* on all four tracts was one halfpenny per acre. The Warrant for the Survey of 500 acres plus meadow was issued 31 May 1676 and JAMES GROVER recorded the Survey of 560 acres in 2 parcels in Middletown on 23 June 1676. This was the tract granted by the Proprietors for compensation for his outlay as one of the original Patentees. They issued a 2nd Warrant on the same day, 31 May, to Survey an additional 400 acres with the same reason stated.¹¹ The original of the map on the following page dates to 1676. In this enlarged and detailed section, I have highlighted *Grover's Inheritance* and *Grover's Addition* in Middletown Township, plus *New Shrewsbury* (Tinton Falls) in Shrewsbury Township with his forge, storehouse and residence clearly identified. He transferred land in Middletown to Richard Hartshorne which was recorded on 2 March 1677.¹²

Almost exactly two years later GOVERNOR CARTERET again made two grants to JAMES GROVER of Midleton: on 12 June 1677 he received a patent for 190 acres in 6 parcels and between 12 May and 20 June he received a Warrant for Survey and had the Survey done for 517 acres, known as *Grover's New Invention*, in 5 parcels in Middletown. With this latest addition, his property holdings exceeded 1,000 acres. On 5 December 1685 JAMES gave the tracts named *Grover's Inheritance* and *Grover's Addition* plus the 6 acres of swampland, totaling 536 acres (almost one-half of all his property) to his son JOSEPH.¹³ 5 days later a Survey of 200 acres was returned for 2 other parcels of land. On 17 July 1697 his purchase of land in Middletown from John Stout was recorded.¹⁴

Recorded on 12 June 1714 is a land record in which JAMES GROVER of Middletown transfers to GAVEN DRUMMOND of Loch Harbor, Shrewsbury for a competent

⁹Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book 1, p 68; cited by Roberts, 1955, 168; Bk I, p 271.

¹⁰Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, *Old Times in Old Monmouth*, (Freehold, NJ) 1887 (reprinted Genealogical Publishing Co., Baltimore, 1980) page 3.

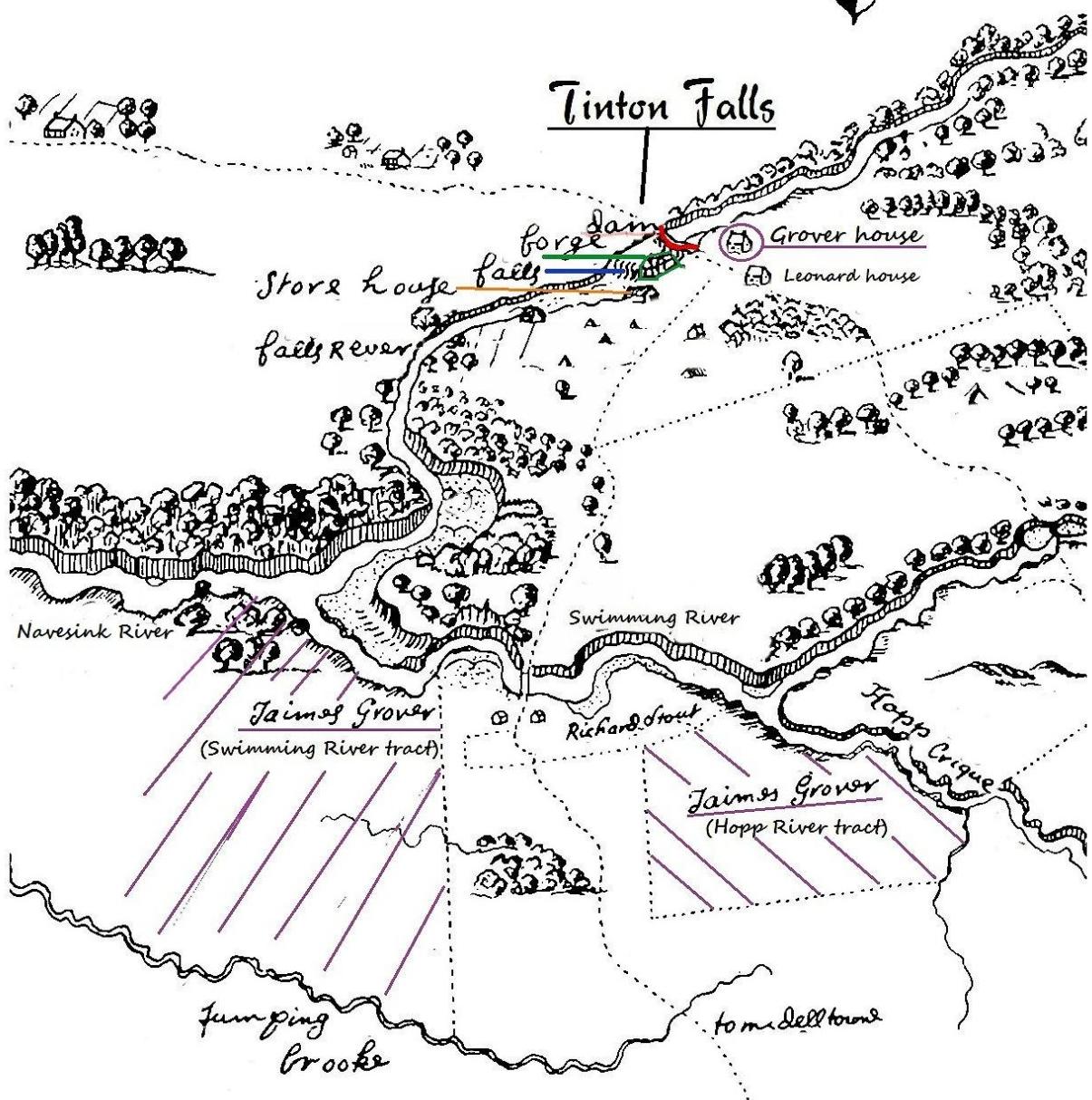
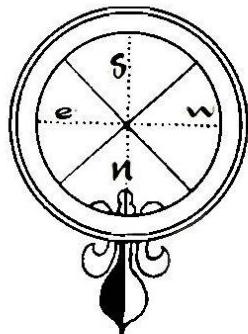
¹¹op.cit., Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2, pp. 368, 374, 387-8, 391, 396; and Proprietary Deed Bk I, p 153.

¹²Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book I, p 234.

¹³Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book 3, page 124; cited in NJA[1], 21, 102; also Bk I, p 173.

¹⁴Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book I, p 346.

Shrewsbury Township



1676, New Shrewsbury Townworks

sum of money four items: one-half of one-twelfth of one-forty-eighth of the Province of East New Jersey; the right to 280 acres in Right of the Second and Third Dividend and 46 acres of land and meadow, except reserving to JAMES GROVER, the Rights of rents on 223 acres (see below); right to 290 acres to be taken up in Right of the Second and Third Dividend of shares of property; and 46 acres land and meadow at Barnegat (a corruption of the Dutch Barendegat meaning broken waters, a reference to the tumultuous waters found at the inlet), conveyed by deed of THOMAS COOPER, 5 February 1706 and released to him and fellow purchasers by deed of 2 October 1768.

Within this land record is the statement that JAMES GROVER was seized of one-half of one-twelfth of one-forty-eighth and Rights of rents on 233 acres.¹⁵

One of his Middletown properties embraces the neighborhood known today as the Locust Historic District, just south of Atlantic Highlands. The District encompasses the point of land between Claypit Creek and the Navesink River and runs to the end of Locust Point Road, where it turns onto the Navesink River Road, then continues west along Navesink River Road for 1.2 miles.

BUSINESS INTERESTS: TAVERN, CORN AND IRON MILLS AND MILLWRIGHT

Besides owning large tracts of land, JAMES was also a businessman. The year 1667 saw the licensing of the third *ordinary* or tavern to serve *ardent spirits* in the Province for one year to none other than JAMES GROVER on the 10th of July¹⁶:

*These are to permit and Lycence JAMES GROVER "of Navesinck" to keep an ordinary or victualing howse for the Entertainement and Acomodation of all strangers and passengers With Lodging and provisions, and to retaile all manner of strong drink and liquors to all persons Whatsoever Excepting the Indians, Allwayes provided that he keeps good orders in his howse, and not Exceed the rates that are or shall be appointed . . .*¹⁷

At the time keepers of public house were forbidden to allow tippling on the Lord's Day *except for necessary refreshment*. Liquor was served in large amounts at funerals and to a lesser-degree at weddings, both usually held on Sundays. As time passed Sundays themselves became reason for serving liquor which became too popular – legislation was passed in the 1680s to curtail this weekly celebration.

At the end of 1669 JAMES GROVER became Middletown's miller. Township official's had designated land and built the mill in early 1668. They secured the services of ROBERT JONES of New York to run the mill and on 22 July 1668 he was granted town lot # 33 together with 10 acres of upland and the water stream where the mill was located. He agreed to maintain the mill and all storehouses, dams &c associated with it. The conveyance contained a provision that all the land must be kept with the mill and no part or parcel could be sold separately. An agreement was made before the end of the months; details are in the LAWRENCE section (CHAPTER 5) as WILLIAM LAWRENCE was one of the village's negotiators. JONES he gave up the operation in early 1669 and the township took over its operation until JAMES filled the role of miller. JAMES surrendered Middletown village lot number 16 to the town on 25 December 1669 in exchange for lot 33 on which the mill was situated. The lot was 30 acres of *upland* on the south side of the mill stream that fed into Swimming River, *70 rods by the Runne and so in breadth up into the woods: together with the quantity of two acres of low ground lying upon the northward side of the mill pond.* The Hopp River was also called Mill River at this time and if that is the location of the mill it was on *Grover's Addition*; it was later known

¹⁵ Richard S. Hutchinson, East NJ Land Records, 1715 – 1722, Books A2 & B2 (Lewis, DE: Colonial Roots, 2007) p 68/168.

¹⁶ op.cit. Salter, *History of for East Jersey Records Liber No. 3*

¹⁷ Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book 3, page 11 (?)

as Irwin's Mill and eventually burnt down. The land then became part of the Old Cherry Tree farm. For his part JAMES pledged that he, and his heirs, would:

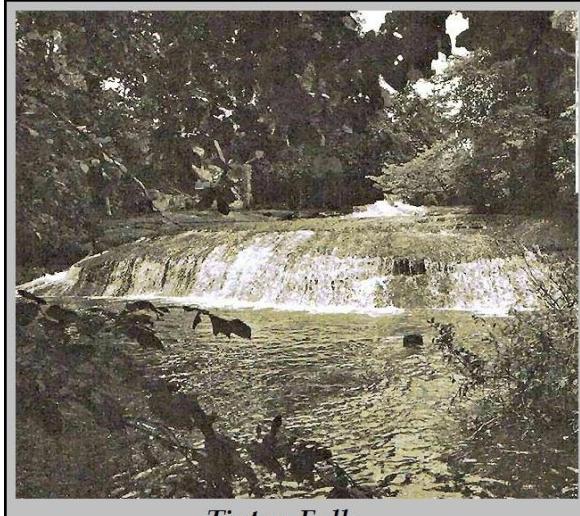
1. maintain the mill in good repair to grind the *corn** for Milltown inhabitants;
2. to grind the town *corn** before any from other towns if asked;
3. to grind the towns *corn** "for the twelfe bushel: tolle:"
4. to make as good meal for the towns people as is usually made within this province or within the government of New York, provided the *corn** is of good enough condition to make good meal and there is enough water to run the mill;
5. to keep the additional land and not dispose of any part or parcel;
6. to be bound, him and his heirs, to keep these conditions.¹⁸

(**corn* was used to mean all grains)

JAMES discovered iron ore along the *Falls River* (later Iron Mill River and now Pine Brook) on his quickly expanding land holdings in Shrewsbury Township¹⁹ and:

*[he] realized that the abundant local bog iron, combined with forests to supply wood for charcoal and the water power of the falls, added up to an opportunity for him.*²⁰

He had control of the land much earlier than the deed dated 24 August 1674 between the Toponemese sachems MATAPEAS, TAWAPUNG and SEAPECKNE and JAMES GROVER, JOHN BOWNE and RICHARD HARTSHORNE. JAMES built a dam upstream from the actual falls, which were about 30' high at the time, and the iron mill downstream. By the end of 1669 he had brought in JAMES and HENRY LEONARD to build the first furnace in the province. They located the *single-hammer forge* near what is now the west end of the bridge at Tinton Falls with an adjacent storehouse. This forge would take the pig iron product of a blast furnace, which had limited usefulness, and refine it more to be used for just about any iron product. This meant that the bog iron dug from the ground had to be sent elsewhere for smelting and then returned for refining. The LEONARD'S had previously built the ironworks at Jamestown, VA and Taunton, MA (1652). JAMES also built a grain mill on the opposite bank of the river for Shrewsbury, much as Middletown had done for him. Shrewsbury secured the services of BARTHOLOMEW APPLEGATE as miller. The top of the dam served as a roadway that not only connected the mills, but joined the road to Shrewsbury with the road to Middletown village. JAMES built his house overlooking the pond created by the dam further



Tinton Falls

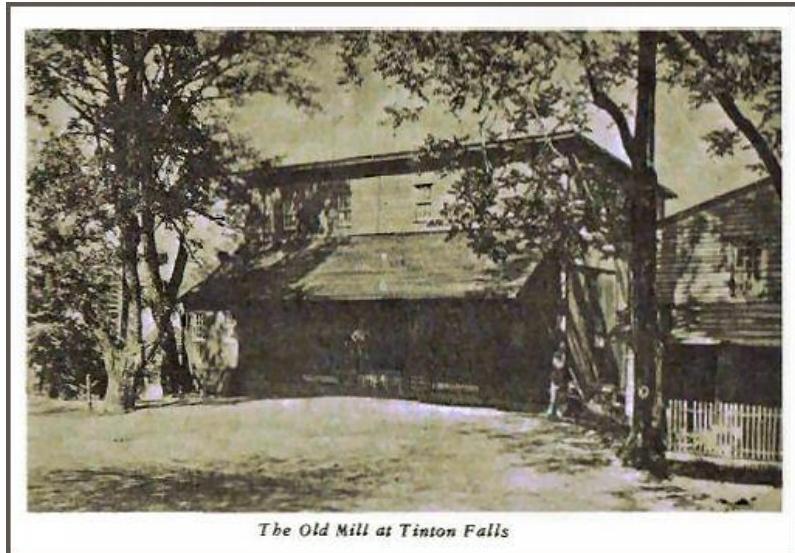
¹⁸ Middletown (NJ) Town Book extraction in Stillwell, J. E. Historical and Genealogical Miscellany: Early Settlers of New Jersey and their Descendants. New York: private print, 1903-16 (1906-07, V2, p.150 ff); (and) *supra* Nelson, History of the New Jersey Coast, Volume 2, pages 156-7 provide a thorough and interesting account of this matter.

¹⁹ *op.cit.* Ellis, History of Monmouth County, page 543.

²⁰ Stacey Slowinsky (Chair, Historic Preservation Commission, Monmouth County Archives) "Tinton Falls Historical Narrative," in Town by Town: Impressions of Monmouth County (Freehold: Office of the Monmouth County Clerk, 2002), <http://co.monmouth.nj.us/page.aspx?Id=3028>

up the river on the same side as the forge while the LEONARD'S house was built closer to the forge. GROVER'S ironworks was the central fixture of the community of New Shrewsbury that grew up around the enterprise.²¹ JAMES must have been a quick learner as he was hired by GOVERNOR LOVELACE of New York to build a mill on Staten Island in 1673, thus becoming a millwright. Perhaps one of his mills became *Grover's Mills* where ORSON WELLES Martians landed in *War of the Worlds*.

To obtain the money he needed to build and operate the ironworks, he mortgaged 25% ownership of the business and property to CORNELIUS STEENWYCK of New York in the early 1670s. Needing more capital to finish the construction, JAMES sold 50% of the ironworks to COLONEL LEWIS MORRIS (1601-1691) of Barbados and Morrisiana, NY on 29 December 1675; that deed required James to finish the partially built ironworks. The following year MORRIS obtained title from the East Jersey Proprietors to 3,540 acres lying between *Swimming* and *Falls Rivers* for iron mining purposes; he may have given that venture the name *Tintern* Manor but extant records dating to the earliest years, including the deed, only name it as *Tinton* Manor. New Shrewsbury employed 25 men in 1676 and 75 by 1680; these numbers do not include the 60 to 70 slave laborers. Perhaps related to the ironworks, JAMES filed 5 lawsuits for monies owed on 29 August 1678 (the year is surmised from the pages before and after which have this year) which could indicate just how cash-strapped he was. The



actions were recorded at the Court of Sessions held in Shrewsbury on 3 September with the defendants named as JOHN HORABIN, THOMAS APPLEGATE, DANIEL APPLEGATE, RANDALL HUITT and SAMUEL WLCOX, each suit for a specific amount. The original records are difficult to read but it appears that the mere filing of the lawsuits provided the impetus, as it often does, to settle debts since *withdrawn out of the Court* is found next to 2 of the entries and JAMES was only required to pay court fees for filing 3 suits (even in the listing of the court fees, the year is not legible). The desire to settle may have been caused, in part, by the fact that LIEUTENANT JAMES GROVER is the second-named of the 3 magistrates of the Court and JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR served on the jury! This alone didn't force Horabin to settle whereupon a judgment for the amount requested was entered against him with an order to seize his property, including livestock, not to exceed the value of the amount of the debt.²² On 28 February 1679 MORRIS bought 700 acres of New Shrewsbury from HENRY LEONARD'S son SAMUEL. The growth of the ironworks created problems for the grain mill and APPLEGATE claimed the damages caused by the ironworks forced him to close the mill down. Shrewsbury Township agreed and gave him 200 acres in a different area. On 30 January 1683 APPLEGATE sold the grain mill to MORRIS; it is not known if the mill standing at the location in 1962 incorporated some of the 17th century building or not. The £8680 that had been invested in the

²¹ Tinton Falls Historical Scrapbook (Tinton Falls Bicentennial Committee, 1976)

²² Monmouth County Deed Books A, B & C (scans of original records) pages 93-5, 98?

ironworks by the end of 1683 included a £100 payment to JAMES for unspecified reasons. When STEENWYCK died in 1684, MORRIS bought the New Shrewsbury ironworks mortgage from the estate. COLONEL MORRIS had a majority *interest* since that time. The 25% remaining is believed to have been owned by many people, though not all at the same time. This group originally (1668) included JAMES GROVER; JOHN BOWNE and RICHARD HARTSHORNE. Later owners included the furnace building brothers JAMES and HENRY LEONARD (1670); HENRY'S sons NATHANIEL, THOMAS and SAMUEL LEONARD (who sold to MORRIS in 1679); and RICHARD GARDINER (<1688), a son-in-law of JAMES GROVER. By 1684, MORRIS was considered the *owner* but, in fact, he was not. He *was* the major shareholder with 50% and JAMES owned the next largest share, probably 30 to 35%. The iron furnace JAMES built was of such importance that, with prodding from MORRIS, the Legislature enacted statutes protecting the mill and its attendant industries from undue competition in 1676; these included a 7-year tax exemption, 5 rent-free years, certain military exemptions for workers in times of war, workmen to be free from arrest for debt but not for suit, and extensive land grants and purchases to supply charcoal for iron smelting. JAMES continued his involvement in the running of the ironworks and his expenses included trips to New Haven and New York for purchasing equipment and it is because of the survival of his account that it is known what equipment was installed. GROVER'S *New Shrewsbury Ironworks* was combined with MORRIS' *Tinton Manor* around 1684, becoming *Tinton Iron Works*. The single-hammer forge was enlarged to a *two-hammer finery* (or *refinery*) and *chafery* capable of higher heat and greater refinement. A *blast furnace*, capable of achieving the extremely high temperatures needed for smelting the bog iron into the pig iron used by the *forge*, *finery* and *chafery*, was built some time before 1692 thus eliminating the huge expense of having the bog iron shipped elsewhere to be smelt and then returned. RICHARD GARDINER, mentioned earlier as one of the minority share-holders, was sued by LEWIS MORRIS and his nephew of the same name for money he owed the ironworks in 1688. The suit was probably filed in the Manor's own civil courts (see below). The named defendant would have been his widow HANNAH (GROVER) GARDINER had she not remarried before the suit was filed. As a married woman had no legal standing in courts of the time, the named defendant was her second husband WILLIAM WINTER. WILLIAM made a claim against the estate of RICHARD GARDINER for the cost of the judgment in 1695 which points to the success of the MORRIS lawsuit. Two years later, in 1697, LEWIS MORRIS filed a discharge of all debts owed by RICHARD GARDINER to the ironworks which, if the value of the judgment was sufficient, all debts should have been paid off. As it happens, it would seem that the judgment covered only a portion of the monies owed to the ironworks. Gardiner had earlier been accused of *a salt and battery* in Tinton Manor during February 1679 by William Ashton; the charge was withdrawn during the March 1680 Court of Sessions at Middletown.²³ MORRIS' *Tinton Manor* was a legally recognized manor, complete with its own petty civil court, but not subservient land holdings. The absence of recorded transactions between James and Lewis was a function of the manor as well; such transactions are a part of the Tinton Manor papers and/or the records of the Tinton Iron Works, both held by the Monmouth County Historical Society in Freehold. At its peak, Tinton Manor and the iron works spread over 6,200 acres which provided everything the workers and their families required – food, building materials, clothing, furniture – all made and sold within the manor. The facilities on the property included the forge, blast furnace, the manor house, separate dwellings for the white workmen and barracks-type buildings for most of the 70 black slaves and the gristmills. MORRIS was a supporter of CROMWELL and had forfeited all his land in England upon the 1660 Restoration of the Monarchy under CHARLES II. LEWIS' eponymous nephew became the first Governor of the Royal Province of New Jersey to not also hold the same position in neighboring New York in 1738. When COLONEL MORRIS died in 1691 at his estate in

²³ Monmouth County Deed Books A, B & C (scans of original records) pages 115-7.

Morrisiana, NY, he left the iron works, the Tinton Manor estate, and other property to his nephew, LEWIS MORRIS.²⁴ The output of the forge was always limited and how long it operated is not known exactly but 5 decades is a good guess as its output had *severely decreased* by 1714. However none of the Tinton Manor papers or Tinton Iron Works records dated after 1683, mention *any* iron production or sales through the 1740s. References to the ironworks appear as late as 1844, but these may refer to the forge's location rather than any product. The current address of the old mill is 1205 Sycamore Avenue, Tinton Falls.

CIVIC DUTIES: SURVEYOR, TOWN CLERK, COURT COMMISSIONER AND JUSTICE OF THE PEACE

JAMES served in multiple capacities on a civic level too. He was appointed *Surveyor* of Middletown on 1 December 1667 and on the 31st he was deputed to *survey the land that is to be laid out in lots*; with RICHARD STOUT and JAMES ASHTON to assist him. Navigation and surveying were allied sciences, so the old sea captain of the commonwealth became a land surveyor in the new English settlement of the lands granted to the DUKE OF YORK. It has been written that after the Restoration, JAMES GROVER, as an Anabaptist and after the passage of the *Act of Uniformity*, could not sail a government vessel.²⁵ This statement is incorrect on two counts. First, one who was true to the tenets held by Anabaptists could not hold any civil position as such a position was considered to be *of the world* and true believers belonged to God's kingdom. *Anabaptist* does not connote a religion *per se* but rather a set of ideals of which the first-and-foremost was freedom of religion. Infant baptism was another practice that Anabaptists avoided. The best-known group of Anabaptists today is the Amish. Second, the *Act of Uniformity* (1662) mandated the use of the Common Book of Prayer in Anglican churches. This *Act* was one of four that comprised the *Clarendon Code*. The *Code* was named after the Lord Chancellor at the time, EDWARD HYDE, FIRST EARL OF CLARENDON though he was not a supporter of the four Acts. Likewise, two of the remaining three Acts, the Conformity Act (1664) and the Five-Mile Act (1665) were concerned with the ministers of the Anglican Church. The Corporation Act (1661), the first to be enacted, required that all municipal officers take the Anglican Communion. It was this act that, barring a change in religion from Baptist to Anglican, that could have barred JAMES from being employed by the government as a sea captain. This, in theory, could have extended to the receiving of sailing commissions as a private individual as well. However, as the reader will shortly see, the fact that JAMES was a Baptist did not affect his ability to be appointed to several municipal positions.

Back to surveying the new village of Middletown – the town was sited near the native village of *Chaguasett* or *Choquasett*. The main road, really a cart-way, lies mostly east-to-west with the home lots, ranging from 8 to 12 acres, on both sides. The lots were numbered and assigned but due to the terrain, the surveyed lines often proved impractical and the early deed books are replete with efforts to make sense of the confusion of exceptions and alterations to the original survey. On 9 April 1670 this plan was modified by widening the road to six pole (99 feet) and setting the town limits to encompass one square mile: the mile length of the road and 160 rods (a half mile) either way from the road. More surveys came his way on the 16th of December in the following year when he made an agreement with the Town to lay out the meadows into town lots for one pound of merchantable blade tobacco for each acre. By 1688 all land east of Matawan Creek and Wickatunck had been surveyed and apportioned.

JAMES was Middletown's first *Town Clerk* for a year beginning December 1667. Shortly afterwards the appointed Sheriff started to take resident's property in lieu of quit rent. Laws were

²⁴ Tinton Falls Iron Works Records, 1668-1761; Manuscripts, Monmouth Co Historical Soc, 70 Court St Freehold, 7 June 1980

²⁵ *supra* Nelson, *History of the New Jersey Coast*, Volume 1, pp. 153-4.

quickly enacted, with JAMES taking the lead, on 1 and 4 February 1668 that made it mandatory for all inhabitants to refuse to pay any rent to anyone and to forcibly prevent any person, whether it was the Sheriff, the Governor or the Lords Proprietor, from stealing any property. On 27 February 1668 JAMES was one of the *Inhabitants of Midleton upon Navesink* that subscribed to the *Oath of Allegiance to the King and Fidelity to the Lords Proprietors*, and the only Patentee among the 26 Middletown residents despite his Patent being issued by NICOLLS.²⁶ The May 1668 Government consisted of two houses: the 6-member upper house was appointed by CARTERET and called the *Governor's Council* while the lower house or *Colonial Assembly* had 12 seats, 2 for each of 6 locations. This Assembly had only 10 members as Middletown and Shrewsbury, representing the Monmouth Patent, had the same assemblymen: JAMES GROVER and JOHN BOWNE, but they each had two votes. They were paid 3 shillings per day for these duties. The first meeting of the Provincial Assembly was in Elizabeth Towne and a provincial tax was approved as was a £5 tax on the townships with GROVER and BOWNE'S support. However, the Middleton town meeting, which decided on all public matters by majority vote of the freeholders, repudiated their vote. Their stance was that, in so doing, the Assembly was recognizing CARTERET as Governor which was contrary to the NICOLLS Patent. Furthermore, if their deputies took the requested oath of loyalty, their rights under their patent were forfeited and they would be subject to whatever quitrents CARTERET demanded. This matter would finally be resolved in favor of the Patentees in 1672, or so they thought. CARTERET'S capitulation was the event that caused the DUKE OF YORK to invalidate all of NICOLL'S patents in NJ.²⁷ On 28 October 1668, a declaration was to be sent to the General Assembly protesting that JAMES GROVER and JOHN BOWNE had been illegally chosen Deputies in that notice of the meeting was not published long enough before the meeting for *the Inhabitants being many; and settled neere twenty miles distance* could not be gathered for the vote. This declaration was signed *Witness, JAMES GROVER, Town Clerk* which indicates that, rather than being charged by others for illegal representation, JAMES himself was making such a declaration for unknown reasons. Such reasons may have been to allow protests to any acts of the General Assembly to proceed without the interference of voting cast by JAMES during the Assembly's proceedings. On 4 December 1668, acting as Middletown Town Clerk, he registers several cattle ear marks including those for WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR and JAMES DORSETT.

During 1669 and 1670 JAMES regularly appeared at Court Sessions held at Portland Point where he apparently represented the interests of the *Patentees* as that is how he is listed at the opening of each session beginning 2 November 1669.²⁸ On 5 July 1670 JAMES signs his name as a *patentee* to an account of disbursements submitted by WILLIAM REAPE for reimbursable expenses of £89 07s 0d incurred in the procurement of land at Portland Point indicating his ongoing interest as one of the *patentees*.²⁹ The dispute over quit-rents continued for years. In 1682 or 1683 the Proprietors installed GAWIN LAWRY as Governor with ROBERT HAMILTON installed as Sheriff. LAWRY & HAMILTON cooked up a plan to force the payment of the quit-rents to the Proprietors. The Proprietors "gave" each *patentee* and *associate* 500 acres for their *troubles* when they first came to the area. These deeds, issued under the Proprietary *Concessions and Agreement* included quit-rents. Once the *patentee* had placed themselves under the authority of the Proprietor, it was not possible that they could also be under the authority of the *Monmouth Patent*, ergo, in signing the deed, the *patentee* had forfeited any rights and protections created by that document. It was a deliberately false and spurious interpretation that the Proprietors hoped would be challenged in court, their court.

²⁶ John E. Pomfret, *The Province of East New Jersey: 1609 - 1702* (Princeton Univ Press, NJ; 1962)

²⁷ John E. Pomfret, *Colonial New Jersey – A History* (Charles Scribner's Sons, NY; 1973) pp 28-35

²⁸ Monmouth County Deed Books A, B & C (scans of original records)folios 19 – 37; pages 22 – 40.

²⁹ *op.cit.* Salter, *History of*

Guaranteed to have the judge rule in the Proprietors favor, the patentees challenged the very validity of any such court to exist; they formed a parallel court, asked the question again and found that anyone attempting to hold such a court was a criminal and subject to fines and imprisonment. The local militias of the citizenry were swelling in size to counter any military threat and to enforce their laws. The patentees were justifiably aroused – the Proprietors had already illegally seized and patented over 100,000 acres contained within the *Patent* with no authority to do so – they never held legal title to any land within the *Patent*. These disputes lasted until the Revolutionary War intervened, effectively quashing any chance to obtain legal redress. With independence came the reality of not being able to file claims for damages in local courts and the cost to pursue damages outweighed the anticipated fines, highly unlikely to happen since they had just lost the war.

THE DUTCH RETURN

In May 1673 BOWNE and GROVER petitioned GOVERNOR CARTERET that their patent rights be honored until the Lords Proprietors were consulted but a Dutch intervention delayed the reply. In 1673 the Netherlands obtained the surrender of New York and New Jersey at which time New York became New Orange and Monmouth County became *Achter Coll* once again. The disagreements of 1668 having been forgotten, JAMES GROVER and JOHN BOWNE were elected as *Deputies* on 3 August 1673 pursuant to a summons from New Orange according to the Old Town Book of Middletown Township. Their duty was to present the townships surrender to the *Admirals and Commanders in Chief of the fleet, belonging to the States General and Prince of Orange*. On 14 September 1673 it is recorded that of 60 men in *Middeltowne*, 52 took the Oath of Allegiance to the *High and Mighty Lords, the States-General of the United Provinces, & his serene Highnesse the Prince of Orange* however they are not named. As JAMES had been elected *Deputie* in August, it is logical to assume that he was of the group that did take the Oath. The Dutch tenure was brief, less than a year and it may have been that the lists of inhabitants subscribing to the Oath of Allegiance and reported in September was the instrument of surrender.³⁰ On 8 August 1674, he served as a *Member of the Court* at nearby Portland Point, located near today's Atlantic Highlands.³¹

ENGLISH AGAIN

The English returned and the much-delayed answer to the May 1673 petition was given – *petition denied*. He served as *Justice of the Peace* at the Court of Sessions held in Shrewsbury on 6 September 1676 and at Middletown in 1680.³² On 13 March 1675/6, JOHN BOWNE was the president of the *Commission for the County Court of Middleton* and Shrewsbury with JAMES GROVER and JOSEPH PARKER as associates.³³ Nearing 70-years-old, on 12 March 1677, he was appointed as a *Justice of the Peace* for Shrewsbury and on the same date one year later, he, JOSEPH PARKER, RICHARD GIBBONS, and JONATHAN HOLMES formed the *Commission for the Court* at Middletown and Shrewsbury.³⁴ He was again appointed to the *Court* in 1684.³⁵

³⁰ *op.cit.* Salter and Beekman, Old Times in Old Monmouth, page 227.

³¹ *op.cit.* Virkus, 6:779.

³² *op.cit.* Salter and Beekman, Old Times in Old Monmouth, page 241; and Monmouth County Deed Books A, B & C, page 119.

³³ Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book 3, page 123; cited in NJA[1], 21, 39.

³⁴ Board of Proprietors of the Province of East Jersey, Deeds, Book 3, page 139; cited in NJA[1], 21, 41.

³⁵ *op.cit.* Salter and Beekman, Old Times in Old Monmouth, page 104.

CHURCH FOUNDER AND MILITARY MAN

The Middletown Baptist Church began operating informally in 1667 at the Upper Meeting House a few miles west of Middletown at Baptisstown (Holmdel since 1830) when the area was first inhabited. The Province's first Baptist cemetery is attached to this church with the first burial coming in 1684. The Middletown Baptist Church was formally constituted in 1688 under MINISTER THOMAS KILLINGWORTH and a Lower Meeting House was added at Middletown. The Upper Meeting House continues today as the Holmdel Baptist Church. The Middletown Baptist Church congregation was of the *Particular* or *Calvinistic Baptists*. These Baptists did not believe in infant baptism and held strong convictions that everyone be guaranteed liberty of conscious. Three of the founding members were JAMES GROVER, JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, RICHARD STOUT, JOHN WILSON, WILLIAM LAYTON, JOHN STOUT, WALTER WALL, WILLIAM COMPTON, JOHN COX, JAMES ASHTON, JONATHAN BOWN, JONATHAN HOLMES, JOHN BOWN, OBADIAH HOLMES (SON OF THE BAPTIST MINISTER SOON TO BE IN FENWICK'S COLONY), GEORGE MOUNT, THOMAS WHITLOCK AND JOHN BEECKMAN. WILLIAM NELSON states that *these men came from Rhode Island and Gravesend* when discussing the Baptist church; while it is a well-known fact that the majority of the early inhabitants were from Rhode Island with a large minority from Gravesend; how many were Baptist is harder to determine. Further, the Baptists from Rhode Island may have been followers of OBADIAH HOLMES from Swansea, Massachusetts; the *Particular Baptists* of Middletown may not have shared their buildings with the *General Baptists* under HOLMES which makes the inclusion of the minister's son on the list of founders interesting. There is much disagreement among authors regarding the actual number of Baptists among the original Patentees; POMFRET maintains there were just three while GRIFFITHS states that 18 of the 24 Patentees were Baptist.³⁶

The earliest church building, the Upper Meeting House, was situated a few miles west of Middletown at Baptisstown. The congregation was spread over a large area of what was then Monmouth, extending westerly to Upper Freehold and southerly to Jacobstown. The stated reason for selecting this area is suspect – access to Baptisstown was easier. That is the exact same reason given for selecting the site of Middletown village – it was the most accessible site as three great Native American paths intersected there. Baptisstown is also the place that some authors claim that JAMES and REBECCA GROVER first lived after arriving from New York. Baptisstown became Freehold (when Freehold was Monmouth Courthouse) and was changed to Holmdel in 1830 and the Upper Meeting House became the Holmdel Baptist Church in 1836.

In addition to being a large land-owner, owning and operating several businesses, a church founder, and performing the civic duties described above, he also found time to include the following in his packed life:

- He was repeatedly appointed to the Monmouth County Militia: in December 1663 he is found as 1st Lieutenant of the New Jersey Militia's 1st Company; in 1672 a Commission was granted to JAMES GROVER to be Lieutenant of a foot company in Middletown; LIEUTENANT JAMES GROVER was appointed one of three *Military Commissioners* for Middletown and Shrewsbury on 4 July 1681 – the other two were CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE and ENSIGN JOHN STOUT.³⁷ Given his age of 74 it is tempting to give this appointment to his son JAMES but the fact that one of his colleagues was the same person he had served with in the Assembly

³⁶ Thomas S Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey* (Bar Press Publishing Company: Hightstown, NJ; 1904) page 17.

³⁷ *supra* Nelson, *History of the New Jersey Coast*, Volume II, page 190.

almost two decades earlier it seems that this was indeed our JAMES; and he was being reappointed *Lieutenant* as late as 1683³⁸;

- He was one of seven men chosen to hold the money “received from the township” on 14 December 1667 and his name is found often in the township financial records at this time;
- On 4 January 1669, he recorded his "earmark" for his cattle running at large;
- He was present as a patentee at court held at Portland Point in November and December 1669 and again in July 1670;
- On 14 May 1670, he was one of the appraisers of the personal property of JOHN JOHNSON, of Middletown;
- A meeting of the Patentees and their Associates was held at “JAMES GROVER’S house, at ye mill” on 22 February 1670 at which certain financial matters concerning the patents were to be declared for the record.³⁹ A similar meeting occurred there 15 May 1671.

Marlpit Hall served as the GROVER homestead for several generations. Located at 137 Kings Highway it is site # 1 of the Middletown Village Historic District. It may have been built by JAMES GROVER, SENIOR as its earliest construction dates to 1685; the current owners believe it was his son JAMES who built the original one-and-a-half story house. The earliest part of the structure is seen at the extreme right which was built after the Dutch style homes that covered New Netherland. The large addition on the left was built in 1725. One of the oldest buildings in the state, it keeps company with, and is often confused with, the nearby *Edward Taylor House*, residence of another of our ancestors, EDWARD TAYLOR at the same time (and site #62 of the Middletown Village Historic District). The confusion arises as the TAYLOR family owned *Marlpit Hall* from 1740 when JOHN TAYLOR bought and made substantial improvements to the structure until 1880; further one of the owners was named EDWARD TAYLOR – he bought the property in 1771. The TAYLOR and the GROVER families would unite when JAMES’ granddaughter HANNAH GROVER married EDWARD’S son WILLIAM TAYLOR around 1710. *Marlpit Hall* is now an historic museum, owned and maintained by the Monmouth County Historical Association.⁴⁰



³⁸ op.cit. Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, *Old Times in Old Monmouth*, page 105.

³⁹ op.cit. Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, *Old Times in Old Monmouth*, pages 200-202, 204.

⁴⁰ William Livingston, *The Papers of William Livingston* (Trenton: New Jersey Historical Commission, 1979) vol. 2, pp. 108, discusses The Grover-Taylor House.

Probably the most detailed attempt at documenting the history of the Hall appeared in a local newspaper, the Independent in 2001:⁴¹

Though there is evidence that part of the current structure dates back to 1686, wood-core analysis proved that no section of Marlpit Hall can be traced further back than 1756.

... as "part of a plan to encourage bringing people to the area in 1667, the historical English figure JAMES GROVER SR. had the rights to the 10-acre property conferred upon him by English GOVERNOR RICHARD NICHOLLS as part of the Monmouth Patent. It was found out that in 1686, his son, JAMES GROVER JR., built a one-and-a-half story home on the same Kings Highway property where he lived." There are no remaining records of that house.

After GROVER Jr. died, the house was bought by JOHN WALL in 1715 and by JOHN TAYLOR in 1736. Paperwork on the property was missing for about 20 years, though the next deed holder, through some sort of debt acquisition in the 1750s, was a man named BARNABAS RIDER, according to the association.

RIDER had ownership of what was the then-half-finished home that is now standing because TAYLOR had torn down the original 1686 homestead on the property on which he built a vernacular piece of architecture that reflected a blend of English and Dutch features, one of which was a showy Georgian-style center hall plan.

The original carpenter who started building the house under TAYLOR's ownership did not complete the work, and it was completed by a less-skilled carpenter.

After RIDER died, JOHN TAYLOR's brother EDWARD bought the house and lived there until his death in 1783. EDWARD TAYLOR was known to be a well-to-do farmer and miller; he was a slave-holder.

Because of his ties to the Loyalist party during the Revolutionary War, EDWARD TAYLOR was arrested and suffered the loss of wealth and the status that came with it in Monmouth County. In 1777, he passed on information to his son, GEORGE, who was a colonel and commander of a local Loyalist unit that raided his former neighbors.

EDWARD's son, JOHN, inherited Marlpit Hall from his father, and it remained in the family until 1930 with the death of MARY HOLMES TAYLOR, who never married.

There were three women named MARY HOLMES TAYLOR: JOHN TAYLOR's wife, who lived 1743-1819; their granddaughter (1814-1897), who married her first cousin, JOSEPH DORSET TAYLOR, and built Orchard House adjacent to Marlpit Hall; and MARY and JOSEPH's daughter (?-1930), who saved the house from demolition in 1911 when the state decided to alter Kings Highway.

After MARY and JOSEPH moved to the new Orchard House (now the TAYLOR-BUTLER House, also owned by the association) in 1853, Marlpit was leased to a series of tenant farmers and was not maintained.

Upon the death of the third MARY HOLMES TAYLOR, who eventually became the owner of both Marlpit Hall and Orchard House, Marlpit Hall was sold in 1930 to a well-known

⁴¹ Elaine van Develde, "Marlpit Hall: a house full of history and intrigue," *Independent*, 17 July 2001, p. 1.

Monmouth County antiques dealer, EDNA NETTER, on behalf of MARGARET MOORE RIKER HASKELL, who in 1936 donated it to the Monmouth County Historical Association.

As well documented as it appears, the article fails to address three problems:

- (1) If *Marlpit Hall* and the *Edward Taylor House* are on the same property why does the owner, the Historical Association, designate the *Hall* as structure #1 and the *Taylor House* structure #62?
- (2) EDWARD TAYLOR built his house in the village in 1686, just after *Marlpit Hall* was built. Obviously, at that time *Marlpit Hall* and EDWARD TAYLOR's house both stood in the village. Where were the original structures located?
- (3) Why is it still called *Marlpit Hall* if, as stated, that GROVER building was torn down?

THE END OF A PRODUCTIVE LIFE

Not much is known about JAMES' cause of death but some records claim that he was *killed by Indians* while on a business trip to the town he may have once lived in the early 1660s, Whitehall. That's certainly one hardy 78-year-old to be traveling on horseback in winter for that distance! We can be almost certain that JAMES was buried in Middletown, somewhere. The most-likely candidate is the *Grover Burial Ground* on Half Mile Road in Newman Springs as he is the JAMES GROVER that donated the land for the burial ground, there being no other JAMES GROVER with land in the 1680s to set aside for a cemetery. Three cemeteries were operating by 1685: *Holmdel (Middletown Upper Meeting House) Baptist Cemetery*; *Middletown Baptist Cemetery*; and *Taylor Burying Ground* (1684) on Penelope Lane in Middletown but it has no known GROVER graves. The internet site Find-A-Grave states that while the site has about a dozen graves, *many* were moved a couple miles north to *Fair View Cemetery* on Route 35 in Red Bank. A search of their records shows only one GROVER, ELIZABETH GROVER STILLWELL, from the 17th century and none from the 18th.

On 1 December 1685, 78-year-old JAMES signed his Last Will and Testament:

In the name of God AMEN, I James Grover, Senr. of Middletown, County of Monmouth, in East Jersey, being sencible of my Mortality and the present of perfect and sound mind ... I bequeath my soul to Almighty God that gave it, and my body to the Earth, etc.--- And as for my Temporal Estate as it has blessed God to bestow upon me, i doe Give, Order and Dispose of the same in manner and for me following ...

I give and bequeath . . . that my Mansion house, my Mill with all that belongs thereto, and all my land lying on the N-E side of Mill Creek, together with all my Meadow land adjoining or Elcewhere, shall be divided into three equal parts, one third I give to my son JAMES GROVER, one third to my son-in-law BENJAMIN BORDEN, for sake of his wife, my daughter ABIGAIL, and the other third part to my son-in-law RICHARD GARDINER for the sake of my daughter HANNAH, his wife with all the privelidges & appurtenances thereunto belonging, to them and to theire Heires .

...

All the rest of my Estate, Movable or Immovable, both household and stufte, tools, implements - cattle, horses, swine and everything elce that is mine . . . after the decease of me and my wife . . . shall be equally divided between my five children, JAMES, JOSEPH, SAFETY, ABIGAIL, and HANNAH..

After my decease, all my Estate, both Real and Personal shall be and Remaine in the possession

of my Deare Wife REBECCA for her Support and Maintenance as long as she shall live or remain a widow...

I doe Ordain and Appoint my son JAMES GROVER and my son-in-law RICHARD GARDINER to be my Execut^{rs}, and none other after my decease, to see this Will and Testament is performed.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and fixed my seale, this ffirſt day of December, in the year of our Lord One Thousand Six hundred Eighty & five.

JAMES GROVER Sen. [Seal]

Wits.: Richard Hartshorne

Tho. Webley

His will was proved by the witnesses before JOHN THROCKMORTON at Middletown on 28 January 1686. On 3 February 1686, RICHARD GARDINER *of Navesinck* and JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, posted bond as executors; SAMUEL LEONARD was a fellow bondsman. On pages 163 and 164 of Unrecorded Wills and Inventories of Monmouth County appear the rather extensive accounting of JAMES' estate.

An Inventory filed 5 January 1686 amounts to £ 228 13s 00d and includes:

House, mill and land	120 00 00
Pewter dishes & pots	02 00 00
Cattle, household effects	106 13 00

Completed 28 December 1685

Appraisers were JOHN WILLIAMS, JOHN THROCKMORTON and WILLIAM LAYTON.

An Accounting dated 14 January 1686 totals £ 98 18 00 and includes:

28 Dec 1685 – Funeral exp	05 10 00
25 Oct 1685 – Threshing & carting wheat	01 04 00
05 Nov 1685 – Widow's maintenance	15 00 00

An Accounting was filed on 14 June 1686 by both executors, and it showed payments were made out of his estate to DAVID BROWNE; JOHN PERCE; JAMES ROBINSON; JOHN STOUT; WIDOW ABIGAIL LIPPINCOTT; JOSEPH GROVER, JUNIOR; JOHN WILSON; JOB THROCKMORTON; ROBERT HAMILTON; and BENJAMIN BORDEN.⁴²

An Accounting dated 28 October 1686 includes:

28 Dec 1685 – Funeral and fencing of grave	06 00 00
03 Jun 1686 Quittents to Gov Lowry	20 04 00
n/d – <i>to the expense of the funeral of the widow</i>	05 00 00

Not all the expenses submitted in the last document were allowed. As there appears the cost for the funeral of the widow, *i.e.* REBECCA, she must have died after 5 November 1685 when widow's maintenance was claimed and before 28 October 1686 when funeral expenses were submitted.

The Governor's account book for quit rents has an entry of 15 October 1686 for JAMES with the note *DEAD*; the outstanding rent owed came to slightly more than £20 of which RICHARD GARDINER, the executor, had paid £7 with the remainder to be paid within a year.

REBECCA survived her husband by less than a year, dying before or during October 1686 as records dated in that month state that she is deceased.

⁴² Board of Proprietors of the Province of East NJ, Deeds, Book 1, page 68; cited by Roberts, 1955, 169; and NJA[1], 23, 197.

As owner of one share of the Monmouth Patent JAMES, and his heirs, were the recipients of the Proprietary Dividends. One share yielded lands as follows: 10,000 acres for the First Dividend; 5,000 acres for the Second Dividend of 1698; and 2,500 acres for the Third Dividend of 1702. Additional land grants for share-holders included four 9-acre lots and 25 acres of townland at Perth Amboy; to a tract of up to 1,000 acres at *Chingerosa*, the South River, the upper Raritan or Cedar Brook; up to 500 acres at *Wickatunk* in Monmouth County; and two tracts of 1,000 acres and 200 acres of *Barnegat land* which seems to have been anywhere south of Shrewsbury.⁴³ Rights to some or all of these dividends were sold to GAVEN DRUMMOND in a transaction recorded in 1714 as mentioned earlier.

Issue:

- 1) JOHN GROVER: married first ANN KILLINGBECK in 1677 and second ALICE HOGGE in 1700. He died in 1715.
- 2) JOSIAH GROVER:
- 3) JAMES GROVER, IV:⁴⁴ He was designated as JUNIOR to distinguish him from his father but he was the fourth male in line with this name. His wife was named ALICE; he died 1 April 1715 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ. He was one of the original *patentees* of Monmouth County, receiving town lot #25 and field lot #on 30 December 1667. He obtained a Warrant for Surveying up to 240 acres on 13 November 1676 and a single 190 acre tract was surveyed and conveyed to him on 12 June 1677. In 1685 he received 500+ acres from his father which is confirmed in records of the following year. A Warrant for surveying up to 200 acres was issued on 15 August 1685 while a survey of patented land reflects him taking possession of 100 acres on 15 December 1685 (as did his father). He inherited a one-third share of his father's *Mansion house*, mill, all land on the northeast of Mill Creek and all Meadow land wherever it was per the terms of his father's 1685 Will. The Governor's account book of quit rents reflects him responsible for paying rent on just the 190 acre tract as of 15 October 1686. He 22 July 1686 JAMES was chosen and appointed Town Clerk of Middletown for 1 year on 1 January 1688. The new Town Clerk records a newly-enacted bounty on wolves five days later:

It is ordered that if any one shall kill a Wolfe hee shall have twenty schillings for his paines, all soe if any Indian shall kill a Wolfe and bring the head to the constable: The Indian soe doing shall have for his reward twenty gilders; provided it can bee discerned that it (was) killd within ten miles of the towne; this order is disannulled concerning the payment of 20 gilders to Indians.

It seems the inhabitants wanted to be treated fairly, as they determined fair to be, by the Proprietors, but weren't quite willing to afford the same treatment to the Indians. JAMES GROVER, with JOHN STOUT and THOMAS RENSHALL, inventoried the estate of JOHN JOHNSON of Middletown on 14 May 1690; this must be the same person for he was the right age and he is described as a carpenter in a deed dated 17 July 1697, but not recorded until 1710, in which he sells land to JOHN STOUT. On 29 January 1696 he is found registering his ear mark which is based on his father's but with a modification. The eldest son and heir not only received the real property, he also received the ear mark! In 1708 he sold 150 acres in Shrewsbury Township to THOMAS TILTON. This tract is now in Wall Township about a mile south of Spring Lake and is where the Villa Park section is located.

⁴³ *supra* Pomfret, *The Province of East New Jersey: 1609 – 1702*; page 230.

⁴⁴ Phillips Family website on rootsweb.com

Also in 1708 he obtained the other two-thirds share of the property owned by his father and he became sole owner of the mansion house, the mill and all lands of that inheritance.⁴⁵ In “the tenth year of QUEEN ANNIE” (1712) JAMES GROVER sold property on the north bank of Shrewsbury River below Red Bank *from Grover's creek which empties into the Shrewsbury and the Mill brook* to JAMES PATTERSON, SENIOR; just what the origin of this tract was has not been determined.⁴⁶ On 3 June 1750 or 1751 the deed for JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR buying the former MORRIS plantation of about 70 acres from his father JAMES GROVER, SENIOR was finally recorded. In turn, JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, a single yeoman of Shrewsbury, *son of JAMES GROVER of Middletown, yeoman*, sells this land to DANIEL POLHEMUS of Middletown for £338, 3 shilling, 1 penny. (Book I2, page 386) While it is possible to not record a deed for 65 years, it seems unlikely and more research is needed to flush this transaction out. In his will dated 18 March 1715 is found reference to 600 acres in Monmouth County that he bequeathed to his nephew JAMES GROVER, son of JOSEPH and HANNAH GROVER. The estate was valued at £129 2s 6p and the will proved 16 April 1715. Another deed wherein JAMES GROVER sells land to THOMAS SHEPHERD was recorded at page 248 in Volume E of Monmouth County Deeds in 1716 is worthy of note if only because of the proximity of this sale to his death and the common practice of recording deeds months and even years after the actual sale occurred. 4 children including:

- a) REBECCA GROVER: married MORDECAI GIBBONS.
- b) MARTHA GROVER: born 1685 in Dover Township, Monmouth County, NJ; married JOHN VANE. One known child.
- c) HESTER GROVER: married JOHN GIBERSON.

- 4) JOSEPH GROVER: married HANNAH LAWRENCE around 1684 in Monmouth County, NJ. *Their story continues on page 92.*
- 5) ABIGAIL GROVER: married BENJAMIN BORDEN on 22 September 1670 in Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, NJ. He was born 16 May 1649 in Portsmouth, Newport County, RI, the 10th child of RICHARD BORDEN and JOAN FOWLE of County Kent.

BENJAMIN BORDEN was a recipient named in a patent issued by GOVERNOR RICHARD NICOLLS on 8 July 1670 which reflects the one share he invested in the venture.⁴⁷ BENJAMIN BORDEN, and WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, were 2 of the purchasers of the *Monmouth* tract from the Native Americans on 3 May 1677, which followed the January purchase of Middletown lands which he must have been a party to though no deeds have yet been found. He received Middletown town lot #29 30 December 1667 and field lot #23 the following day however confirmatory deeds are missing. He inherited, on behalf of his wife, a one-third share of his father-in-law's *Mansion house*, mill, all land on the northeast of Mill Creek and all Meadow land wherever it was per the terms of his father-in-law's 1685 Will. In 1690 he sold that share to WILLIAM WINTER who had come to own one-third share when he married HANNAH GROVER, the widow of RICHARD GARDINER. They lived in *Shrewsbury*, reflecting the Monmouth purchase, until 1713 when they moved to Evesham Township in Burlington County. The first court of Monmouth County, New Jersey, was held in his house in Shrewsbury in 1676. He was a justice of the peace in 1685. In 1692 and 1694 he was elected to the General Assembly from Middletown. In 1695 and 1698 he was elected as one of the six members to the General Assembly from Monmouth County. He

⁴⁵ Office of Clerk of Court, Freehold, Monmouth County, N. J. Book of 1708, p. 185.

⁴⁶ *supra* Nelson, *History of the New Jersey Coast*, Volume II, pages 182, 268 and 402.

⁴⁷ Monmouth Deed Books A, B & C, folio 36.

was appointed deputy for Middletown in 1697. He was a member of the House of Representatives for Monmouth County from 1708 to 1709. He served as road commissioner from 1693 to 1711.⁴⁸ ABIGAIL died on 8 January 1720, probably in Evesham, Burlington County, NJ; but Middletown is also possible. BENJAMIN married (2) SUSANNAH PAGE. He died in June 1728 in Evesham Township, Burlington County, NJ. (Wills, Liber 2, p.532)

- a) RICHARD BORDEN: born 9 January 1672 in Monmouth County, NJ; married MARY WORTHLEY on 17 April 1695; RICHARD wrote his Will 5 April 1751 at Evesham which was proved a month later on 4 May. In it he names 8 children and provides for the lifetime upkeep up his brother SAMUEL. (Burlington County Wills C 4787)
- b) BENJAMIN BORDEN: born 6 April 1675 in Monmouth County, NJ; married his first-cousin ZERUIAH WINTER 1705-1711; he died 1742-43 in Winchester, Frederick County, Virginia. His first recorded appearance in Virginia is on 21 January 1734 when he was appointed one of the justices of the newly formed Orange County. His name appears frequently in land transactions in various parts of the Shenandoah Valley. His most important enterprise was the settlement of *Borden's Great Tract*, a grant of 92,100 acres from KING GEORGE II. The legend has been told that he killed a young buffalo, presented it at Williamsburg to GOVERNOR GOOCH, who was so delighted that 500,000 acres were granted to him. Another version of the legend claims that BENJAMIN captured a buffalo calf and sent it to England as a present for the Queen, who out of appreciation granted him 100,000 acres in the Virginia Valley. BENJAMIN's legal requirement as proprietor of this tract was to put up a bond of £1800 and settle within a stated time a minimum number of families on the tract. He was to receive 1,000 acres of land for each cabin built on the tract. When he first set out to inspect the area, he became lost. He stumbled upon the camp of a backwoods family, the son JOHN McDOWELL being a surveyor. BENJAMIN promised him 1,000 acres if he could help him find all his land. The land was thoroughly surveyed before December 1738. Some sources claim that BENJAMIN travelled to England once or twice and brought back settlers, though no evidence has been found for this. BENJAMIN received his patent on 8 November 1739 after 92 cabins had been constructed in the area. As one might expect, there came to be many lawsuits involving this large land grant. He died in 1743 near Winchester, Virginia, shortly after his appointment as one of the original justices of Frederick County, Virginia. From BENJAMIN'S Will it is estimated he owned 120,000 acres of land, including several tracts on the James River, now in Rockbridge County, Virginia. Most of the land was ordered sold by the Will and the proceeds divided among the children. 154 years would pass before all known descendants were satisfied with the division and the court battles ended. ZERUIAH remarried about 1747 to JOSEPH WRIGHT and lived in Hamilton Parish, Prince William County, Virginia. She died from smallpox about 1751/53.
- c) JAMES BORDEN: born 6 September 1677 Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, NJ; wife named MARY; died after signing his Will on 23 December 1727 and before the inventory was made in November 1728 in Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ; 9 children.
- d) REBECCA BORDEN: born 8 June 1680 in Monmouth County, NJ.
- e) SAFETY BORDEN: born 6 September 1682 in Monmouth County, NJ; married MARTHA GROVER, though some researchers believe MARTHA CHEESMAN may be correct as his great-grandfather was WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, SENIOR (another ancestor). Between 1688 and 1695 he received a 240 acre parcel near Crosswicks that was one of the *Middletown Men's Lots* which extended south of the Burlington Path to the Pines. It bordered tracts owned by BENJAMIN BORDEN and RICHARD BORDEN. He sold this to ABRAHAM LINCOLN, the great-

⁴⁸ Michael S. Cole, Cowan Connections (1994), pp. 374 – 380; online at: <http://www.thecolefamily.com/hobby/borden.htm>

granduncle of the President, on 11 February 1722. ABRAHAM owned a blacksmith shop and forge in Clarksburg where he was joined by his brother MORDECAI LINCOLN, the future President's great-grandfather, around 1712. He received land in Freehold from his father in 1718 and 1722. SAFETY BORDEN is found in the records as a member of the Middletown Baptist Church in April 1734.⁴⁹ He died November 1757, at 75 years old, in Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ.

- f) AMY BORDEN: born 4 March 1684 in Monmouth County, NJ; married JOSIAH FOSTER; 3 children.
 - g) JOSEPH BORDEN was born 12 May 1687 Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, NJ; innkeeper and founder of Bordentown; married his first-cousin in NJ, not once, but twice by the age of 30 ("kissing-cousins" definitely!). He married REBECCA GROVER as well as her sister SUSANNA GROVER. SUSANNA was born about 1687 and REBECCA a couple years later, probably in Monmouth County, NJ; they were daughters of JOSEPH GROVER and HANNAH LAWRENCE (#4 above). The retold histories are confusing, but it seems that REBECCA was the first wife, dying before 1717, followed by the marriage to SUSANNA around 1717. SUSANNA died 11 March 1744 in Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ. JOSEPH married a third time (but not a cousin) – to ELIZABETH PANCOAST in October 1750 in Burlington County, NJ. JOSEPH died 22 September 1765 in Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ and was buried in the *Old Bordentown Cemetery*; ELIZABETH died December 1782 in Burlington Co, NJ.
 - h) JONATHAN BORDEN: born 14 April 1690 Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ; married MARY EARL 26 November 1730 in Burlington County, NJ. She was born in Rhode Island, the daughter of WILLIAM EARL and ELIZABETH (SHARP?). JONATHON died after 1739 in Chester, Burlington County, NJ.
 - i) DAVID BORDEN: born 8 March 1692 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ.
 - j) SAMUEL BORDEN: born 8 April 1696 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ; provided for by eldest brother RICHARD in his 1751 Will; buried in Colestown, Gloucester County, NJ.
- 6) **SAFETY GROVER:** wife's given name was probably **MERCY BORDEN**. *Their story continues on p 99.*
- 7) HANNAH GROVER: married RICHARD GARDINER before December 1685 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ. He inherited, on behalf of his wife, a one-third share of his father-in-law's *Mansion house*, mill, all land on the northeast of Mill Creek and all Meadow land wherever it was per the terms of his father-in-law's 1685 Will. Richard died in 1687 at the same place. An inventory of his estate, dated 30 December 1687, valued it at £45 8s 6p. The estate, with HANNAH as administratrix, would not be settled until 1704. They had 2 children:
- a) RICHARD GARDINER, JUNIOR
 - b) JOSEPH GARDINER
- HANNAH then married WILLIAM WINTER in 1688 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ. He was the son of OBADIAH WINTER and MARGARET CROMWELL. The one-third share of HANNAH'S real estate inheritance from her father in 1685 was transferred to his possession when they married and in 1690 he bought the one-third share owned by BENJAMIN BORDEN on behalf of his wife ABIGAIL GROVER. In 1708 it seems likely they sold the two-thirds share to HANNAH'S brother, JAMES GROVER, IV. In September 1688 WILLIAM WINTER, as the husband of the widow of RICHARD GARDINER was sued by LEWIS MORRIS and COLONEL LEWIS MORRIS of Tinton Manor for a debt which was apparently successful as WILLIAM made a claim against RICHARD'S estate on 14 May 1695 for the cost of judgment of this suit. MORRIS filed a discharge

⁴⁹ op. cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Vol. 2, p. 259.

for all debts owed by RICHARD on 12 February 1697. On 14 April 1704 HANNAH filed an accounting that valued RICHARD'S estate at £9 and the following month WILLIAM was granted a *quietus* or final settlement for the estate. WILLIAM wrote his Will in 1722 in which he gave to his eldest son JOHN 4 acres of salt meadow on east side of Shoal Harbor; to his second son ANDREW he gave land where testator lived, with land bought of JAMES GROVER and currier's knife and all tools of the currier's and shoemaker's trade; to his youngest son JAMES he gave a great Bible and carpenter's tools; and after wife's marriage or death the residue of the estate to his five children and two sons-in-law, RICHARD and JOSEPH GARDINER who were step-sons, not sons-in-law. Mention is also made of his daughters ZERUIAH BORDEN and REBECCA APPLEGATE, grandson BENJAMIN WINTER and wife HANNAH. Executors were his sons ANDREW and JAMES and it was witnessed by RICHARD APPLEGATE, RICHARD GIBBENS and BENJAMIN GIBBINES. It was submitted to the Court by ANDREW WINTER, the surviving executor, on 13 June 1733 with an Inventory valued at £101 15s 8p.⁵⁰ He died in the first half of 1733 and probably in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ.

They had:

- c) JOHN WINTER: 2 children with BENJAMIN being the younger.
- d) ANDREW WINTER: born 1691; wife named ALLES; 5 children; died 30 April 1760.
- e) JAMES WINTER: died before June 1733.
- f) REBECCA WINTER: born 1692, married RICHARD APPLEGATE in 1705; RICHARD signed a will on 7 November 1732 which was proved at Crossweeks in Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, on 20 January 1733. Eight or nine children.
- g) ZERUIAH WINTER: born 1689, married (1) first-cousin BENJAMIN BORDEN (above) between 1705 and 1711; she married (2) JOSEPH WRIGHT before 30 August 1748 on which date they both filed quit-claim deeds disavowing any rights of inheritance in the others' property in which JOSEPH specifies that property owned by ZERUIAH is by virtue of her being the widow of BENJAMIN BORDEN, in Prince William County, Virginia.⁵¹ She died in Winchester, Frederick County, Virginia several years later than the 1743 reported by some. Five or six children are usually attributed to ZERUIAH and BENJAMIN BORDEN, but some researchers have as many as ten.

⁵⁰ Monmouth County Wills, Liber B, page 460.

⁵¹ Prince William County, VA, Deed Book L, pp. 92-3

Husband: **JOSEPH GROVER**

Born:	Circa 1652	Gravesend, New Netherlands
Married:	Circa 1682	Monmouth County, East Jersey
Died:	before 25 March 1689	Middletown, Monmouth County, EJ
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs, Monmouth County	

Father:	JAMES GROVER, III (July 1611 - December 1685)
Mother:	REBECCA CHEESEMAN (Circa 1618 – January - October 1686)

Wife: **HANNAH LAWRENCE**

Born:	Circa 1660	Middleburgh, New Netherlands
Died:	before December 1701	Monmouth County, EJ
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs, Monmouth County	
Father:	WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE (circa 1630 – 1701/04)	
Mother:	HANNAH GROVER (circa 1630 – before 1701)	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) JAMES GROVER	21 July 1683	Monmouth County, EJ
2) SUSANNA GROVER	about 1684	Monmouth County, EJ
3) ELIZABETH GROVER	7 June 1685	Monmouth County, EJ
4) MARY GROVER	about 1686	Monmouth County, EJ
5) HANNAH GROVER	about 1687	Middletown, Monmouth County, EJ
6) REBECCA GROVER	about 1688	Monmouth County, EJ
7) DEBORAH GROVER	1689	Monmouth County, EJ

In a Will dated 5 March 1684 THERLAGH SWYNY (or THURLOW SWINY) bequeathed his house and land in Middletown to his underage son JOHN SWYNY. In the event that JOHN died without heirs, the bequest would devolve upon JAMES GROVER, son of JOSEPH and HANNAH GROVER, who were appointed executors of his estate and guardians of his son. JOHN SWYNY, being a minor over 14 years of age later nominated CAPTAIN SAFETY GROVER, JOSEPH's younger brother, to be his guardian. He mentions his wife MARY but made no provisions for her in this instrument. SWINY is an Irish name appearing in Cohansey (now in Salem County) in 1683 the year the Irish Baptists arrived. Apparently the presence of Baptist congregations at Middletown and Cohansey were the foundation upon which many of the residents of both intermingled quite frequently. On 31 March 1684, letters of administration for the estate of THORLAGH SWINEY were granted to JOSEPH GROVER.⁵² The following month funeral expenses of £1 09s 06d were claimed by JOSEPH for 2½ gallons molasses, 05s; 5 gallons rum, 07s 06d; buckwheat, 05s; butter and eggs, 03s; winding sheet, 04s; and for the coffin, 05s.⁵³ He also appears in records paying rents on behalf of *WIDOW SWINY*. JOHN SWINY appears to have attained adulthood by April 1701 for that is when he shows up in records reflecting ownership of his father's 110 acres.

FATHER'S ESTATE

On 25 September 1683, in a Court Sessions held in Middletown, JOSEPH GROVER was made

⁵² Two citations found in connection with Swiny's estate are NJA[1], 23, 451; and East Jersey Book of Deeds, Volume A, page 66; cited in NJA[1], 21, 56.

⁵³ Edwin Salter, *A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties*, (Bayonne, NJ: F. Gardner & Son, Publishers; 1890) page lvii.

Constable and *took Engagement in the Laws* as found in the Court's minutes. He is also found in the records pertaining to the 14 June 1686 settlement of the estate of his father who had passed away in December 1685. As the eldest son, he inherited all property his father held at the time of his death. He may have been some sort of tradesman as he is referred to as being the *master* of NATHANIEL WOOLCOT in the will of the latter's father SAMUEL, written on 7 May 1687. In this document, SAMUEL exhorts his executors JUDAH ALLEN and THOMAS WEBLY to *take care that my sone NETHANIEL be in no way wronged by his master, JOSEPH GROVER*. The servant code of 1682 and 1683 under the Twenty Four Proprietors specified that one could be apprenticed only until they reached twenty one; servants were to receive two suits of apparel, an axe, a hoe and seven bushels of seed corn plus any land that had been agreed upon, apprentices were likely compensated in a similar manner.

LAND TRANSACTIONS

JOSEPH and HANNAH were involved in several land transactions over the years; by 1675 he was confirmed as owning 559 acres. The account book for quit rents of the Governor reflects JOSEPH owning 560 acres since 1677 as of 15 October 1686; evidently his father's lands had yet to be transferred. Some of the records have been extracted by others and reprinted here. On 7 October 1684, JOSEPH GROVER and PETER TILTON recorded some sort of agreement about their land, indicating that both owned land by that date, but this has yet to be fully researched. To give you an idea of the complexity of the early deeds, the history of the following purchase is detailed: On 28 March 1688 JOHN THROGMORTON sold $\frac{1}{10}$ of *Crosswicks Purchase* to JOSEPH GROVER for £40. A different recording of this transfer states it was $\frac{1}{10}$ of $\frac{1}{48}$ of East New Jersey. *Crosswicks Purchase* was a 1,200 acre tract of land bought by THROGMORTON and twelve associates in 1685. Prior to 1682 THOMAS RUDYARD, one of the Twelve Proprietors, had owned one full share of which he sold two parts and retained a third part for himself. One portion, accounting for a $\frac{1}{2}$ interest, was bought by ROBERT TURNER of Philadelphia in 1682, making him one of the Twenty-Four Proprietors (actually Twelve Proprietors and Twelve Associates) of East Jersey; this is confirmed in the Patent which describes the tract as *amounting to one full and equal forty-eighth part of the Province of East Jersey*.⁵⁴ TURNER then sold $\frac{1}{2}$ of his holdings, 1,200 acres, to JOHN THROGMORTON and his twelve associates in 1685 all of whom, save one, were original settlers of Middletown. Seven of the thirteen purchasers each paid 10% of the purchase price, owning a 10% interest and each the other six purchasers paid 5% of the purchase price, owning a 5% interest. The *Purchase* was divided into 48 shares of 25 acres each and sold. THROGMORTON and associates selected land at the headwaters of Crosswicks Creek in Monmouth County and had the tract surveyed. GROVER and THROGMORTON are both designated as being Gentleman, i.e., belonging to the gentry, of Middletown. On 10 May 1688, a Patent was issued by the Proprietors of East Jersey to JOSEPH GROVER for 480 acres on Doctor's Creek at Crosswicks. This should represent the portion of *Crosswicks Purchase* he purchased from THROGMORTON but the math doesn't add up. JOSEPH'S $\frac{1}{10}$ share should amount to 120 acres, not 480. Also, the 480 acre Patent is hard to reflect in ownership of one or more of the 48 shares as well – it amounts to 19.2 shares.⁵⁵ JOSEPH'S interest was $\frac{1}{10}$ of $\frac{1}{2}$ of the $\frac{1}{48}$ part of the Province of East Jersey, or $\frac{1}{960}$ share!

⁵⁴ Citation in extract is "D.B. 3, 348, Trenton deeds; cited by Roberts, 1955, 170". Further research is needed to obtain the correct citation which, logically, would be Monmouth County, Book of Deeds or East Jersey Book of Deeds, Volume 3, p 348. See also Book B, p 348.

⁵⁵ Much of this and subsequent discussion involving this tract from East New Jersey Land Records, Book G2, page 304; and other entries; found in Richard S. Hutchinson, East New Jersey Land Records, 1747 – 1747, Books G2 & H2 (Lewis, DE: Colonial Roots, 2005) page 41. See also Book C, p 89.

He was chosen and appointed Constable for Middletown on 1 January 1682; the 1 year term began that same day.

7 KIDS IN 7 YEARS CAN WEAR YOU OUT!

JOSEPH GROVER of *Middleton* wrote his will on 7 December 1688. In this instrument are found the names of his son JAMES and his wife HANNAH; an expected child (DEBORAH) is mentioned; all his land is left to JAMES, as is the livestock, when he turns 21; all is reserved for his widow's use until JAMES turns 21, thereafter she has 50% of the land until she dies; he devises the 480 acre Crosswicks lot, *the whole purchase of the property from JOHN THROCKMORTON*, to his daughters; each received a $\frac{1}{6}$ share. JOSEPH appointed his wife HANNAH and her brother, WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JUNIOR to act as executors. The will was witnessed by his brother-in-law WILLIAM LAWRENCE, PETER TILTON, DANIEL AP[P]LEGATE, and WILLIAM LEEDS. JOSEPH died within 4 months as an inventory of the estate of JOSEPH GROVER was filed in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ on 25 March 1689 and his Will was proved the following day.⁵⁶ He was buried in the *Grover Burying Ground* on Half Mile Road and Schultz Drive in Newman Springs south of Middletown, west of Shrewsbury. Hannah wrote her Will on 6 May 1690 but the terms are unknown as a copy or extract has yet to be found. It is known that she had land in Crosswicks that was left to some of her children; what is interesting is that, at the time she wrote her Will, she hadn't yet bought the land.

HANNAH bought an additional 150 acres *on Doctor's Creek* in Crosswicks from JAMES JOHNSTON, probably a relative of her son-in-law CAPTAIN DAVID JOHNSTON on 16 October 1690 (the purchase may have been on 5 January with it being recorded on 16 October). In the Will of her daughter MARY JOHNSTON this land is described as being *on the east side* of property already owned by her husband JOSEPH.

HANNAH married a second time on 9 January 1695 to NATHANIEL LEONARD, son of HENRY LEONARD. HENRY LEONARD built the iron mills for her grandfather JAMES and NATHANIEL may have been his son, or perhaps a grandson. The marriage was officiated by REVEREND TIMOTHY JOHNS, DD, the pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Morristown. JOHNES officiated for marriages at both the Presbyterian and the Baptist churches in Morristown.⁵⁷ Some name three sons from this marriage: JOHN, THOMAS (1708) and (LIEUTENANT) NATHANIEL LEONARD (1712) but this seems unlikely as on 26 March 1696 JAMES GROVER, SENIOR, CAPTAIN SAFETY GROVER, WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR and WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JUNIOR *being the nearest relations of JOSEPH GROVER and HANNAH LEONARD late Wife of the said JOSEPH GROVER* filed a petition at the Court of Sessions to appoint guardians for their children. The appointment of guardians seems to indicate HANNAH had died for, if she was alive and married to NATHANIEL LEONARD, such an appointment was not needed. The wording *late Wife of the said JOSEPH GROVER* can mean 2 different things: she was the *deceased* wife of JOSEPH or she was the *previous* wife of JOSEPH; the meaning remains unclear. MARY GROVER nominated her grandfather, WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR, as guardian while JAMES GROVER nominated his grandfather and his uncle WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JUNIOR, as guardians. The records are silent for the rest of the children.

On 22 December 1700, there appears a confirmation *in full of the second dividend* to MARY, HANNAH, ELIZABETH, REBECCA, SUSANNA, and DEBORAH, daughters of JOSEPH GROVER, deceased, each holding $\frac{1}{20}$ of the $\frac{1}{24}$ share of the Province (note that this interest is exactly one-half

⁵⁶ Citation in extract: NJA[1], 21, 168; another reference found for this Will is "NJ Archives, XXL, page 168" and a third is "East Jersey Deeds, Liber D, pages 88, 91."

⁵⁷ History of the First Presbyterian Church, Morristown, NJ (1880) "A Register of my Marriages with ye time, names of ye Persons & their Places of abode (commencing 9 March 1743)" Timothy Johnes.

of the interest represented by the Crosswicks Purchase, ergo, we can assume that he owned 500 acres elsewhere when he died): 100 acres near Matcheponix River (a branch of the Raritan River), adjoining ROBERT BARCLAY'S land and 150 acres between *the branches of Rock (or Rack) Pond* (this may be the same as Wrack or Wreck Pond whose north branch runs into the Atlantic between Asbury Park and Manasquan).⁵⁸ This second dividend represented the increased value of the shares of the Province owned by their father. That this dividend went to the daughters and not his widow possibly indicates that HANNAH had died however inheritance law may have specified that it went to his children rather than a widow that had remarried.

HANNAH had probably died by December 1701 in Monmouth County, NJ. The oft-quoted 1714 is from an unknown source. In December 1701 HANNAH'S father WILLIAM LAWRENCE wrote his Will in which he made bequests to HANNAH'S *children* SUSANNA, ELIZABETH, MARY, HANNAH, REBECCA, JAMES and DEBORAH; there were no bequests left to his only daughter HANNAH but several to his six sons making it unlikely she was alive when he wrote the Will. However, the Will does not *explicitly* state that she was dead. She was buried in *Grover Burial Ground* on Half Mile Road.

A Survey certified 8 July 1718 for a son-in-law, JAMES SEABROOK, of JOSEPH'S property at Shoal Harbor has a notation to the side stating: *1st & 2nd Division being taken up at date hereof ye addition of 125 acres which fell to ye six daughters of JOSEPH GROVER, one of which JAMES SEABROOK has married & JAMES GROVER has bought 3 of 8 shares of ye other sisters out of which 3 shares he has sold JAMES SEABROOK 45 acres. 65 5/6 acres remains to be taken up by JAMES GROVER 17 3/6 [acres, and] by each of 2: sisters 20 5/6 [acres]. In all 59 1/6 acres.*⁵⁹

ISSUE:

- 1) JAMES GROVER: his year of birth has been given as 1686 elsewhere but this can not be correct as the Will of THURLOW SWINY which is dated 25 March 1684, mentions JAMES in which he is named as legatee of his house and property in Middletown Township if THURLOW's son JOHN dies before coming of age. He may have used the suffix "V" after his name but this is not definite. His uncle, JAMES GROVER, IV (designated as JUNIOR in property records) had 3 daughters but no sons so this JAMES could have adopted the V; if he did his son JAMES would be the VI. If not he may have self-identified as SENIOR so as to not mix him up with his son of the same name, JUNIOR. JAMES GROVER married MARY TILTON (Born 21 October 1686, daughter of JOHN TILTON and REBECCA TERRY) who I believe to be this JAMES GROVER rather than his uncle of the same name as proposed by some. On 15 March 1708 he sold *Grover's Inheritance* to his sister and her husband THOMAS and DEBORAH SHEPHERD for £480.⁶⁰ 6 months later he bought land from them which he sold to DAVID JOHNSTON, a *blacksmith from Freehold*, for £60 on 4 November 1711. On 12 June 1714 he sold *for a competent sum of money* his $1/12$ of the $1/48$ share of East New Jersey to GAWEN DRUMMOND of Loch Harbor, reserving the quit rents to 223 acres for himself and a right for 290 acres as his 2nd and 3rd dividends. JOSEPH received a 600 acre tract of land from his uncle JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR upon the latter's death in 1715. It may be due to this uncle that JAMES is found styled as the "3rd" despite being the son of JOSEPH. After his uncle JAMES GROVER, IV (but found as JUNIOR) died in 1715, this JAMES GROVER, who had occasionally used JUNIOR, adopted SENIOR to distinguish him from his own son JAMES who became JUNIOR. On 6 September 1717 JAMES and MARY GROVER were witnesses to the marriage of her probable brother DANIEL TILTON and ELIZABETH POWELL at the Friends

⁵⁸ Citation in extract: East Jersey Book of Deeds, Volume G, page 240; cited in NJA[1], 21, 322.

⁵⁹ George Stillwell, *Historical and Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 4 (NY: 1916), p. 224.

⁶⁰ Records of the Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold.

Meeting House in Shrewsbury; and again on 15 August 1719 for the marriage of WILLIAM LAWRENCE and EASTER TILTON at the home of PETER TILTON in Middleburgh; years later on 10 August 1739 for WILLIAM MORRIS and ELIZABETH BREWER.⁶¹ JAMES filed a challenge against his sisters' claims of ownership of their father's Crosswicks lot in Monmouth County Court of Common Pleas, probably based on the accepted practice that all land went to the eldest son who was then responsible for dividing it among the heirs. He was unsuccessful as his sisters clearly owned the land as it was stipulated so in their father's Will. When his sister REBECCA died, she had no heir as her son had died also. JAMES was the heir-at-law and ended up with the property in December 1720. He served as a member of the Provincial Assembly in 1727, 1728, 1730 and 1733. JAMES wrote his Will 19 July 1749 which was proved 1 January 1753 giving a 1752 year of death. Estate included his *home farm on Fulling Brook; two lots near Jumping Brook; two cedar swamps, called the Round and Asher Cleayton's Swamp* and four doubloons valued at £ 24.5; five white servants *time yet to come* valued at £58; a negro man valued at £20 and various other belongings bringing the total value of the estate to £1176 16s 7p. In the Will he lists four children.⁶²

- a) JAMES GROVER: may have been "JUNIOR" or "VI" (see above)
- b) SILVANUS GROVER: license to marry VALERIAH TILTON, daughter of ROBERT TILTON and MIRIAM ALLEN dated 1 December 1757. He was a witness to the marriage of JONATHON PICKERING and MARY WILLIAMS at Shrewsbury Friends Meeting House on 7 December 1773.⁶³ In 1787 he made an interesting affirmation in Book D of the Proprietary records at Perth Amboy: he, a Quaker, affirms that he is familiar with the state of the family of JOSEPH GROVER, his grandfather. JOSEPH had 6 daughters who inherited equal shares of Proprietary rights, two of whom were SUSANNA and HANNAH. SUSANNA married JOSEPH BORDEN and had 1 daughter REBECCA, married to JOSEPH BROWN, and she had inherited her mother's Proprietary share. HANNAH married JAMES SEABROOK and had a son DANIEL. DANIEL'S son THOMAS SEABROOK was the heir to HANNAH'S Proprietary share. Obviously, at this late date the descent of the Proprietary shares had not been amicably worked out.
 - (1) MARY GROVER: married JOHN BARD of New York City. She was sole heiress.
 - c) HANNAH GROVER
 - d) REBECCA GROVER
- 2) SUSANNA GROVER: in 1717 SUSANNA married her cousin and former brother-in-law, JOSEPH BORDEN. He was born 12 May 1687 in Monmouth County, NJ; the son of BENJAMIN BORDEN and ABIGAIL GROVER. SUSANNAH died 11 March 1744 in Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ and was buried in *Christ Church Episcopal Cemetery* there. In 1750 JOSEPH married a third time, to ELIZABETH PANCOAST. JOSEPH died in Bordentown on 22 September 1765 and was buried in same cemetery which also goes by the name *Old Borden Cemetery*. SUSANNA and JOSEPH had at least 3 children:
 - a) JOSEPH BORDEN, JUNIOR: died 1791, buried *Old Borden Cemetery*.
 - b) AMY BORDEN: born 23 July 1723; married WILLIAM THOMAS POTTS. WILLIAM died 25 July 1783 and AMY on 19 August 1804, both in Mansfield and both buried *Old Borden Cemetery*.
 - c) ABIGAIL BORDEN: born 1727; married MICAJAH HOWE, JUNIOR.
- 3) ELIZABETH GROVER: born 7 June 1685, died 18 January 1763. A deed recorded 22 August 1711 has ELIZABETH, a single woman of Middletown Township, selling her the $\frac{1}{6}$ share of the two

⁶¹ op.cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Vol.1, pp. 259, 261, 284.

⁶² Monmouth County Wills, Liber F, page 90.

⁶³ op.cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Vol.1, p. 308.

Doctors Creek tracts bequeathed by her parents to CAPTAIN DAVID JOHNSTON of Freehold Township, blacksmith, for £62. CAPTAIN JOHNSTON is married to her sister MARY. ELIZABETH bought the plantation of JOHN and MARY WALL in Middletown with adjacent land from GARRAT WALL, brother of JOHN, in 1715. She purchased land in October 1715 as a single woman but she is said to have married GERSHON STILLWELL in that year; accordingly they must have married in November or December. They subsequently lived for a time at Moreland Manor, Philadelphia County, PA. GERSHON died in Middletown on 24 June 1752 and Elizabeth died there on 18 January 1763; their graves are in *Fair View Cemetery* in Redbank but they may have originally been buried in the *Grover Burial Ground* in Newman Springs.

- 4) MARY GROVER: born before 1689, died before May 1733; married CAPTAIN DAVID JOHNSTON. CAPTAIN JOHNSTON purchases the $\frac{1}{6}$ shares of ELIZABETH and DEBORAH GROVER giving them three $\frac{1}{6}$ shares, or $\frac{1}{2}$ of the two Crosswicks tracts. MARY *of Freehold and being very sick*, wrote her Will on 8 August 1730. In it she makes one bequest, that being to her son, and executor, JAMES JOHNSTON, the *lands at Crosswicks, which were bequeathed to testatrix by her parents, JOSEPH and HANNAH GROVER by wills dated December 7, 1688 and May 8, 1690, respectively. Above lands, purchased by testatrix's mother from JAMES JOHNSTON, October 16, 1690, on east side of testatrix's husbands' land on Doctor's Creek*. Witnesses were WILLIAM KINNAN, JAMES POULLOW and RICHARD DOUBLASS. She died before 15 March 1733 for, on that date, her husband DAVID signed a statement that he gave his wife, since deceased, *full liberty to make said Will* that was witnessed by WILLIAM KINNAN and JAMES POULLOW. The Will was proved 7 May that same year.⁶⁴ DAVID JOHNSTON, of Upper Freehold, wrote his Will on 3 July 1738 which was proved on 12 October that same year. In it he mentions his wife MARY and all five children. Executors were his *son JAMES, and JAMES GROVER of Middletown*, probably his brother-in-law.⁶⁵
 - a) DAVID JOHNSTON: named as their eldest son in fathers Will, was in Scotland when his father wrote that Will in 1738.
 - b) JOHN JOHNSTON: is styled as the *eldest son* of DAVID and MARY when he sells *the share*, perhaps a $\frac{1}{6}$ share, of land owned by his mother to THOMAS HERBERT (without specifying *Junior* or *Senior*) on the same date that the five $\frac{1}{6}$ shares of the two Crosswicks tracts on Doctors Creek are transferred from THOMAS HERBERT (*SENIOR*) to THOMAS HERBERT (*JUNIOR*). It is not clear where this share originated or how he came into possession of it. It appears that a total of seven $\frac{1}{6}$ shares end up being sold. This deed may have been a precautionary measure taken by HERBERT to prevent a future challenge to legal ownership. This record may also indicate that his older brother DAVID had died by this time.
 - c) HANNAH JOHNSTON:
 - d) MARY JOHNSTON:
 - e) JAMES JOHNSTON: inherits the three $\frac{1}{6}$ shares and sells them to THOMAS HERBERT (*JUNIOR*) bringing the total owned by HERBERT to four $\frac{1}{6}$ shares.
- 5) HANNAH GROVER: married JAMES SEABROOK, son of JOHN SEABROOK and ELIZABETH STEWART of Woodbridge. As mentioned above HANNAH inherited property of her father at Shoal Harbor. In 1711, they initiated a court action demanding the partitioning of the approximately 800 acres of Crosswicks lands they had inherited as tenants-in-common from JOSEPH and HANNAH GROVER. JAMES added to these holdings and they sold all 6 of their Shoal Harbor properties, 300 acres, to his brother DANIEL SEABROOK on 15 August 1730. JAMES sold the Middletown property inherited by HANNAH from her father on 7 February 1745 to DANIEL

⁶⁴ Monmouth County Wills, Liber D, page 292 (and) *New Jersey Colonial Documents*, Wills 1730 -1750, 30:2, 270.

⁶⁵ Monmouth County Wills, Liber C, page 214.

SEABROOK, probably his son, for £15. JAMES died in 1735 in Woodbridge and HANNAH about 1745 in the same place; they were buried in the *First Presbyterian Churchyard* in Woodbridge. STILLWELL attributes 6 children to them.

- 6) REBECCA GROVER: married (1) WILLIAM BOWNE in 1704; he was the son of JAMES BOWNE and MARY STOUT (married 1665), daughter of RICHARD STOUT and PENELOPE VANPRINCIS. JAMES BOWNE was baptized in Salem, Massachusetts on 25 August 1636, 2nd son of WILLIAM and ANN BOWNE who arrived from Yorkshire, England in 1631; bought property at Gravesend, Long Island on 12 November 1646 and moved to Monmouth County in early 1665. WILLIAM BOWNE, the elder, died at Portland Point in 1677. REBECCA's husband WILLIAM BOWNE died in 1706; a Will bearing his name and dated 27 April 1706 mentions his wife REBECCA and an expected child as being the sole heirs. It states he was a mariner and owned property at Crosswicks; though it was not proved until 14 March 1717, an Inventory bearing the same name of *Middletown* was completed on 22 July 1707 which possibly corroborates a 1706 death. She died before 1720. In December 1720 the property REBECCA and her son inherited from her husband passed to JAMES GROVER, her brother, as the heir-at-law since both REBECCA and JAMES were dead.
- a) JAMES BOWNE: in land records is styled as the *heir* to the $\frac{1}{6}$ share of the two tracts meant for REBECCA. It is noteworthy that he is mentioned as her heir and not her son; perhaps he was a grandson. JAMES sold his share WILLIAM KINNAN also and then it becomes property of THOMAS HERBERT (JUNIOR) on the same date as the other transfers thus giving the latter title to both tracts in full. He died before 1720.

REBECCA married (2) JOSEPH BORDEN, her first cousin. They had 3 children. JOSEPH founded Bordentown and was the son of BENJAMIN BORDEN and ABIGAIL GROVER. REBECCA died before 1717. JOSEPH then married REBECCA'S sister SUSANNA.

- 7) DEBORAH GROVER: her share of parent's two Crosswicks tracts purchased by brother-in-law DAVID JOHNSTON. She married THOMAS SHEPHERD. *Their story continues in CHAPTER 9: SHEPHERD found in VOLUME 2.*

Husband: **SAFETY GROVER**

Born:	1658	Gravesend, New Netherlands
Married:	Circa 1678	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ ?
Died:	after 1726	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ.
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs?	
Father:	JAMES GROVER, III (July 1611 - December 1685)	
Mother:	REBECCA CHEESEMAN (Circa 1618 – January – October 1686)	

Wife: **MERCY BORDEN?**

Born:	Circa 1662	
Died:		
Buried:	<i>Grover Burial Ground</i> , Newman Springs?	
Father:	RICHARD BORDEN (<i>born 1600, Borden, Kent</i>)	
Mother:	JOAN FOWLE	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) MORDECAI GROVER	1684	
2) JAMES GROVER	1685?	Monmouth County, NJ.
3) ELIZABETH GROVER	1686?	
4) MARTHA GROVER	1687?	
5) HANNAH GROVER	ABOUT 1688	MIDDLETOWN, MONMOUTH COUNTY, NJ

In 1683 SAFETY was an *ensign* for the Monmouth County Militia at Middletown⁶⁶ and on 5 March 1693 he was commissioned a *Lieutenant* of a *Foot Company* at Middletown. Five years later he is being called *CAPTAIN SAFETY GROVER* as found on 11 November 1698 entry of the Middletown Book wherein he is 1 of 7 men selected to determine the rate to collect for support of the poor.

Little is definitively known about MERCY BORDEN, the wife of SAFETY GROVER. Some give her surname as GIBBENS but offer no proof. A MERCY GROVER witnessed the signing of the Will of THOMAS APPLEGATE, SENIOR of Middletown on 1 February 1699.⁶⁷ The BORDEN surname is based on tradition only; no proof has been found or offered. Supporting the tradition is the two BORDEN-GROVER marriages: ABIGAIL GROVER to BENJAMIN BORDEN and SAFETY GROVER (ABIGAIL's younger brother; both children of REBECCA CHEESEMAN and JAMES GROVER) to MERCY BORDEN; the appearance of the unusual given name of SAFETY in both the BORDEN and GROVER families in the 1600s; and the knowledge that SAFETY GROVER and SAFETY BORDEN were, respectively, grandson and great-grandson of WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, SENIOR. REBECCA (CHEESEMAN) GROVER named a son SAFETY GROVER while her daughter, ABIGAIL (GROVER) BORDEN named her son SAFETY BORDEN, making them *uncle* (born 1658) and *nephew* (born 1682). Some try to make them grandfather and grandson but it does not work. MERCY BORDEN, born 1662, was a contemporary of SAFETY GROVER and BENJAMIN BORDEN and a logical, but incorrect, assumption would be that she and BENJAMIN were siblings. Actually it appears she was more distantly related to the Borden family from Gravesend and Portsmouth. Two members of the family, GEORGE BORDEN and BRIANT

⁶⁶ Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, *Old Times in Old Monmouth*, (Freehold, NJ) 1887 (reprinted Genealogical Publishing Co., Baltimore, 1980) page 241.

⁶⁷ op.cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, 3: 265

BORDEN, emigrated to Boston by 1640. Unlike the Borden family that moved to Portsmouth because of the restrictive Puritanism of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, these two apparently were of a Puritanical mindset, as they remained in the that colony. While little is known about them, what is known is that the given name MERCY rose rapidly in popularity in the 17th century in one specific subgroup of both the English and the New English population: the Puritans. It is unlikely that the branches of the family that left the Puritans behind would name a child with a popular Puritan given name. There was a MERCY BORDEN involved in land transactions in Providence, Rhode Island at the same time that RICHARD BORDEN of Portsmouth was buying land there. Perhaps she left the rigid Puritanism of her parents for the liberal life with her distant relatives in Rhode Island. This MERCY BORDEN was born years before the MERCY BORDEN of this section, however the presence of that name, or knowledge of that name, in the BORDENS who moved to Gravesend then to Middletown is an fortunate find. Perhaps the MERCY of Providence had brothers or nephews who named daughters after her, and produced the MERCY BORDEN to marry SAFETY GROVER.

SAFETY BORDEN (son of BENJAMIN BORDEN and ABIGAIL GROVER) is a legatee of the Will of WILLIAM CHEESMAN, SENIOR written on 3 December, but the year given, 1753, is almost a century off. The earliest it could have been written was December 1682 when WILLIAM was in his 80s and SAFETY just 3 months old. Likewise, the proving of the Will on 30 January did not occur in 1759 but sometime in or shortly after 1686. WILLIAM is of New Brunswick Corporation, Middlesex County. The extract of the Will has *granddaughters MARY and MARTHA*, followed by *grandson SAFETY BORDEN*; it is not clear if all 3 had the same surname, or if the extractor made another error substituting *grandson* for *great-grandson* or if the word was used in a generic sense.⁶⁸ Despite the factors weighing against a BORDEN surname, I have decided to include a chapter on the BORDEN family in Volume 2. For one thing, I gathered that information trying to document MERCY as a BORDEN so it was at hand and also, if BORDEN does prove to be correct, that family is already researched and incorporated in this work on our British ancestral lines.

The Court of Common Sessions was held at Middletown on the 25th of March 1701. Those present included the *Governor of East Jersey*, COLONEL ANDREW HAMILTON; LEWIS MORRIS and SAMUEL LEONARD served as *Esquires of the Governor's Council*; the *Justices* were JEDEDIAH ALLEN and SAMUEL DENNIS; and GAWEN DRUMMOND was *Court Clerk*. It is from DRUMMOND's biased report describing the incident from which the following is taken. MOSES BUTTERWORTH was brought before the Court on charges of piracy. During the Court's examination of the accused, one SAMUEL WILLET interrupted the proceedings and declared *the Governor and the Justices have no authority to hold Court* and, furthermore, they *would do well to vacate*. When the Court continued its proceedings, WILLET summoned between thirty and forty men who appeared, armed and ready to force a vacation upon the Court. Two, RICHARD and BENJAMIN BORDEN, were wounded in the first "rescue" of BUTTERWORTH. The *Justices* ordered the *Constable* and the *Under-Sheriff* to retake the accused, which they did. In turn "several" armed men assailed the *Constable* and the *Under-Sheriff* and "rescued" BUTTERWORTH. The *King's Attorney General of the Province* and the *Justices* called for order and drew swords as soon as it became apparent their orders were not to be heeded. The crowd, now grown to *about one hundred*, rose up and assailed the Court members, shredded the Court's examination of BUTTERWORTH, disarmed the Court and arrested the officials while BUTTERWORTH was spirited away, not to be heard from again. *CAPT. SAFTIE GROVER* heads the list of names of the armed Middletown men, followed by the BORDENS, OBADIAH HOLMES, WILLIAM WINTER, ELISHA LAWRENCE, ZEBULON CLAYTON, and JAMES GROVER JUNIOR. One writer states that a reconstituted Court convened the following day with a newly appointed bench that brought the

⁶⁸ see Michael S. Cole, *Cowan Connections* (1994), pp. 374 – 380; online at: <http://www.thecolefamily.com/hobby/borden.htm>

offenders before it and levied fines. The actions of the reconstituted Court do not appear in the official Court minutes; unfortunately the actual proceedings of this Court are not clearly stated. A “Court” that had no basis in law may have been reconstituted with the opposition party seated – those fined were the Officers of the Court that had been arrested the previous day. Unable or unwilling to pay their fines, the prisoners were remanded to jail.

The *Governor*, the two *Justices*, the *King's Attorney General* and the *Secretary* as well as the *Court Clerk* and the *Under-Sheriff* were held prisoner four days before being released, without further action, on the 29th. This reason for their release is unknown, their jailers may have succumbed to threats of retaliation or the surreptitious fines of the 26th may have been ordered as a monetary amount and, failing that, a jail sentence that was fulfilled by the 29th. The fact that no other official Court proceedings for this session were recorded mean that the actions taken in the name of the Court once the magistrates had been taken captive were refused to be recognized as valid.

Nothing else is heard in the court records of this incident but it is notable that the next Court Sessions to be held in Middletown, for which there are records, was on 28 February 1704 at which time OBADIAH BOWNE and GEORGE ALLEN were *Judges*. Both men were listed as being part of the armed Middletown men who imprisoned the Court officials three years earlier. The colony had transitioned from a Proprietary to a Royal colony during this period when no Court was called at Middletown.

There is little evidence to suggest that MOSES BUTTERWORTH had any significant connection to the men of Middletown, so what prompted such actions? The underlying cause was rooted in politics, with nationality playing a supporting role. Middletown had been founded by twelve men, most from Hempstead on Long Island, most English, though not Anglican as some have written, but Baptists. Middletown had been far-and-away the most influential town in the area at first and the base of the “English Party.” Freehold, founded some years later, had steadily increased in size and influence. With a strong Scottish presence, Freehold had become the center of the “Scottish Party.” Both parties vied for seats on the Provincial Council and in the 1690s the Scottish Party grew to dominate the Council. Friction between the Scottish Party members from Freehold and the English Party members from Middletown escalated; the situation echoed the friction between their homelands across the Atlantic. The tension was further aggravated when the Scottish COLONEL ANDREW HAMILTON was appointed *Governor*. As this struggle for dominance increased, a confrontation was inevitable. The holding of the Court Session in Middletown, power base for the English Party, with both *Governor* and *Court Clerk* presiding being Scotsman, may have only been a very poor choice had it not been for the presence of LEWIS MORRIS who had been appointed *Esquire of the Governor's Council*. MORRIS, in an earlier inept political move, had penned a letter to an influential person in England, in his bid for a political appointment. This letter disparages the inhabitants of Middletown for several paragraphs and described the residents of Middletown as *perhaps the most ignorant and wicked people in the world*. The English Party, being well-aware of this letter and seeking to retaliate, found an excuse to assert their authority in the BUTTERWORTH proceedings, which they did, flagrantly, and incidentally, successfully.

In 1701 and again in 1727 he is referred to as *CAPTAIN SAFETY GROVER* however no source has been found to document his appointment as a *CAPTAIN*.

SAFETY and his wife would come to own well over 100 acres of land in Monmouth. On 26 April 1680 SAFETY GROVER and his wife received a Warrant to Survey up to 120 acres as allowed under the *Concessions and Agreements* of February 1665 for each head of a family; the tract or tracts had to be located, purchased from the natives, surveyed and recorded before true ownership was realized. This is accompanied with a notation that he is, or this is, *First purchaser of Navesinks Midleton*. Perhaps it was meant to convey that this would be *his* first purchase. On 10 September 1685 another Warrant was issued for surveying up to 120 acres. This warrant became reality with three deeds

recorded on 21 July 1686 on page 358 of Deed Book A issued by the Proprietors of East Jersey: 68 acres south of his father's land in Middletown, 32 acres southwest of his father's on the Navesink River and 20 acres west of his father's on the *East side of Shoal Harbor*. Each of these tracts bordered land owned by his father and possibly represents the three usual tracts of home lot, meadowland and upland. Governor's account book for quit rents reflects his being responsible to pay on just 120 acres as of 15 October 1686. An accompanying notation that *By standing out in the hands of ditto* is unexplainable. SAFETY added to this initial land several times over the years: on 8 March 1691 he purchased twenty acres from RICHARD HARTSHORNE; in early 1711 he bought three acres on the east side of Shoal Harbor from ELISHA LAWRENCE for £3 and then added an adjacent acre to this tract in February 1711 when he, now a *Gentleman* of Middletown, paid £3 for meadowland to EDWARD TAYLOR, *yeoman* of Freehold; he may have purchased a 2nd Shoal Harbor tract from ELISHA LAWRENCE in 1717; and on 5 December 1720 he, along with his sister HANNAH'S second husband WILLIAM WINTER, bought ten acres that was split off from the much larger seven hundred fifty acre tract owned by GAWIN DRUMMOND of "Loch Arbor" (also referred to as Loch Harbor, Locharbor, Locharbour and Lochaber, located between Tinton Falls and Eatontown), *Gentleman*. This last tract, in which again SAFETY is coined *Gentleman* and WILLIAM as a *yeoman*, both of Middletown, sold for £5 had been *formerly THOMAS COOPER*'s but was *bought by DRUMMOND of OBEDIAH BOWNE*, 21 Aug 1714. The phrase *to be taken up in right of his Proprietary* appears in this deed but the extracted text does not clearly identify exactly who is meant by *his* in that phrase. Recall that DRUMMOND was the *court clerk* held prisoner by the armed Middletown men, with SAFETY as CAPTAIN, in 1701. WILLIAM WINTER signed a quit-claim deed to SAFETY on 5 April 1722 for the western half of a ten acre tract that had been surveyed by JACOB DENNIS. This tract measured twelve chains long by five chains in depth and was bordered by lands as follows: to the east by THOMAS HERBERT, to the south by BENJAMIN COOPER and to the west by two or more tracts: the northernmost owned by WILLIAM and SAFETY and the remainder being GROVER'S and THROGMORTON'S tracts; no mention is made of a neighbor to the north.⁶⁹ A possible second quit-claim deed signed by WILLIAM WINTER for his share of a tract transferring ownership to SAFETY GROVER which was recorded 5 April 1752 and acknowledged 28 February 1758.⁷⁰ It must be kept in mind that the date of the recording of a deed with the county court is often many years after the date of execution of a deed because such a proceeding may only be required upon a subsequent transfer of the property involved. These two together may represent transfer of the whole of the ten acre tract as originally surveyed or may reference the same tract.

The deed of sale of a lot of *about thirty acres* describes it as containing a mill (type not specified), a house and barn plus an orchard. It is not clear if this was one of those mentioned in the previous section or yet another, undiscovered by this author, purchase. This tract was sold to THOMAS LUFBURROW and subsequently inherited by his son MATTHEW LUFBURROW of Middletown. This MATTHEW left to his wife for the *benefit of their four children*. These deeds were destroyed by British soldiers who passed through Middletown between 13 June and 5 July 1778; in September of that year, JAMES, the *son and heir* of SAFETY GROVER testified to these facts so as to establish ownership and, further, released all rights to the land to the executors of MATTHEW LUFBURROW: JOHN STILLWELL and (as written by the source) SARAH GROVER (SARAH STILLWELL LUFBURROW). This indicates that records that survived the British included the record of SAFETY GROVER'S purchase as well as his Will disposing of it. In 1814, this statement proved invaluable to JOHN LUFBURROW, the eldest son of MATTHEW LUFBURROW and, apparently, the sole owner when

⁶⁹ Loose Deeds, New Jersey Archives, obverse states it was recorded on 28 February at Perth Amboy in Book R2, p 435.

⁷⁰ Richard S. Hutchinson, *East New Jersey Land Records, 1757 – 1763 (Books I2 and K2)* (Lewis, DE: Colonial Roots, 2005) page 144; specifically Book K2, page 435.

his ownership was challenged by a 1791 transaction in which *SARAH COVENHOVEN* of Middletown attempted to sell this land. This sale was predicated upon the production of *indisputable title given by the Executrix of MATTHEW LUFBURROW, deceased* according to a notice published in the *Brunswick Gazette* on 22 March of that year.⁷¹

SAFETY also was involved in the settling of several estates: one of the first came in early 1688 when he served as a bondsman for the estate of RICHARD GARDINER, his brother-in-law. His sister HANNAH GARDINER was the administratrix of the estate. He was a witness to the signing of the Will of RICHARD SADLER on 21 July 1688. The following year saw one MERCY GROVER *witness* the will of THOMAS APPLEGATE, SENIOR of Middletown. Signed on 1 February 1699, MERCY was probably SAFETY'S wife as this name is infrequently encountered making it unlikely another person with the same name lived in the area. On 10 April 1695 SAFETY was one of four men that valued the personal estate of MATHIAS MOUNT of Middletown at £29 5s 11p. Before this he traveled to Perth Amboy twice to have Letters of Administration issued for the estate and after this his name is frequently found in the filed accounting summaries for the estate. SAFETY testified to the veracity of the nuncupative Will (1 November 1703) of Middletown inhabitant EDMOND SMITH on 14 April 1704. In 1726 he was, again, a bondsman, this time for one JAMES GROVER, possibly his own son as not much is known about JAMES. The inventory for the estate of WILLIAM COVENHOVEN of Middletown, dated 6 November 1742 includes bonds from *SAFETY GROVER and JAMES GROVER, JR.*, however no date is mentioned for the execution of the bonds. Due to the presence of the COVENHOVEN surname it is possible that these bonds may be connected to the LUFBURROW property mentioned earlier.

Other instances that record the life of CAPTAIN SAFETY GROVER include being chosen by JOHN SWINY, son of THURLOGH and MARY SWINY, to be one of his *guardians*. The other was WILLIAM LAWRENCE JUNIOR. SAFETY'S parents were the executors of the SWINY estate. JOHN SWINY later moved to Burlington County.⁷² On 26 July 1684 SAFETY GROVER and RICHARD HARTSHORNE are found as the only votes opposing a law banning swine from being allowed to run-at-large in the Middletown commons. SAFETY executed an affidavit attesting that he was forty-nine years old which he signed on 26 April 1721. The reason for this affidavit is unknown but it places his year of birth fourteen years later, in 1672. Additional records have SAFETY serving as a *juryman* on 27 February 1721; and his appointment in 1724 to the post *Overseer of the Highways* by the Court at Middletown.

The Will of DANIEL HERBERT, dated 11 August 1747, of Middletown stipulates that his wife AMY is to keep the goods *given her by her grandfather, SAFETY GROVER*. Mention is also made of two minor children of DANIEL and AMY: JONATHON and MARY HERBERT and DANIEL's widowed mother MARY COOPER.⁷³ Just how this granddaughter is related to SAFETY is unclear at this time. A sixth child, a daughter named ESTHER GROVER who married SAMUEL BROWNE, is sometimes reported.

⁷¹ LUFBURROW website published at rootsweb.com

⁷² Edwin Salter, *A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties*, (Bayonne, NJ: F. Gardner & Son, Publishers; 1890), page lvii.

⁷³ Monmouth County Book of Wills, Liber E, page 82.

ISSUE:

- 1) MORDECAI GROVER: not researched. A claim made by STILLWELL that the REBECCA GROVER who married JOSEPH STOUT was *probably a granddaughter of SAFETY GROVER*,⁷⁴ with the information that follows, leads to the conclusion that MORDECAI was the father of REBECCA.
- 2) JAMES GROVER: was indicted for fornication in 1733; his father helped him to post a bond to remain out of prison. In 1754 he was appointed a justice and was suspected of being a Tory in 1777 for which he was jailed in Bordentown pending an interview with the Governor and his council. He obtained a license to marry LYDIA BOWNE on 29 November 1752. The *Grover Burial Ground* in Newman Springs has two old grave markers bearing the names JAMES and LYDIA GROVER but no legible dates. Created by JAMES' grandfather of the same name, it's quite possibly their graves. He married (2) SARAH STILLWELL, widow of MATTHEW LUFBORROW, before 1778 in Middletown. SARAH GROVER and JOHN STILLWELL were the executors of MATTHEW LUFBORROW's estate in 1778. In a conveyance, on record at Freehold, dated 1778, JAMES GROVER, of Middletown, son and heir of SAFETY GROVER, released certain lands to SARAH GROVER and JOHN STILLWELL, executors of MATTHEW LUFBURROW.⁷⁵ The relationship between Sarah and JOHN STILLWELL is uncertain. Confounding the picture is the *SARAH COVENHOVEN* who attempted to sell LUFBORROW land in 1791; she is not identified in any manner other than to state her name – how this person came to believe she owned the land or had the right to sell it is not dealt with.
JAMES GROVER, of Middletown, signed his will on 6 July 1780 which mentioned: wife SARAH, and gave legacies to DANIEL, HERBERT, GROVER and JOHN, sons of WILLIAM TAYLOR; EDWARD TAYLOR, son of WILLIAM TAYLOR, deceased; HESTER TAYLOR, wife of WILLIAM TAYLOR, of Freehold; and various others, by which I infer that he died childless. He left a 100 acre tract on Shrewsbury River to the Middleton Baptist Church.
- 3) ELIZABETH GROVER: married JOHN BOWNE.
- 4) MARTHA GROVER: married THOMAS WALTON around 1706. THOMAS was the son of THOMAS WALTON (born circa 1672 in Dover, Staten Island (Richmond County), NY) and REBECCA MARY LAWRENCE. THOMAS died in 1728 in NY. One researcher believes MARTHA also married SAFETY BORDEN (born 6 September 1682 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ; died November 1757), her first cousin, in Bordentown, Burlington County, NJ but this is incorrect; SAFETY BORDEN married MARTHA CHEESEMAN.⁷⁶
 - a) MARTHA WALTON: born 1707; married JOHN STEVENSON 21 April 1739 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ.
 - b) RICHARD WALTON: born 1708; married ANN CARLISLE circa 1733 in Monmouth County, NJ; RICHARD died 4 June 1774 in Crosswicks, Burlington County, NJ.
 - i) WILLIAM WALTON: born 1734 on Staten Island (Richmond County) NY.
 - ii) THOMAS WALTON: born 1735.
 - iii) MATTHEW WALTON: born 1736.
 - iv) JEREMIAH WALTON: born 1737.
 - v) JOHN WALTON: born 1739.
 - vi) HANNAH WALTON: born 1740.
 - vii) MARTHA WALTON: born 1742.
- 8) HANNAH GROVER: married WILLIAM TAYLOR in 1708 at Middletown. *Their story continues on page 214 in CHAPTER 8: TAYLOR.*

⁷⁴ op.cit., Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 4, p. 335.

⁷⁵ Monmouth County Conveyances, Liber X, p. 250

⁷⁶ Jerry Cox, website published at rootsweb.com.

BACKGROUND III

THE MONMOUTH PATENT AND MIDDLETOWN TOWNSHIP

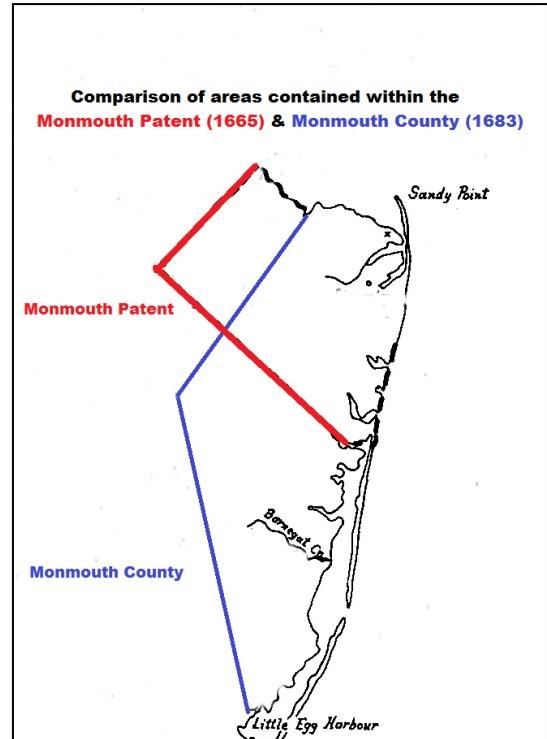
The *Navesink Patent* was issued on 8 April 1665; it was, less frequently, referred to as the *Sandy Hook Patent*.

The territory was called the *Navesink Tract*. In 1675 the land was divided into 2 townships and the *Patent* became, somewhat oddly, the *Middletown and Shrewsbury Counties Patent*. In 1683 the East Jersey proprietary government divided East New Jersey into 4 counties: Bergen, Essex, Middlesex and everything south of Middlesex became Monmouth County. That is why the *Monmouth Patent* is dated almost 2 decades before Monmouth County existed and why *Monmouth Patent* was much smaller than *Monmouth County*. The western third of the *Patent* became part of Middlesex County while the Shrewsbury Township created under the *Patent* was enlarged in 1693 to include all the additional land in the south of the *County*.

The *Patent* of April 1665 names 12 Patentees from Gravesend including our ancestor JAMES GROVER. Nine Patentees actually moved to Monmouth while the other 3 invested in the venture but remained in Gravesend. According to a document written by

WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JUNIOR in 1727, the 1665 Patent, issued by the GOVERNOR of New York, was reconfirmed by the GOVERNOR of East New Jersey, PHILIP CARTERET in 1672. His *Confirmation of Rights* contained only 6 names: JOHN BOWNE, RICHARD HARTSHORNE, JAMES GROVER and JONATHON HOLMES, *Patentees* and JAMES ASHTON and JOHN HANSE, *Associates*.¹ The patent extended west from Sandy Hook to the mouth of the Raritan, thence 25 miles up the Raritan (ending near the town of the same name), then running a course southwest for 12 miles, then southeast for 25 to Barnegat and then north along the coast back to Sandy Hook; it encompassed most of the present counties of Somerset, Middlesex and Monmouth. One share cost £4 and that's the amount invested by our ancestor JAMES GROVER. All *original patentees* owned at least one share for which you received 500 acres plus allowances for an additional 120 acres for each qualified family member and 60 acres for each servant; this last had to be turned over to the servant upon expiration of their term of service of which 4 years was the maximum allowed. Many of the earliest inhabitants became acquainted with the *Tract* through the vigorous efforts of land speculators to secure settlers through their Rhode Island Monmouth Association, active since 1664 (and one of the speculated sources for the name given to the *Patent*).

The issuance of the *Monmouth Patent* unwittingly created a legal mess because, unknown to RICHARD NICOLLS, the Royal Deputy-Governor commissioned by JAMES, DUKE OF YORK to govern and settle the province, the DUKE also granted the territory of colonial New York between the Hudson and Delaware Rivers to the LORDS BERKELEY and CARTERET as the Provincial colony of New Jersey

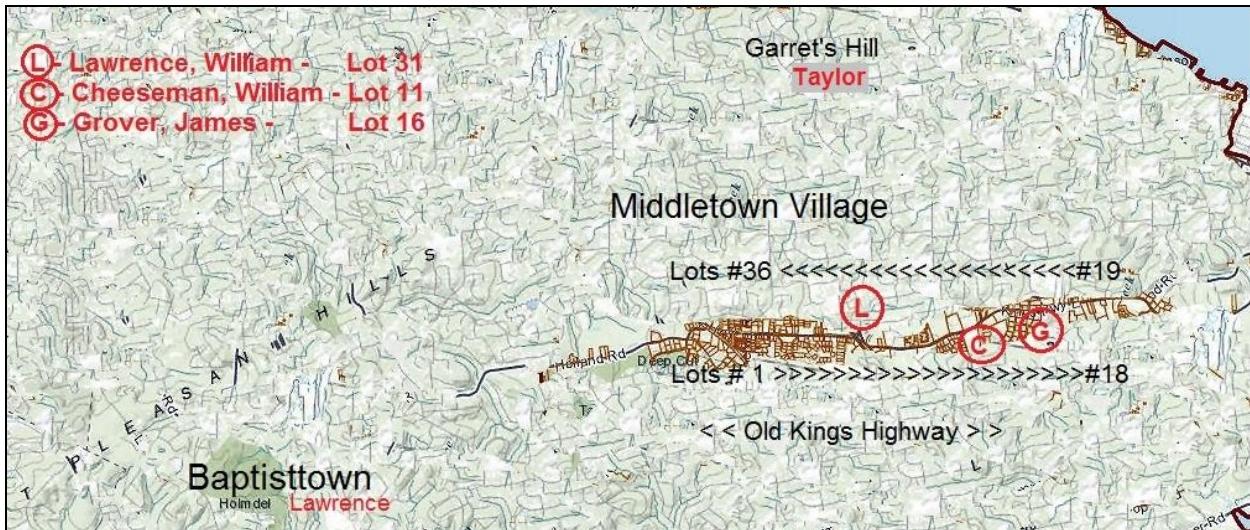


¹ George Stillwell, *Historical and Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 1 (NY: 1903) p. 220.

with rights to settle the province, levy taxes, establish a court system and govern to the extent allowed under English law by 2 deeds on 23 & 24 June 1664. While the *Monmouth Patent* was dated *after* the grant to BERKELEY and CARTERET, NICOLLS was not informed of this or ordered to *not* govern and settle that part of colonial New York that had been granted to the LORDS PROPRIETOR, effectively creating two legal governments for New Jersey. As a Royal appointee, GOVERNOR NICOLLS collected a yearly salary plus a few financial bonuses coming directly from the colonial residents. The LORDS PROPRIETOR made *their* money *solely* from the residents. The main sources were monies raised by levying taxes, collecting quit-rents, granting land warrants, recording land surveys and deeds, making assessments for colonial improvements such as road and bridge building and collecting the fines assigned by their appointed judges.

Any measure that lessened the financial burden of prospective settlers also benefitted the Royal Governor by fulfilling his job duty to *settle* the wild areas of the colony. Accordingly, the terms of the *Monmouth Patent* were extremely favorable to the settlers – no yearly quit-rents assessed and a large degree of self-government. These same terms were an anathema to the LORDS PROPRIETOR because they eliminated a significant percentage of the anticipated quit-rents and limited their ability to assess taxes, create courts and make their venture a profitable one. When the LORDS tried to get those who settled under the terms of the *Monmouth Patent* to accept their less favorable provincial rule, including paying an annual quit-rent on all property owned and to surrender their right to self-government, the *Patentees* balked. These disagreements took decades to work out – were monies owed to New York (a colonial government created by the DUKE that issued the *Patent* for part of the colony) or New Jersey (a proprietary government created by the DUKE to govern the severed portion of New York colony) or, as the *Patentees* maintained, not payable at all under the terms of the *Patent*?

MIDDLETOWN VILLAGE



The settlers decided to locate Middletown village along an east-west stretch of the *Minisink Path* which was widened to 99' (6 rods) and christened *the King's Highway*. The design followed the New England system: settlers lived on their *town lots* of 10 to 32 acres, each fronting the King's Highway. It is unclear why there was a 3-fold difference in lot size and how the lots were assigned remains a mystery too. The rest of their land was the outlying meadows, farmlands, salt marshes, etc. The 36 town lots straddled the King's Highway with number 1 on the south side of Kings Highway, beginning at the west end of town. Lots numbering up to 18 proceeded eastward along the south side where, at the east end of town, the numbering crossed to the north side of King's Highway with

number 19 at the east end and the number progressed to 36 along the north side until the west end of town, the starting point, was reached. Lot # 36 on the north side of the street was opposite # 1 on the south side at the west end of town. Once laid out, the lots were distributed on 30 December 1667 and Middletown was officially born. As well as being one of the *Patentees* of Monmouth County, JAMES GROVER was also one of the 36 founders of Middletown; JAMES received town lot #16 (**G**) on the south side of Kings Highway near the eastern end of town. Two other direct ancestors were also founders and they received lots as follows: WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR town lot #31 (**L**) and WILLIAM CHEESEMAN town lot #11 (**C**). The day following the distribution of lots JAMES was appointed to survey the lots and he appears in records a week later as the Middletown town clerk.² Each founder also received a field lot on 30 December; 29 field lots were *in the Poplar field and Mountany field* and were numbered in a similar manner, that is beginning on the south side of the 33' cartway that ran the length of the fields with 1 at the west end heading east to the end of the field then crossing the cartway to the north side, the numbers continued heading east to west so that 1 and 29 were opposite each other at the west end of the field. JAMES GROVER, SENIOR received lot #15; WILLIAM CHEESEMAN received lot #22; and WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR received lot #28. Two of the remaining 7 lots stuck out from the southeast corner of the Poplar field while the other 5 were “*by chonesis superius Run.*”³ The remaining part of the 500 acres coming to JAMES was located just north of Red Bank at Shrewsbury or Tinton Falls sometime before 1673.⁴ Some of the disputes between the Monmouth Patentees and the Lords Proprietor were resolved by the *Confirmation of Rights* issued by GOVERNOR PHILIP CARTERET on 28 May 1672. In this GOVERNOR CARTERET confirmed to the Patentees, JAMES GROVER included, and Associates of the Towns of Middletown and Shrewsbury the privileges granted them by GOVERNOR NICOLLS on 8 April 1665.⁵ The *Confirmation* enshrined the terms of the *Monmouth Patent* in East New Jersey law. It also required the Patentees to surrender their claims under the Nicoll's Patent, some of which were now granted under the *Confirmation*. Specifically, the Patentees were free to dispose of all land within Monmouth County without interference from the Lords Proprietor; there is no imposition of any Church or clergy on the residents; their own Courts have primary jurisdiction on all cases under £10 without recourse to higher Courts, excepting criminal cases; both civil and military positions are to be appointed by the Governor from 2 candidates presented for each office elected by the *Patentees, Associates and Freeholders*; and they can make any and all laws needed as long as they keep with the *tenor of the Patent*. There elimination of all rents and taxes found in the *Monmouth Patent* was *not* confirmed.

GARRAT'S HILL: lying a couple miles northeast of the village was owned by EDWARD TAYLOR. It was here that his first home was built. His built his second home in the village around 1685 with the *Olde Tavern* built in front of it, closer to the highway, shortly thereafter but the location of both is disputed.

BAPTISTTOWN: now Holmdel, was populated at the same time as Middletown and was where our ancestor WILLIAM LAWRENCE lived. Indications are that two other ancestors, JAMES GROVER, SENIOR and WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, also settled there.

² George Stillwell, *Historical and Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2 (NY; 1906) pp. 150-1.

³ *op. cit.* Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2, pp. 150-1.

⁴ *supra* Nelson page 21.

⁵ "Grants and Concessions," p. 663; EJR, 3, 53; cited in NJA[1], 1, 88-9. This is another document of great historical significance, printed in full in the reference cited.

Cheeseman



Chesham: The primary industries in the 17th century and earlier were flour production, woodworking and weaving of wool. Baptist history records the Chesham, Tring and Berkhamsted Baptist congregations may date to 1640. A church building was in Berkhamsted no later than 1660 while available records place one on Broadway in Chesham in 1712. The Chesham church may have used the name General Baptist Chapel and today, its successor church, Broadway Baptist, still serves the Baptist community from the same location today.

Buckinghamshire: is northwest of, and borders Greater London with our family coming from the Chiltern district in the southeast, placing them about 35 miles from the city itself; close by today's standards but not-so-close in the 17th century.

Husband: **WILLIAM CHEESEMAN**¹

Born:

Married: 1627 England

Died: >1688 Middletown, Monmouth, East New Jersey

Father: JOHN CHEESEMAN (1580 – ?) son of WILLIAM CHEESEMAN (1526 – ?)

Mother: CONSTANCE HORSLEY (1582 – ?)

Wife: **MARTHA DORSETT**

Born: 1608 Cheltenham, Gloucestershire, England

Died: <1676 Middletown, Monmouth, East Jersey

Father: JAMES DORSETT (born 1582, Cheltenham?)

Mother: ELIZABETH

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) MARY CHEESEMAN	1630	England
2) MARTHA CHEESEMAN	1632	England
3) CATHERINE CHEESEMAN	1634	England
4) WILLIAM CHEESEMAN	1636	England
5) JOHN CHEESEMAN	1638	England
6) JOSEPH CHEESEMAN	1640	England
7) BENJAMIN CHEESEMAN	1642	England
8) SAMUEL CHEESEMAN	1644	England

WILLIAM's birth place is stated to be Chesham, Buckinghamshire, England, which is the same place that JAMES GROVER, III (who marries their daughter REBECCA) was born. How WILLIAM met MARTHA DORSETT from Cheltenham, about 75 miles west in Gloucestershire is not known. Customarily, the couple would have lived in or near the husband's hometown though this is not known for certain in this instance. That the CHEESEMAN and GROVER families would be closely connected through their travels to and in the New World does favor the supposition that they did indeed live in Chesham as did the GROVER family.

CLEARING UP A COUPLE MISTAKES

A proposed alternative birthplace for WILLIAM is Kings Lynn in Norfolk. Chesham seems the more likely correct choice, given that the WILLIAM CHEESEMAN who was baptized in Kings Lynn during 1606 is known to have died in 1653 in Stepney, Middlesex and was buried there on 11 March in the Saint Dunstan and All Saints Parish churchyard apparently never leaving England.² The CHEESEMAN family in Norfolk was associated with the village of Beeston All Saints and the section of Harpley called Saint Lawrence Close. Both are close to the town of Kings Lynn and the family probably had a small farm in the area. Where the connection between our ancestor and this family originated remains a mystery. William's father and grandfather may be from Snodland in County Kent.

¹ The following 2 sites at rootsweb.com have been the main source: *Descendants of John Cheeseman*; and *Descendants of James Dorset*; both lineages submitted by skywagon@earthlink.net

² Tracey Karcher, "William Cheeseman," <http://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Cheeseman-201>

Since records prove that our ancestor WILLIAM was living in Monmouth County long after 1653, we can discard that as a possible year of death. Since the 1653 year is connected to the 1606 birth that year must be discarded as well.

Mystery also surrounds the family on this side of the Atlantic as well. Some researchers have placed this family in New Jersey their whole lives, others place them in Gravesend on Long Island by 1628 when REBECCA was born; both statements are wrong. The sole European settlement in the New World from 1607 to 1620 was the Virginia colony. The earliest move would have been in the mid-1640s if they went to Long Island and the mid-1660s if they moved directly to Middletown Township in East New Jersey. Another frequently encountered mistake is WILLIAM'S year of death; this is often stated to be 1753 which is incorrect as this would have him passing away 148 years after marrying!

The patent for the town of Gravesend on Long Island was issued in December 1645; the only inhabitant in these parts before this was ANTHONY JANSEN VAN SALÉE *the Turk* who had been "banished" from New Amsterdam in 1639. The CHEESEMAN and GROVER families were definitely acquainted in England as WILLIAM and MARTHA'S daughter REBECCA CHEESEMAN married JAMES GROVER, probably in Chesham, and they had a couple of their children before moving to Gravesend on Long Island. It is quite possible that WILLIAM and MARTHA CHEESEMAN followed their daughter to Gravesend sometime shortly after its founding at the end of 1645. MARTHA'S brother, JAMES DORSETT who was born in 1609, shows up in Middletown Township during the early 1670s a few years after MARTHA and WILLIAM moved there. WILLIAM was alone by 1676 as he received a Proprietary Grant for just 120 acres, indicating no wife or minor children were with him at the time.

One of the first tasks of the new settlers was to clear and upgrade the path where the town would be located. As mentioned in the discussion about Middletown in Background 3, it was decided to locate the town along an east-west stretch of the Minisink Path which was widened to 99' (6 rods) and christened the Kings Highway. On 30 December 1667 WILLIAM CHEESEMAN received town lot #11; two other direct ancestors also received town lots – JAMES GROVER, SENIOR got lot #16 and WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR got lot #31 on the north side of Kings Highway. (see map on page 106). Other founders of Middletown that are mentioned in this book include CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE who led the first scouting expedition to the area, lot #28; RICHARD STOUT, lot #6; JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, lot #36 and OBADIAH HOLMES got lot #20. Each founder also received an out lot, 29 of which were located "*in the Poplar field and Mountany field*" and numbered in a similar manner, that is beginning on the south side at the west end of the field as follows: OBADIAH HOLMES, lot #6; JOHN BOWNE, lot #9; JAMES GROVER, SENIOR, lot #15; WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, lot #22; JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, lot #25; and WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR, lot #28. The lots were serviced by a 33' cartway running the length of the fields. Two of the remaining lots were on the southeast corner of the Poplar field while the other 5 were "*by chonesis supus Run.*"³ While these lots fulfilled the requirements set forth in the *Monmouth Patent*, several people, mostly Baptists, settled a few miles inland at Baptisttown (now Holmdel) – these included WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JAMES GROVER and most likely WILLIAM



³ op. cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2, pp. 150-1.

CHEESEMAN when taking into consideration the history of the Baptist Church at Middletown.

The Middletown Baptist Church started meeting in 1667, even before the town lots had been assigned. It was located in Baptists town and came to be called the Upper Meeting House when a second church, the Lower Meeting House, was built in Middletown later on. The original church is now the Holmdel Baptist Church. WILLIAM LAWRENCE and JAMES GROVER were two founders living in Baptists town while WILLIAM CHEESEMAN was another founder and it seems likely that he would have wanted to live close to the church. The church was formally constituted in 1688. A Baptist historian maintains that the CHEESEMAN family located in Upper Freehold first and later expanded to Jacobstown and Hightstown.⁴

On 4 January 1668 WILLIAM registers the ear mark for his cattle with the Middletown Town Clerk, JAMES GROVER, SENIOR. A Warrant for a Survey of 120 acres in Middletown was issued 20 November 1676 and the acreage confirms that WILLIAM was no longer married. On 3 May 1677 is recorded a deed for land in Monmouth purchased *from Indians* by WILLIAM. A Survey dated 7 May 1677 covered 162 acres in 5 separate parcels which were granted on 12 June. A 2nd Survey on 29 May 1679 covered half of the 24 acre grant received on 15 January 1679 and described the parcel as 12 acres of *boggy meadowland*; a 3rd Survey on 1 November 1679 covered the entire 24 acre grant at which time the rent was set at ½ schilling per year. WILLIAM appears in a schedule of quit rents for both parcels: 162 acres received on 4 June 1677 and 24 acres received in January 1679.⁵ Remember that the Monmouth Patent had no stipulation for yearly rents at all. A Warrant for a Survey was issued on 23 December 1685 for 100 acres; it is believed this was a resurveying of the 1676 grant.

GOVERNOR GAWIN LAWRY'S quit rent account book reflects the following for WILLIAM as of 15 October 1686: between 1670 and 1677 he had 24 acres and between 1678 and 1686 he had a total of 200 acres for which rents totaled £4.5; this he paid with a horse, valued at £3, plus £1.5 in cash. On 1 May 1688 the Proprietors issued a patent to WILLIAM CHEESEMAN of Middletown for 100 acres *at Naversinks*. Naversinks refers to the neck of land that Middletown was located on and was used generally to mean Middlesex Township which was the northern half of the *Monmouth Patent*. Surveyed on 9 June 1688, this tract was bordered on the west by unsurveyed land while on the north, east and south it was bordered by tracts owned by SAFETY GROVER and GEORGE MOUNT.⁶

WILLIAM was still living in 1686 because the GOVERNOR'S quit rent account book states if the person was dead on 15 October of that year, which his entry does not record. New Jersey Colonial Documents have his Will extracted but the years are almost a century off! WILLIAM CHEESMAN, SENIOR of *New Brunswick Corporation, Middlesex County* wrote his Will on 3 December, the year is given as 1753. It was proved 30 January, the year given is 1759. This is definitely the correct person as all 8 children are named as is his widow MARTHA. The extract incorrectly names CHARITY as a daughter; she was a daughter-in-law, married to WILLIAM JUNIOR. The executors were REVEREND JAMES CARMAN and JONATHON COMBS; his signing was witnessed by ISAAC HAGEWOUT and WILLIAM and JACOB OUKE. An inventory was completed by FREDERIC OUTGILT and DANIEL COLER (CARTER) the day before the Will was submitted for

⁴ Thomas S Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey* (Bar Press Publishing Company: Hightstown, NJ; 1904) pp.15, 18.

⁵ op.cit: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2, pp. 368-9, 387-8, 391, 396, 398, 400.

⁶ Patents and Deeds of New Jersey, 1664-1703, East Jersey Deeds, Liber C, Pages 50, 134. See Book (lower-case) L, p 258.

probate; the value of the estate was £225 2s 2d and included a Negro man (£35), Indian corn (£14 14s), a bond of DANIEL GRANDINE (£27 10s) and a debt of 5s 10d owed by SAMUEL CHEESEMAN.⁷

ISSUE:

The birth years noted have been estimated using the technique of MR. JOHNSON, author of The Descendants of JOHN CHEESEMAN on rootsweb.com, using 1628 as REBECCA'S year of birth. Specifically, he used an every-2nd-year formula, which is only a guess.

- 1) MARY CHEESEMAN:
- 2) MARTHA CHEESEMAN:
- 3) CATHERINE CHEESEMAN:
- 4) WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, JUNIOR: married CHARITY. *Continued on following page.*
- 5) JOHN CHEESEMAN:
- 6) JOSEPH CHEESEMAN:
- 7) BENJAMIN CHEESEMAN:
- 8) SAMUEL CHEESEMAN:

⁷ Monmouth County Wills, Liber G, p. 57.

Husband:	WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, JUNIOR ⁸	
Born:	1636	England
Married:		
Died:	1711 Middletown, Monmouth, East New Jersey	
Father:	WILLIAM CHEESEMAN	
Mother:	MARTHA DORSETT	

Wife's Name: **CHARITY**

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>
1. JOSEPH CHEESEMAN	5 October 1705
2. WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, III	
3. REBECCA CHEESEMAN	

WILLIAM CHEESEMAN apparently lived in Gravesend before moving to Baptisstown. At least one source states he was from *Long Island*. This meant he lived in Gravesend which was the source of the Long Island transplants. He probably moved to Middletown Township by 1677.

Their farm was on *Wekake Creek* near Holmdel. The creek flows north from the Holmdel area through Raritan Township. On 5 March 1696 he registered his ear-mark with JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR, Middletown Town Clerk. We know this is the son because this is a modification based on his father's 1668 ear mark. He was chosen to be constable of Middletown on 31 January 1698.⁹ WILLIAM was 1 of 436 subscribers to a statement published in the *New Jersey Gazette* in the late-17th century creating the *Associators of Retaliation* that would retaliate to any damages inflicted upon patriots by exacting damages, in equal measure, from any known Tory, refugee or *Pines Robber*.¹⁰ Two others were JAMES and SAMUEL DORSETT who may have been relatives.

One source states they originally settled in the Hightstown area and Upper Freehold, further west of Baptisstown but the known location of their farm places it in Baptisstown. Perhaps it would be descendants to move to these areas *and to the south in Jacobstown with members of the COXE and MOUNT families*.¹¹

WILLIAM of Middletown signed his Will 1 May 1711 in which he made the following bequests:

- To wife CHARITY my house plus 50 acres and upon her death to go to my son WILLIAM provided he pay my son JOSEPH £ 80;
- To wife CHARITY 4.5 acres of salt meadow at Wecack and upon her death to go to my son JOSEPH;
- To son WILLIAM 140 acres at east end of Middletown plantation and 4.5 acres of salt meadow at Wecack provided he pay my outstanding bill with the merchant JOHN BROWNE. If he

⁸ The following 2 sites at rootsweb.com have been the main source: *Descendants of John Cheeseman*; and *Descendants of James Dorset*; both lineages submitted by skywagon@earthlink.net

⁹ op.cit. Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Vol. 2, pp. 187, 193.

¹⁰ George C. Beekman, *Early Dutch Settlers of Monmouth County, New Jersey* (Freehold, NJ: Moreau Brothers Publishers; 1901) Appendix pages xvii - x.

¹¹ Thomas S Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey* (Bar Press Publishing Company: Hightstown, NJ; 1904) pp. 15, 18.

cannot pay the bill then my wife CHARITY is to sell enough of the property left to WILLIAM to pay the bill and the remainder is left to WILLIAM

The Will was proved 6 September 1711 and an inventory dated 15 September was filed which included the *home farm*, land at Wecack and the following:

Total	£ 70 18 06	and includes:
Pewter	02 02 00	
Bible and small book	00 06 00	
Cattle and household	68 10 06	

WILLIAM LAWRENCE, another ancestor, was one of three men completing the inventory.¹²

In 1714, CHARITY CHEESEMAN is listed as one of the mortgagors of JOHN BOWNE in an inventory of his estate and she is found as a member of the Middleton Baptist Church in the earliest records of 1712 and as late as June 1735.

Issue:

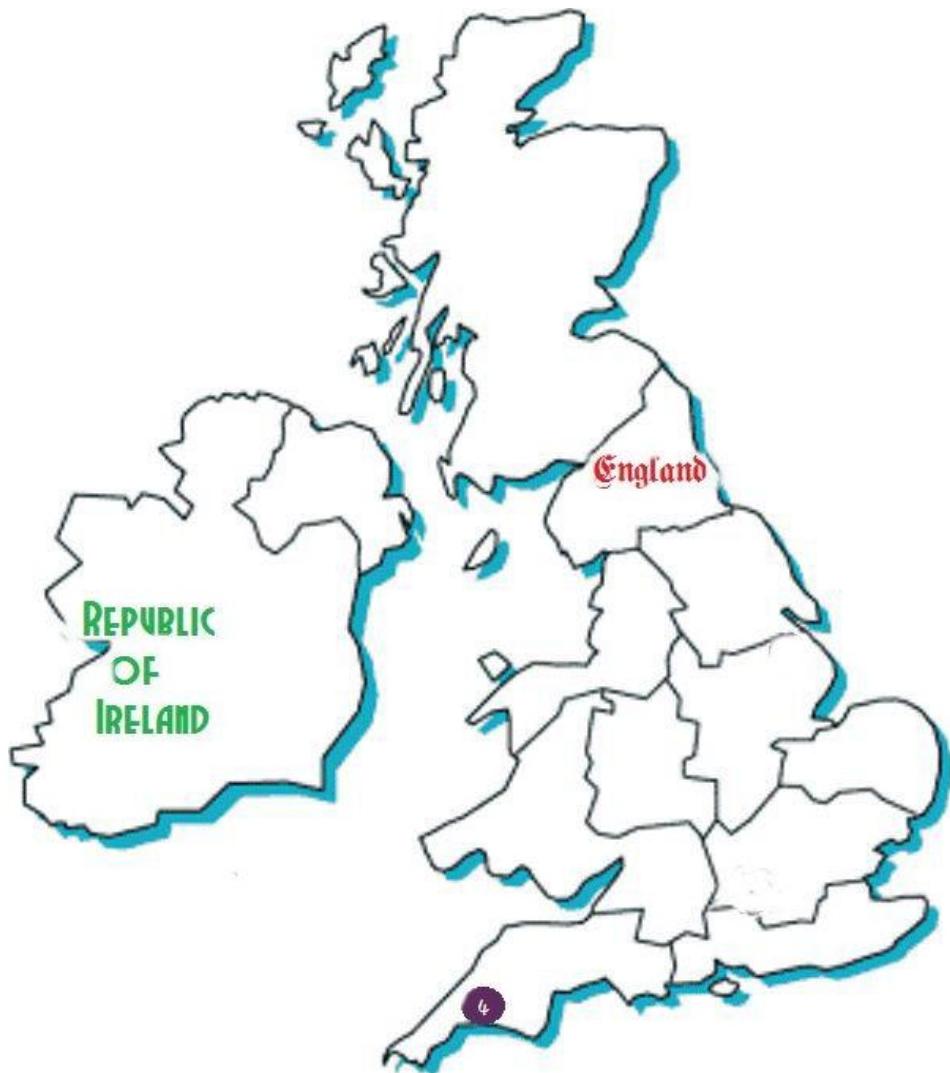
- 1) JOSEPH CHEESEMAN: born 5 October 1705. His wife was named HENDRICKJE. JOSEPH wrote his Will on 28 April 1774; it was proved 1 May 1783 in Upper Freehold.¹³ They had 4 daughters & a son:
 - a) LYDIA CHEESEMAN: married ____ McCLAIN; moved to Fayette & Washington Co. PA
 - b) CHARITY CHEESEMAN: born 13 March 1734. She married ____ GASTON, moved to Washington Co. PA
 - c) ELIZABETH CHEESEMAN: never married, moved to Washington County, PA
 - d) MARY CHEESEMAN: married ____ VAUGHN, moved to Washington County, PA
 - e) JOSEPH CHEESEMAN, JUNIOR: apparently had no issue.
- 2) WILLIAM CHEESEMAN, III: married, as *Junior*, by license dated 19 February 1748 to MARY ALDERS. Incorrectly found as WILLIAM CHEESEMAN JUNIOR in the extract of his Will dated 8 January 1759. He was then of the *south ward of Perth Amboy* and died within 2 weeks as his Will was proved 24 January 1759. Real estate included a 130 acre tract (£100), 10 acre farm (£250), a house on an acre (£50) and a personal estate of £560 4s 6d that included 5 negroes and a child (£125), 2 looking glasses (£1 11s), a silver watch (£5), a map of Amsterdam (4s) and bills, bonds and cash totaling £263 15s 8d.¹⁴
 - a) LYDIA CHEESEMAN
 - b) MARTHA CHEESEMAN
- 3) REBECCA CHEESEMAN: married JAMES GROVER around 1648. *Their story is continues on page 67 in CHAPTER 2: GROVER.*

¹² Monmouth County Wills, NJ Archives, Trenton; Liber I, p. 353 (also cited as same book & page of East Jersey Records)

¹³ Monmouth County Wills, NJ Archives, Trenton; reference number 4997-5000-M.

¹⁴ Monmouth County Wills, NJ Archives, Trenton; Liber G, p. 17.

Steepy



CORNWALL: is a county in the extreme southwest corner of England, the tip of a peninsula jutting out into the Irish Sea. A cursory search for the STEEPY surname in Cornwall turned up no leads. This location comes from one of several STEEPY pedigrees on Ancestry.com; unfortunately the writer offers no documentation. Like Devonshire to the east, tin and copper mines and fishing were the backbone of the economy for centuries.

STEEPY ANCESTRY

As you will read, it is thought this was a *locative* surname that is a surname derived from a specific place such as Steeplechase. Supposedly the ancestors of the STEEPY family arrived in England during the Norman Conquest of 1066. They were in the retinue of the soldier HENRI DE FERRIÈRES, son of a Norman noble, GUILLAUME DE FERRIÈRES, *Seigneur* of Ferrières and Chambrais. Ferrières-Saint-Hilaire is in the *Eure department* in *Haute-Normandie* (Upper Normandy) region and about midway between Paris and the far end of the Cotentin where the villages of Carteret and Barneville and the castle of Rozel are found on the coast opposite the Channel Islands as was discussed in the PERRIN section. GUILLAUME was the duke's *armorier* as well as his *Master of Horse*. Ferrières boasted of having the most important forge in all of Normandy and their large ironworks produced armor and weapons for centuries.

HENRI and his brother GUILLAUME brought with them many of the lesser Norman feudal lords who owed fealty to their father and hundreds of soldiers and support staff. HENRI and GUILLAUME performed stunningly at the Battle of Hastings but only HENRI lived to collect the rewards. He ultimately received 210 manors from KING WILLIAM throughout England and Wales for the service provided by his dead brother as well as his own contributions. As the eldest son of GUILLAUME was the rightful heir to some of these grants some sort of agreement between HENRI and GUILLAUME'S heir that was acceptable to KING WILLIAM had to be reached. It seems the descendants of the brothers came to an agreement whereby HENRI'S descendants got all the English and Welsh territory and GUILLAUME'S line became the *seigneurs* of Ferrières and Chambrais. The Norman HENRI DE FERRIÈRES became the English HENRY DE FERRERS.

The use of surnames was novel and, in fact, rare in the 11th century. What were coming into wider use were descriptive additions to given names. We are familiar with *patronymic* surnames in which the father's name is used as in ANTHONY JANSEN, or ANTHONY JAN'S son. Another type is occupational such as the owner of the mill named WILLIAM becomes WILLIAM MILLER or JOSEPH, the village's smith becomes JOSEPH SMITH. *Topographic* surnames come from a geographical feature, e.g. that guy lives on a hill becoming GUY HILL. The STEEPY surname appears to be *locative* or named for a place. HENRY DE FERRERS is an example as he was HENRI *from* Ferrières.

A lot of what follows is conjecture. To date, no one with the surname STEEPY has been found in England. The STEEPY ancestors are said to have lived on Stapleford Manor in the Melton district of northeast Leicestershire. Some have written that the STEEPY family actually *descends* from HENRY DE FERRERS but, unfortunately, evidence is lacking. It is much more likely that they were one of the many Norman families that came in his retinue. This is just one of seven places found with the name Stapleford so care must be taken to not confuse this manor with another as has often happened among the researchers encountered.



If I lived on the manor in the 11th century I would be BRIAN DE STAPLEFORD. Three changes happened on the way before DE STAPLEFORD became the surname STEEPY:

- The *DE* was dropped in the 15th century: BRIAN STAPLEFORD;
- STAPLEFORD was corrupted to *STEEPYFORD*: BRIAN STEEPPYFORD; and
- STEEPPYFORD was shortened: BRIAN STEEPPY.



The order of these changes cannot be dated accurately but a couple of logical possibilities can be made. The dropping of DE happened throughout England in the 1400s. The other two alterations are impossible to date as we have no information concerning a move to Cornwall. If our line was in or near Stapleford Manor for several generations, the change in spelling may have been necessitated by an increasing population, all having the same surname. But if the Cornish ancestors came from a cadet branch of the family, the change could have come about when they moved or shortly thereafter. Since the name Stapleford

had little meaning to those in the extreme southwest of the country, it would make sense to change it – perhaps the family lived near a steep cliff or mountain or it just was easier to say they lived near something steep rather than trying to explain where Stapleford manor was! Searching for families with any variation of the name in Cornwall has not been productive at all. In fact, searching all of England has been an exercise in frustration. Alternative spellings encountered for *Stapleford* include *Stapilford* and *Stapulford* while for *STEEPY* the spellings *STEEPE* and *STEEPEY* are frequently encountered but *STAPIL* and *STAPUL* are also found.

With the move to the New World, the possibility of a spelling change was great – JANSEN changed to JOHNSON in one branch, MADDALENA became MATELENA in Trenton and MADDELENA in New Haven, and SCHMID became SMITH.

Identifying our ancestors of this line may prove impossible if only because of the wide variety of possible spellings and lack of being able to identify any one with the surname in England. Assuming that an ancestor was identified, the furthest back in history we could hope to trace the line would be the 11th century. Why? If the surname is locative, the location came about after 1066. Before that, who knows what was used in Upper Normandy. But, I'll settle for a line dating to 1066.

If it does turn out that we do descend from the FERRERS, every time you go to a county fair, the boardwalk or an amusement park, you'll be reminded of this connection as an extremely distant relative, GEORGE WASHINGTON GALE FERRIS, JUNIOR invented the Ferris Wheel for the 1893 Chicago World's Fair!



To date, my research has turned up two companies peddling an alleged *STEEPY* Coat-of-Arms and both use the same design for the *STAPLEFORD Coat-of-Arms*. As you know, a *blazon* is granted to a specific person, not a family or a manor meaning there is no such thing as “*a STEEPY Coat-of-Arms*”! Research in the College of Arms has turned up no grants for any version of this surname.



Husband's Name: **RICHARD STEEPY, SENIOR**¹

Born:	circa 1725	Cornwall, England ²
Married:		
Died:	1793	Middlesex County, NJ
Buried:		

Wife's Name:

Born:	
Died:	
Buried:	

Issue:	Born:	Where:
1) MARYANN STEEPY	24 November 1746	Cornwall, England
2) RICHARD STEEPY	1749	Cornwall, England

RICHARD was living in New Jersey by the mid-1750s as he is mentioned in the Will of JUDGE THOMAS LEONARD in 1755 wherein the JUDGE makes the following bequest:

To CHARITY, one other Daughter of my said Nephew WHITEHEAD LEONARD and the aforesaid DEBORAH DOUGHTY, all that my house and lott of land lying and being in Kingstown aforesaid where RICHARD STEPPEY now Dwells, with the Hereditaments and Appurtenances thereunto belonging and their heirs & assigns forever but to hold them the said CHARITY LEONARD and DEBORAH DOUGHTY as tenants in common and not as joint tenants.

Kingstown, then in Monmouth County, is now Kingston and, depending on the location of the JUDGE'S house and lot could be in either Middlesex or Somerset County. The Tax Lists of September 1772, November 1778, October 1780 and June 1789 appear to list RICHARD STEEPY taxed on property in New Brunswick, "S Wd" (South ward?), Middlesex County. The spelling of the name is neither consistent, nor correct, over the years but each version is a close approximation of RICHARD STEEPY, and the lists consistently show him in the same place. The June 1793 Tax List has him about 20 miles south in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County. He could have died anytime in 1793 as it is not uncommon to find a recently-deceased person's name in the Tax List, often an indication that the estate has yet to be formally opened.

Issue:

1) MARYANN STEEPY: married OKEY HENDRICKSON (born 24 November 1734, New Brunswick, Middlesex Co, NJ) circa 1768 in NJ. They lived in the Hightstown area until about 1780 when they moved to Lewis County, Kentucky where they lived in Poplar Flats. MARYANN died there in 1826 and OKEY on 1 March 1830. Six known children; some researchers name three additional children born before 1769 without a change in the year they married.

¹ V. Everett Boyer, Boyer, Van Hise, Joslin, Krause Relatives, www.rootsweb.com, 14 September 2004; evboyer@aol.com

² Steepy Family Group Sheets from Ancestry.com. No documentation given for Cornwall.

- a) DANIEL HENDRICKSON: born 6 January 1769, Hightstown, Middlesex County, NJ. Died 26 June 1863, Poplar Flats, Lewis County, Kentucky.
 - b) SARAH HENDRICKSON: born circa 1771, Hightstown.
 - c) RICHARD HENDRICKSON: born 1775, died 1777.
 - d) JOHN HENDRICKSON: born 1779, died 1786.
 - e) ELIZABETH HENDRICKSON: born circa 1781, Poplar Flats.
 - f) WILLIAM HENDRICKSON: born 22 August 1786, Poplar Flats; died 8 November 1867, Saint Paul, Minnesota.
- 2) **RICHARD STEEPY, JUNIOR:** married **DEBORAH** around 1776. *Their story is continued on the following page.*

Husband's Name: **RICHARD STEEPY**³

Born: circa 1749 England
Married: circa 1776 NJ?
Died: 1836 Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
Buried:

Father: RICHARD STEEPY (1721 – 1793)
Mother:

Wife's Name: **[DEBORAH]**

Born: circa 1750
Died: circa 1840 NJ
Buried:

Issue:	Born:	Where:
3) JOHN STEEPY	1778	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
4) MARGARET STEEPY	1779	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
5) ELIZABETH STEEPY	1781	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
6) RICHARD STEEPY	1785	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
7) PHOEBE STEEPY	1790	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ
8) MARY STEEPY	1792	Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, NJ

Information is scarce about DEBORAH, the wife of our subject. It is difficult to determine if our subject was born in Cornwall or New Jersey. The earliest he can be shown to possibly be in New Jersey is 1755, assuming he accompanied his father; but this doesn't mean that is the earliest possible year, only that it is the earliest year in which documentation exists placing his father in New Jersey. It is only slightly more certain that he was married in New Jersey; that is based on the assumption that all of his children were born in Monmouth County tend to favor a New Jersey marriage.

RICHARD STEEPY appears to have been affiliated with the Upper Freehold Baptist Church for, in the Church Books, are found the following entries:

30 March 1791: Apr [Appear?] THOMAS HERBERT & RIC'D. STEEPE gave a relation of Ye work of Grace upon their Hearts. Ye next day they were baptiz'd and rec'd Members of Ye Church.

9 August 1793: Brother JAMES TAPSCOTT to Adminish Brethern RICHARD STEEPY and THOMAS HARBOR for their duty in not attending upon Devine Worship and the business of the Church.⁴

A third entry may belong to his son of the same name:

RICHARD STEEPE Baptized April 3d 1785 Deceased Feb. 1856⁵

³ V. Everett Boyer, Boyer, Van Hise, Joslin, Krause Relatives, www.rootsweb.com, 14 September 2004; evboyer@aol.com

⁴The Church Book of the Upper Freehold Baptist Church: A copy of the original records of Church Meetings 1766 – 1805.

On 11 January 1814 RICHARD purchased land from his son JOHN STEEPY and his wife THEODOCIA allowing them to move to Fayette County, Pennsylvania.⁶ This tract was *on the south side of Holman's meadow* and measured 58 $\frac{24}{100}$ acres.

RICHARD died in early 1836. On the 2nd of April in 1836, the land purchased from JOHN in 1814 was sold to DEBORAH STEEPY, thought to be RICHARD'S widow. The eleven grantors were their children and their spouses or, in one case, grandchildren: RICHARD and MARY PARKER, MARGERY and ABRAHAM VANHISE, RICHARD and CATHERINE STEEPY, WILLIAM and PHEBE JOHNSON, ISAAC and the two daughters of their deceased daughter ELIZABETH and her husband OAKE VANHISE who had already died too: PHEBE CLAYTON, and LUCY VANHISE.⁷ RICHARD' SENIOR died intestate and under the law then current, 2/3 of his estate would belong to his children; this may be the record of the children "selling" or using a quit-claim to transfer their portion to their mother. DEBORAH would sell this land the following year, on the same date that her son-in-law RICHARD PARKER, husband of MARY would also sell land, to JAMES WILBUR.⁸



A Coat of Arms of recent date was registered for RICHARD STEEPY (1749 - 1836) in the International Register of Arms, Volume 2, number 0234. The description accompanying the Arms states the "arms commemorate and honour the life of RICHARD STEEPY, of Monmouth County New Jersey, who served in the New Jersey Militia circa 1793. The three ploughs set against a blue background are the recognized arms of New Jersey and represent the long time residence of the family prior to the American Revolution along with the family's occupation as farmers including RICHARD I circa 1749, RICHARD II circa 1785, RICHARD III circa 1815 and SAMUEL circa 1818. The white diagonal band represents a military sash and further symbolizes RICHARD'S membership in the New Jersey militia during the post-revolutionary war (1793). The crest, a horse's head represents the era's primary mode of transportation and source of energy in agriculture. The above arms are dedicated to RICHARD STEEPY, (1749-1836), "in memorium" and for all of his descendants. His known children were JOHN STEEPY b: 1775, RICHARD STEEPY b: 1785, MARGARET STEEPY b: 1779, ELIZABETH STEEPY b: 1781, PHEBE STEEPY b: 1790 and MARY STEEPY b: 1792."⁹

ISSUE

- 1) JOHN STEEPY: married THEODOCIA. He purchased 58 $\frac{24}{100}$ acres in Monmouth County on 1 May 1798 from SAMUEL EMLEY. He sold this land to his father on 11 January 1814 and moved to Fayette County, Pennsylvania.
 - a) JOHN STEEPY II: born 1812, Upper Freehold, Monmouth County. Married ELIZABETH (born 1822) in PA.
 - b) RICHARD STEEPY: born 1822 in Fayette County, PA. He married HARRIET MOREHEAD (born 1827) in PA. They lived in Fayette and later Perry through 1880 followed by a move to Roger's Village, Columbiana County, Ohio by 1900. RICHARD died in 1903 and HARRIET in 1914; buried at *East Carmel Cemetery* in Middleton, Columbiana County.

⁵ An Account of Persons Received into this Church by Baptism or Letter since the Constitution of it as a Church: Part 2.

⁶ Monmouth County Deeds, Book L3, page 457, recorded 27 April 1836.

⁷ Monmouth County Deeds, Book L3, page 459, recorded 27 April 1836.

⁸ Monmouth County Deeds, Book B3, page 396 (book & page may be incorrect).

⁹ Richard Steepy, International Register of Arms, Volume 2, number 0234. Available online at <http://www.armorial-register.com/arms-us/steepy-r-arms.html>

- 2) MARGARET "MARGERY" STEEPY: married ABRAHAM VANHISE 9 October 1799 in Monmouth County, NJ, son of THOMAS VANHISE. He was born 1773 in Holland. The 1830 – 1850 census returns has them in West Windsor Township (Middlesex County before 1838; Mercer County after). ABRAHAM died November 1858 in VanHiseville, Ocean County, NJ and is believed to have been buried in *VanHiseville Cemetery*. MARGARET was living in West Windsor in 1860. She died 7 February 1867 in VanHiseville, Ocean County, NJ. Her headstone is in *Old Bethel Cemetery* in Plainsboro, Middlesex County. They may have had 12 children, the first of who, RICHARD, was born in VanHiseville in 1800.¹⁰
- 3) ELIZABETH STEEPY: married OAKE VANHISE 12 February 1801 in Monmouth County, NJ, son of THOMAS VANHISE. He was born about 1777 and died between 1830 and 1836. That ELIZABETH predeceased her father is supported by the fact that her daughters are listed among the heirs-at-law of her father; she is not.
- a) PHEBE VANHISE: married ISAAC CLAYTON before 1836.
 - b) LUCY VANHISE: unmarried in 1836.
- 4) RICHARD STEEPY II: first married CATHERINE CROSSMAN on 19 May 1815 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. (Mercer County was not created until 1838) She was born 1782 in NY. RICHARD and CATHERINE STEEPY appear as grantors of his father's property in 1836. CATHERINE died at Trenton on 5 January 1848. They had six children. RICHARD married second SARAH WITTY 19 May 1850 in Nottingham Township, Mercer County, NJ. SARAH died 6 January 1869 in Trenton and RICHARD died in Hamilton Township, Trenton a month later on 8 February 1869.¹¹¹² This would seem to negate the record of *RICHARD STEEPE* found in the Upper Freehold Baptist Church books as that RICHARD is noted as having died in February 1856. As the date of baptism is in the same year as the one given for RICHARD, more research is necessary.
- a) RICHARD STEEPY III: born 9 July 1815 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. He married RUTH CROZIER 29 October 1843 in the Hamilton Square Baptist Church in Mercer County. She was born 15 April 1821 in Bucks County, PA. They moved to Glenwood, Mills County, Iowa. RUTH died there on 5 May 1890 and RICHARD died 4 February 1892.
 - b) SAMUEL STEEPY: born August 1818 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. He married CATHERINE MINTLE (born 1812, NJ) 29 October 1841 in Mercer County, NJ. SAMUEL died in Hamilton Township, Mercer County on 31 May 1907. Buried in *Mercer Cemetery*, Trenton.
 - c) DAVID STEEPY: born 1821 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. He married MARGARET MOON (born 1 April 1822, Bucks County, PA; died 26 February 1900, Trenton, NJ). DAVID died about 1873 in Mercer County. 7 children
 - i) DAVID STEEPY, JUNIOR: married KATHERINE HARTMAN in 1888. She was born in Trenton in 1866/7 and died there on 12 May 1950.

¹⁰ Waber-Haverland Family Tree, Ancestry at Ancestry.com

¹¹ patmill@hotmail.com

¹² New Jersey State Gazette, 9 February 1869

- d) CATHERINE STEEPY:¹³ born 1824. Married AARON RADFORD EVERNHAM (born 1824/6, son of HENRY EVERNHAM and REBECCA JAMES) in NJ. Moved to Iowa in 1868. AARON died in 1902 and CATHERINE died in 1906.
 - i) CATHERINE EVERNHAM: born 1848
 - ii) MARY EVERNHAM
 - iii) HENRY R. EVERNHAM: born 1852
 - iv) ELMER CHARLES EVERNHAM: born 1859
 - e) PHEBE STEEPY: born 1825 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. She married RANDALL PULLEN 23 January 1851.
 - f) ESRA STEEPY: born January 1829 in Nottingham Township, Burlington County, NJ. In 1847 he married MARIANNE. ESRA died about 1905 in NJ. 9 children.
- 5) PHOEBE STEEPY: married JOHN MARSHALL 15 November 1810 in Monmouth Co, NJ. JOHN apparently died as PHOEBE is found married to WILLIAM JOHNSON in 1836.
- 6) MARY STEEPY: married RICHARD PARKER 15 December 1813 in Monmouth County, NJ.
Their story continues in VOLUME 2, CHAPTER 13: PARKER.

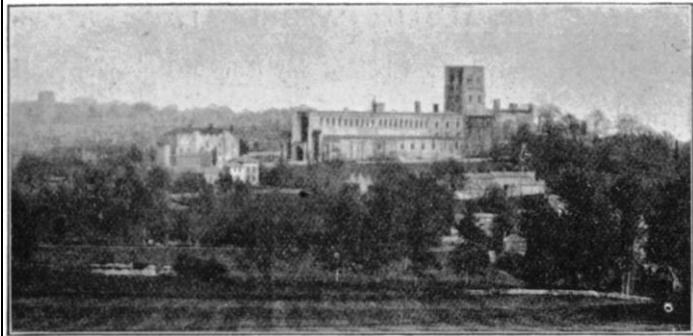
¹³ <http://www.everingham.com/family/data/arb1826.html>

Lawrence



SAINT ALBANS: 19 miles north of London a Benedictine Abbey and Monastery was founded in the 4th century on the sight of the martyrdom of Saint Alban around which the town of Saint Alban's grew. The Abbey Church was bought by the townspeople after the dissolution of the monastery to become the Parish Church of Saint Alban's. Unfortunately the 14 years between the forced closure in 1539 and the purchase in 1553 were not kind as all the buildings were ransacked, the major pieces of art finding their way into the manor homes of the wealthy while the rest was destroyed.

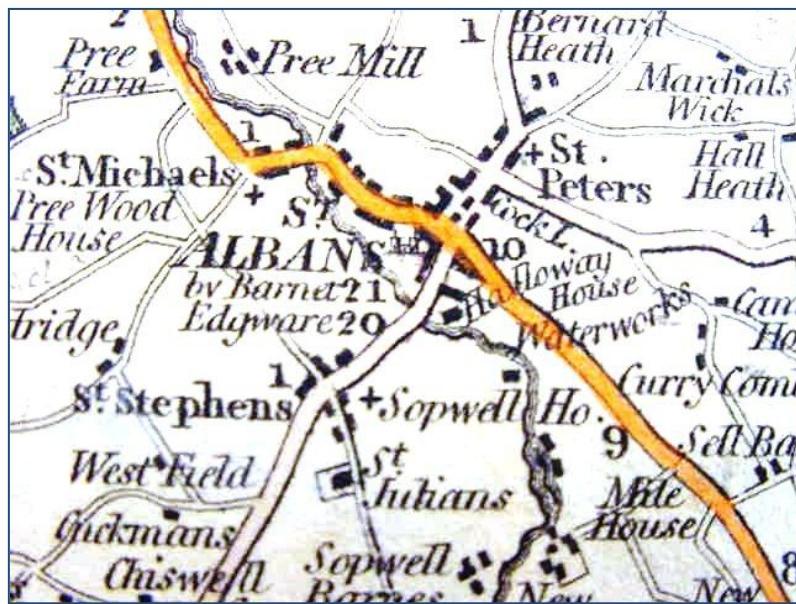
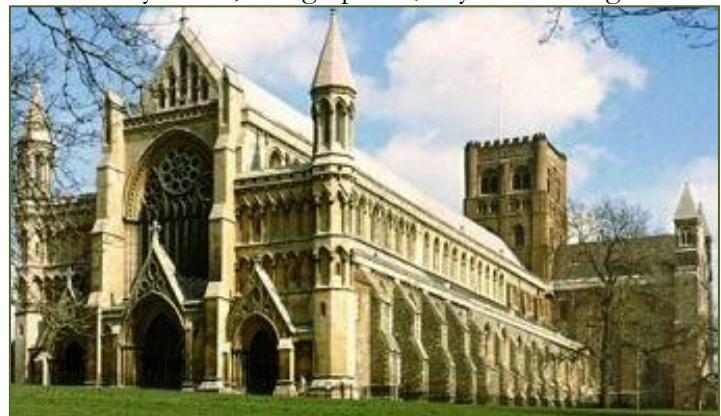
HERTFORDSHIRE: Because of its closeness to the capital the county's major resources were Saint Alban's Abbey and Monastery and providing for the wealthiest nobles of the country a pleasing setting to locate their grand manor homes when they had to be in London.



ST. ALBANS ABBEY, BEFORE 1874.

Saint Alban's Abbey was so completely destroyed; even the crypts were opened, the valuables stolen, the rest burned; SAINT ALBAN went missing. The reliquary, holding SAINT ALBAN'S remains, was smashed and the pieces used for other projects. It was restored to the church in the 18th century. The hostility exhibited towards the Abbey was particularly intense because of the Abbot. The person holding that office over the centuries had repressed of the rights of

the townspeople. They had no recourse to correct the illegal actions of the Abbot because the local court was an ecclesiastical court, under the Abbott! He claimed all sorts of privileges which cost the people dearly – grain could only be ground at the Abbeys mills, at high prices; anyone wishing to sell their produce or livestock had to pay the Abbot to obtain his approval to sell the goods. If a person complained of this extortion, the Abbot retaliated by claiming the goods in question for the Abbey, paying the owner a nominal cost, usually less than 25% of its value. The Abbey, in turn, would then resell the goods at greatly inflated prices.



Husband's Name: **WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE¹**

Born:	Circa 1630	Saint Albans, Hertfordshire, England
Married:	Circa 1656	Gravesend, New Netherland?
Died:	1701-04	
Buried:		
Father:	HENRY LAWRENCE (21 June 1604 – 8 August 1664)	
Mother:	AMY PEYTON (1605 - ?)	

Wife's Name: **HANNAH GROVER**

Born:	Circa 1630	
Died:	Before 1693	
Buried:		
Father:	JAMES GROVER, JUNIOR (born 1581)	
Mother:	ANNE EAMES	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) JAMES LAWRENCE	circa 1657	Gravesend, New Netherland
2) WILLIAM LAWRENCE	circa 1658	Gravesend, New Netherland
3) HANNAH LAWRENCE	circa 1660	Gravesend, New Netherland
4) BENJAMIN LAWRENCE	1664	Gravesend, New Netherland
5) ELISHA LAWRENCE	17 February 1666	Gravesend, New Netherland
6) JOSEPH LAWRENCE	1670	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
7) JOHN LAWRENCE	1668	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ

Two Men Named WILLIAM LAWRENCE

The ancestry of WILLIAM is a difficult one to identify. There is a great amount of interest in the LAWRENCE ancestry attested to by the hundreds of researchers investigating this name. Most identify their lines with descendants of SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE of Ashton Hall, Lancastershire, England who fought in the Crusades under the banner of RICHARD, *Coeur de Leon* who knighted SIR ROBERT 1191 A.D. Half a millennia later, on 7 June 1635 the *Planter* landed at Boston carrying three siblings, allegedly descendants of SIR ROBERT: JOHN (17 years), WILLIAM (12) and MARIA (9) LAWRENCE. A fourth sibling THOMAS LAWRENCE supposedly arrived in 1655. The WILLIAM LAWRENCE that sailed on the *Planter* was born in or before 1622 at Great Saint Albans where he was baptized on 22 July in that year. Both Great Saint Albans and Saint Albans are towns in Hertfordshire. We do not know the age of WILLIAM at the time of his baptism which means that 1622 can only be said to be the latest year of birth and that is around eight years earlier than the year our ancestor is believed to have been born. WILLIAM LAWRENCE who arrived in 1635 on the *Planter* was 12 which is close to the youngest possible age, 13, of the WILLIAM baptized at Great Saint Albans in 1622. It is possible, perhaps likely, that these two events concerned the same person.²

¹ Most of the information herein contained has been determined by this author to be the most likely scenario but should not be deemed factual. The works of others, accessed on the internet, has been the main source used.

² William Nelson (ed), The New Jersey Coast in Three Centuries, Volume II, (Lewis Publishing, Co., NY, 1902) pages 205-207.

Now onto the second WILLIAM LAWRENCE: Another person named WILLIAM LAWRENCE was baptized at Saint Albans, Hertfordshire, England on 13 June 1630. The names of WILLIAM's parents were recorded by one researcher as though they were taken from this record but this is not certain.³ The researcher names WILLIAM's father as HENRY LAWRENCE and his mother as AMY PEYTON which, lacking any evidence to the contrary, are assumed to be correct despite the researcher's failure to cite his source for the information. The Monmouth County (NJ) Historical Association has posted on its website *WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE I, an Englishman who came to America in 1661 ...* Assuming this is the same WILLIAM, he would have been 31 years old when he sailed; this discrepancy, 12 versus 31, is enough to convince this author that these two are different men that had the same name. Further supporting this statement is the following: it is a well accepted fact that the WILLIAM LAWRENCE who arrived in 1635 married ELIZABETH SMITH and had a large family. The documentation is very clear – our ancestor was married to HANNAH GROVER with whom he had seven children – his 2nd wife was named ELIZABETH SCUDDER not ELIZABETH SMITH.

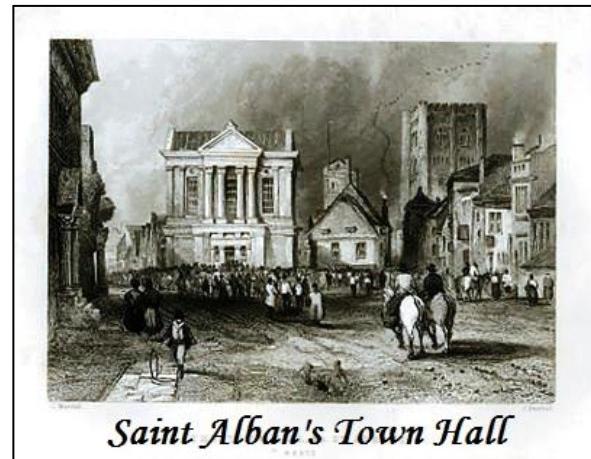
It is tempting to jump to the conclusion that the WILLIAM LAWRENCE who married HANNAH GROVER and the WILLIAM LAWRENCE that landed in Boston in 1635 is the same person, and many have made that leap but the facts argue against making this leap. With the records at hand, and the discrepancies that exist between the many versions published by researchers, it is not possible to state as fact that our subject is related to the passengers of the *Planter*, however some researchers claim that they were "cousins" perhaps based on the commonalities of place and surname. If this is true then we can lay claim to being a descendant of SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE of Ashton Hall.

As for HANNAH GROVER, she is even more elusive than her husband. JAMES GROVER III is the progenitor of this family branch and is thought to be about 23 years older than this HANNAH. It seems that HANNAH may have stayed in Chesham until shortly after her brother JAMES moved to Gravesend in 1646. HANNAH is documented in Gravesend from 1656 but probably moved there several years earlier.

LONG ISLAND

WILLIAM and HANNAH LAWRENCE are thought to have lived at Hempstead and Gravesend until 1666. They first lived in Hempstead and owned property in Middleburgh (Newton). That town was founded in 1652 by residents of neighboring Hempstead and some New Englanders. On 2 September 1660 WILLIAM bought lot 4 in Gravesend from JOHN THOMAS. He sold this lot in late 1663 to RICHARD STILLWELL.

A WILLIAM LAWRENCE was one of the founders of the town of Flushing on Long Island, and the town Sheriff, but there is no mention that this WILLIAM was a resident of Gravesend or



Saint Alban's Town Hall

³ Jack Mount "MY LAWRENCE FAMILY ANCESTRAL LINE" <http://members.cox.net/mountgen/lawrence.html>

Hempstead (both towns appear in early court records in opposition to each other trying to settle boundary disputes). It appears he was a cousin of our ancestor and later moved to Middleburgh. JOHN LAWRENCE, the older brother of WILLIAM LAWRENCE who arrived on the *Planter*, does appear as one of the original inhabitants of *The Great Plains*, the earliest name given to Hempstead; their parents are identified as THOMAS LAWRENCE and JOAN ANTROBUS. On 6 March 1666 a patent was issued by GOVERNOR RICHARD NICOLLS for a section of land called Hell Gate Neck in Middleburg to several people. In a record made in 1704 the list of these patentees includes the names WILLIAM LAWRENCE, CAPTAIN THOMAS LAWRENCE and JOHN LAWRENCE. However, since WILLIAM'S wife is named as ELIZABETH, of Hastings, and our WILLIAM was married to HANNAH GROVER at this time, it is clear that this is not our ancestor.

Gravesend provided a large minority (12) of the early inhabitants to Monmouth while Newport, Rhode Island provided the majority (39) as that was the location of the Rhode Island Monmouth Association. A list of Monmouth County inhabitants states that several were *from Long Island*; in fact 9 of the original patentees of Gravesend and 3 other residents of that town, including WILLIAM LAWRENCE, are named as Monmouth residents in 1667. It appears that most of the 12 settlers from Gravesend were some of the earliest residents of Middletown.

That our ancestor had ties to Gravesend is quite well established and accepted as fact which lends credence to the supposition that two different men with the same name, hailing from the same or nearby towns in England, spent time on Long Island in close proximity to each other. Unfortunately for family researchers, our WILLIAM followed or was followed by another man with the same name who might have been a cousin. Both WILLIAM'S lived on the western end of Long Island after sailing from England but can be distinguished if their wives are mentioned – our ancestor was married to HANNAH GROVER while the other guy's wife was ELIZABETH SMITH. They both moved off Long Island to not only the same province, but the same town – Middletown. The available records coupled with the established personal information on each family is rarely enough for us to determine exactly which WILLIAM LAWRENCE is the one in the record under scrutiny. After WILLIAM'S wife HANNAH died he married ELIZABETH SCUDER which eliminates using the wife's name to identify which WILLIAM is meant in records.

MONMOUTH COUNTY, NJ

Some early researchers state that ELISHA LAWRENCE, a member of the Provincial Council in 1707 was *one of the earliest* bearing the LAWRENCE surname to settle in Monmouth County. Available documents reflect several LAWRENCES, including our ancestor, in Monmouth County 40 years earlier making the earlier claim doubtful.

There are many Monmouth County records that name WILLIAM LAWRENCE as one of the subjects; it is difficult to know who the records refer to. Those records that correlate well with our ancestor are included herein and hopefully are correctly attributed. Besides the complication of having 2 men named William Lawrence in a small village, I have found our ancestor named as WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, *I* with his son named as WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, SENIOR and the latter's son as WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, JUNIOR by the Monmouth County (NJ) Historical Association. These naming styles are only retained if it is within quoted material. The correct naming is our ancestor being WILLIAM **L.** LAWRENCE who designates himself as "SENIOR" on occasion; his son is WILLIAM **L.** LAWRENCE, SENIOR, who is, on occasion, (incorrectly) designated as JUNIOR while the son of WILLIAM **L.** LAWRENCE, SENIOR is WILLIAM **L.** LAWRENCE, JUNIOR.

PROPERTIES

WILLIAM LAWRENCE is an original *purchaser* of land in Monmouth in 1667, but not an original *patentee*. His name is on a list of Monmouth Patent inhabitants made before the Patent's 3-year period to meet certain goals had expired. The following property records pertain to our ancestor:

- ❖ 30 December 1667: the Middletown Town Book records the original holders of the 36 town lots and 36 field lots with WILLIAM receiving #31 in town on the north side of Kings Highway and field lot #28.
- ❖ 1 December 1676: WILLIAM LAWRENCE *in right of self and sister HANNAH LAWRENCE* obtained a warrant for 240 acres;
- ❖ 12 May 1677: A Survey of Quit-rent Lands reflects the purchase of 165 acres by WILLIAM.
- ❖ 20 July 1677: The date the transfer of the 240 acre parcel granted by East New Jersey Proprietors on 1 December 1676 was recorded. Some of this was meadow land according to a patent granted to JOHN VAUGHN, dated 10 January 1677, wherein VAUGHN'S 9 acres is situated between that belonging to JAMES GROVER to the east and WILLIAM LAWRENCE'S to the west.⁴
- ❖ 12 January 1677: the transfer of land in Middletown from *Indians* to WILLIAM recorded.⁵
- ❖ 2 September 1678: he obtained a 2nd warrant for 360 acres *in right of original purchaser, for self, wife and son*. These two warrants from the Proprietors confirm that WILLIAM was not an *original patentee* of the Monmouth Patent but he was one of the early investors – the original patentees received warrants for 500 acres, later investors received warrants at 120 acres per person.
- ❖ 13 March 1683: recording of the transfer of *sundry tracts* in East New Jersey from DONALD MACKQUIRRICH and DAVID TOSHACK to WILLIAM.⁶
- ❖ 5 January 1685: he received a 3rd Proprietary Grant, called the Barclay purchase in some records, of 420 acres *bounded by the North and South Hope Rivers*.⁷
- ❖ 31 July 1685: recording in the *small survey book* of the 420 acres surveyed pursuant to the 3rd Proprietary Grant; 400 acres were surveyed.
- ❖ 5 August 1685: despite the actual recording stating the date as 5 July 1685, it follows those of 4 August and earlier and is followed by those of 6 August and later. This was for a survey for 500 acres in Manasquan.⁸
- ❖ 14 August 1685: WILLIAM bought *the one fifth, of one fourth, of the one twenty-fourth part of East Jersey being a one seventy-fourth part* from DAVID MOODY, a merchant from Perth Amboy for 5 shillings. WILLIAM had the deed *ratified* the following day, paying £100.⁹ If and how this transaction ties into the property transfers occurring almost simultaneously is not known.
- ❖ 15 October 1686: the Governor's account ledger for property quit rents lists 3 for WILLIAM LAWRENCE: 400 acres bounded by *the north and south branches of the Hopp River, and a swamp* (the 1685 Proprietary grant of 420 acres), 165 acres being the same as that listed in 1677, and 131 acres (perhaps the *sundry tracts* from 1683).

⁴ Edwin Salter, *A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties*, (Bayonne, NJ: F. Gardner & Son, Publishers; 1890) which cites East Jersey Records, *Liber 1* (1650-1678)

⁵ Monmouth County Deeds, Book I, pp 173, 235

⁶ Monmouth County Deeds, Book A, p 299.

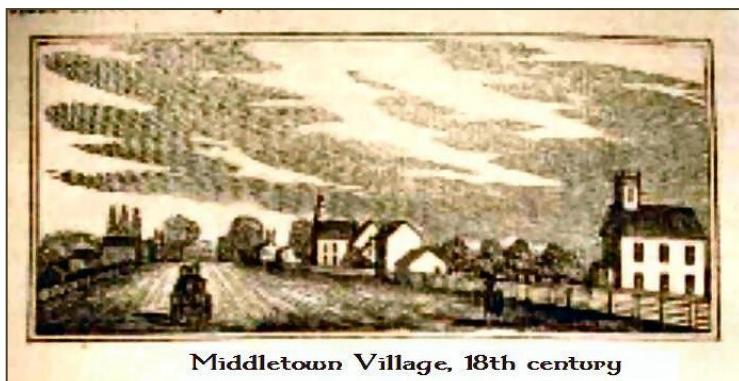
⁷ Monmouth County Deeds, Book A, p 281.

⁸ *op.cit.* Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 2, pp. 149 – 194, 368 – 398, 414 – 427. Reference to *Liber L*, pp. 43 & 55 and D under *Boundings* with a 7 indicating # of parcels according to the extract may refer to another book.

⁹ Monmouth County Deeds, Book A, pp 223, 302.

- ❖ 10 August 1688: WILLIAM buys a tract of unspecified size on the south side of *Hope River*, adjacent to his 1685 Grant, from ROBERT BARCLAY of Ury, Scotland.
- ❖ 26 December 1694: WILLIAM conveyed 3 tracts to his son WILLIAM *for natural affection and £17:* 120 acres of the BARCLAY tract on Hopp River; 100 acres from the 1685 Grant on Hopp River; and another *on the south side of the Manasquan.*
- ❖ 26 December 1694: WILLIAM conveyed a second 100 acres parcel from the 1685 Grant to his son BENJAMIN.
- ❖ 7 March 1690: recording of at least 2 purchases of land from JAMES JOHNSTONE; one on Hopp River and the other in Barnegat.¹⁰
- ❖ 9 March 1691: recording of a purchase from JOHN REID.¹¹
- ❖ 18 August 1692: recording of transfer of land in Barnegat from GEORGE WILLOCKS to WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR.
- ❖ 22 December 1700: WILLIAM LAWRENCE *of Middletown and holder of $\frac{1}{20}$ of $\frac{1}{24}$ share* of East New Jersey received 250 acres in eight parcels as his Second Proprietary Dividend.
- ❖ 15 July 1701: records transfer of 42 acres of Proprietary Grant granted on 22 December 1700 to son ELISHA.
- ❖ 15 July 1701: records transfer of 100 acres on Hopp River, being a tract *on the dividing line between Middletown and Freehold Townships* to son BENJAMIN.
- ❖ 15 July 1701: records transfer of land in Shrewsbury to his son JAMES.
- ❖ 15 July 1701: records transfer of other land in Shrewsbury and Manasquan to his son JOHN.¹²

WILLIAM was one of Middletown's founders in 1667 and appears to have actually lived in or near Baptists town about two miles west of the village. According to one STOUT family manuscript, the LAWRENCE family was one of the original six families that moved to the area, though the stated about the year 1648 is too early, settling at Colt's Neck and extending south. The northern limit was in the Holmdel area.¹³ RICHARD STOUT was one of the three men to swear out a statement on 13 October 1643 to the effect that the crew of the *Seven Seas* had landed at ANTHONY JANSEN'S farm and were only persuaded to leave some hogs untouched when they learned LADY DEBORAH MOODY owned them. As shown in my previous book, that statement was proven false which calls into question many of the characterizations of STOUT as being a *stalwart citizen*.¹⁴



Middletown Village, 18th century

Monmouth County was organized into municipalities with the formation of the 3 original townships: Middletown, Freehold and Shrewsbury, in 1693. Freehold was the western township, Shrewsbury extended from the south bank of the Navesink River all the way to the southern tip of

¹⁰ Monmouth County Deeds, Book D, pp 180 – 182, 274 – 275.

¹¹ Monmouth County Deeds, Book E, p 384 and Book G, p 9.

¹² Monmouth County Deeds, Book AAA, pp 77, 117; Book D-2, p 125; Book K-small, pp 47 & 48.

¹³ *op.cit*: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, Volume 4, p. 298

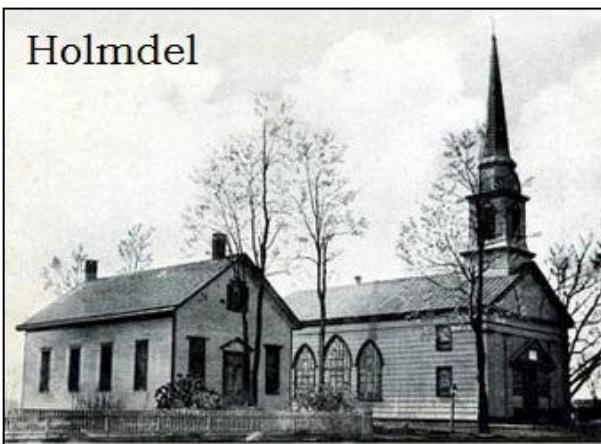
¹⁴ Brian A. Smith, *The Most Remarkable Lives of Jan Jansen and his son Anthony* (private printed, 2013) pp. 99 – 100.

what is today Ocean County while Middletown covered the whole of the northern part of the county from the north bank of the Navesink River to Raritan Bay. Its western edge bordered Middlesex County and Freehold Township. The northwest section of Middletown Township was called *Waackaack* after the Leni-Kenape *Wakioak* meaning *land of plenty*. In 1854 *Waackaack*, later called Granville, was split between Raritan Township and the Keansburg section of Middletown Township.

BAPTISTS

HANNAH GROVER was Baptist as was her father and explains their Baptists town location. Many report that her husband was of the same religion but a credible source maintains otherwise.¹⁵ WILLIAM's namesake was a Baptist which makes it difficult to make a definitive statement one way or the other. Many Baptists initially settled a few miles west of Middletown at a place that became Baptists town. This town was situated at the crossroads of the road from Shrewsbury to Cranberry and the road from Monmouth Courthouse to Middletown. It was here that the *Meeting House* for the Baptist Church was built in 1688. It is claimed that the site was more easily accessible to church members who lived over a large area stretching inland to Upper Freehold and south to Jacobstown and beyond. The next closest churches were in Manhattan to the north and Philadelphia to the south (the Conhansey Baptist Church in Fenwick's Colony was even further away). But the reasons given for building Middletown at its location – the ease of access because three major Native American trails intersected there – may belie the real reason for building the church where it was built – most of the Baptists lived there! There was a significant enough number of co-religionists in Middletown that a second *Meeting House* may have been built there a few years later; others maintain it was Middletown's City Hall that was built and the local Baptists used this structure until 1732.¹⁶ The original one became the *Upper Meeting House* while that in Middletown was the *Lower Meeting House*. *Upper* and *Lower* are terms usually used in relation to a position along a river, brook or creek; perhaps in this case it refers to the location on the Navesink River. The *Upper Meeting House* was built on land that WILLIAM LAWRENCE sold to the Baptist minister JOHN BRAY in 1688. The 1688 sale by WILLIAM LAWRENCE to JOHN BRAY was said by some to be in preparation for a move to Upper Freehold, being the only mention found of any such move so far.¹⁷ Records indicate the presence of WILLIAM LAWRENCE in Middletown as late as 1700 when he wrote in his Last Will that he was from Middletown. The eventual naming of the church as the Middletown Baptist Church have led many to incorrectly conclude that the Middletown village church was the earliest; the mistake comes from failing to know that the origin of the name concerns itself with being located in the township of that name, not the village.¹⁸

Holmdel



The Baptist Church.

¹⁵ Thomas S Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey* (Bar Press Publishing Company: Hightstown, NJ; 1904) p.17.

¹⁶ *Ibid*, Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey*; p.15.

¹⁷ *op.cit* Salter, *A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties*, pp.20-23, 210.

¹⁸ *op.cit* Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey*; p. 26.

Some years after the *Lower Meeting House* was built, it was decided that a new *Upper Meeting House* was needed as the original one was over 15 years old. REVEREND BRAY donated more land from the LAWRENCE tract and the third Middletown church building was built in 1705. Thus, while this author has often seen it written that WILLIAM LAWRENCE donated the land to the Baptist Church for its 1st and 3rd buildings, this is not quite correct; true, the land *was* donated and it belonged to WILLIAM LAWRENCE at one time but WILLIAM did not donate the land, he sold it to the minister who then donated it to the church. The dual nature of the *Middletown Baptist Church*, an older *Upper Meeting House* at Baptisstown and a slightly younger *Lower Meeting House* in Middletown, continued until 1836 when the *Upper Meeting House* became the *Second Middletown Baptist Church* (despite the fact that it was the first!); 13 years later it was renamed the *Holmdel Baptist Church*. Baptisstown had long-since given up that name as a second town of that name had led to confusion. Before becoming Holmdel officially in 1830 it was the original Freehold in Monmouth County during the late 18th century at a time when the town we know as Freehold was Monmouth Courthouse, being established as the judicial center in 1719.¹⁹ When the name Freehold is found in records from the 17th and 18th centuries, it referred to either the town of Holmdel as we know it or, more commonly, a much larger area embracing all of Holmdel and Marlboro Townships.

COHANSEY TRACT?

As early as 1676 a WILLIAM LAWRENCE supposedly bought a 1,000 acre tract at Cohansey (now Greenwich in Cumberland County) through his agent, ANTHONY PAGE, also one of the Middletown Patentees, but substantiating documents have yet to be found. This purchase dates from the time of Fenwick's Colony. COLONEL JOHN FENWICK came to own one-tenth of the Province of West New Jersey in 1674 after much legal wrangling. During the summer of 1675 he signed *articles of agreement* with some thirty-odd *adventurers* and designated as a Proprietor anyone buying at least one thousand acres. FENWICK'S venture collapsed the following year and was taken over by his trustees who, in combination with the owners of the other 90% of West Jersey created a joint-stock company. They issued 100 shares or proprieties valued at £350 each which entitled the holder to a $\frac{1}{100}$ share of the province. The first dividend was stipulated at 5,000 acres per share; if we assume an equal exchange, then WILLIAM'S 1,000 acres equaled a $\frac{1}{5}$ share. Three more dividends were distributed by 1714 by which time a share yielded 16,500 acres to the owner, or 3,300 acres for WILLIAM'S $\frac{1}{5}$ share. WILLIAM'S name does not appear in a 1685 account of the one hundred shares by THOMAS BUDD. [John E. Pomfret, *The Province of West New Jersey, 1609 – 1702* (Princeton, 1956) has a list of the purchasers in the Appendix on pages 285 – 289] Several Middletown residents owned tracts near Cohansey and it is believed that the presence of two of the earliest Baptist churches in the future state, one at Cohansey and the other at Middleton, was the link between the two areas. Once again, we can not be certain which WILLIAM LAWRENCE was involved.

BUSINESS CONCERNS AND CIVIC DUTIES

WILLIAM and HANNAH settled on the banks of the Hopp River where WILLIAM built a fulling mill for the manufacture of linen. He also had a fruit orchard of some type. Hopp River is now Hopp Brook and it runs in a north-south orientation and is located between Middletown and Baptisstown. It is also named in records as the Mill River and the Romanis River which is a misnomer – that refers to the farm named Ramnesson which was located on the Hopp. They owned the aforementioned Middletown tract and the Hopp River tract.

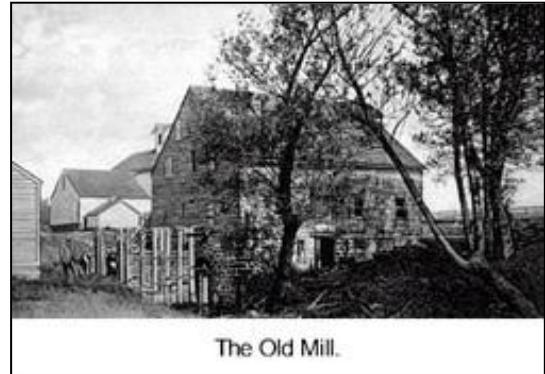
¹⁹ *op.cit.* Griffiths, *A History of Baptists in New Jersey*; pp.15-17. The New Jersey Historical Society website maintains that Freehold was the first name, followed by Baptisstown, then Holmdel but this does not find support in records and maps.

On 14 December 1667 WILLIAM LAWRENCE and JONATHON HOLMES were chosen as *Overseers of Middletown*; WILLIAM may have been reappointed to this post in 1670 – 1671.²⁰ This election was probably done during a general assembly of Monmouth patentees and deputies; the first such assembly was held on 4 June 1667 at Portland Point where one of their actions was to confirm or choose overseers for each town; they would continue to meet as a body until 1670. The Monmouth assembly for December met at Narumsunk Neck at Shrewsbury; the province's first General Assembly wasn't held until May 1668 at Elizabeth Towne. *Overseers* were responsible for collecting the township (or county) taxes levied by the Justice of the Peace and the office was usually specific: *Overseer of the Poor* or *of the Highway*.

On 22 July 1668 Middletown appointed RICHARD GIBBINS, RICHARD STOUT, WILLIAM LAWRENCE and JONATHON HOLMES to come to an agreement with ROBERT JONES of New York for the operation of the town's grain mill. That agreement included the following:

- (1) *300 guilders paid in servant*
- (2) *The taking of timber for Jones house and mill*
- (3) *His use of a share of the town land, lot # 33, for a mill in good repair*
- (4) *10 acres of upland next to the mill together with the water stream where the mill is located*
- (5) *Help received in raising the buildings when they were framed and*
- (6) *The twelve bushel tolle*

All of which was granted to JONES in consideration of maintaining the mill for the town's use, with the provision that all the land must be kept with the mill and no part or parcel could be sold separately.²¹ JONES received 10 acres on which the mill was located plus town lot #33. In February 1669 at a Middletown town meeting WILLIAM LAWRENCE was appointed one of six agents appointed to answer how it was that the Navesink towns were exempted from paying quitrents; the town clerk EDWARD TART was another of the agents. Middletown and Shrewsbury repudiated the results of the deputy elections for the May 1668 session. Those deputies were JOHN BOWNE and JAMES GROVER – they both represented Middletown and Shrewsbury and had two votes each in the Assembly. The reason for the repudiation is that the deputies voted for certain taxes which gave a tacit approval of the supremacy of the Lords Proprietors over NICOLLS which could invalidate the Monmouth Patent. The deputies elected to the November meeting were instructed to inform the governor and his council that Middletown's resolution *was neither contempt nor obstinacy, nor willful on our parts*; the election simply had not been legal. The repudiation, coming just prior to the November 1668 General Assembly, also invalidated their actions including their vote in support of the £5 tax on each township. These deputies were forbidden to take any oaths which violated the Monmouth Patent – such as the oath of allegiance to the Proprietors which was required of all deputies. The Governor and his council ejected the deputies from the Assembly and two envoys were sent to enforce compliance or seize property of equal value. Middletown responded by making it an offense to refuse aid to any resident resisting seizure of their property with a fine of £5. Middletown's agents declared that such a tax violated the terms of the Monmouth Patent issued by NICOLLS and, if allowed to stand, created a breach of the terms of their patent. To accept PHILIP CARTERET as



The Old Mill.

²⁰ Lawrence Buckley Thomas, *The Thomas Book*, (NY: Henry T Thomas Company, 1896) page 396.

²¹ *op.cit.* Nelson, *The New Jersey Coast in Three Centuries*

governor required their rights elucidated in the Monmouth patent were guaranteed and safeguarded by the Proprietors. The answer was rejected.

WILLIAM was 1 of 6 men appointed to transmit to the Governor the laws adopted in Middletown in February 1668 to prevent the seizure of any personal property by any agent of the Proprietors. He was elected *Deputy* to the Provincial Assembly in 1669, on 1 January 1672, and 1673 and served in the capacity as *Constable* for Middletown beginning 20 May 1671 and was elected to that post again 1 January 1675.²² He refused the position in 1675 for which he was fined £5. On 9 May 1670 he was 1 of 4 men appointed as *Overseers of the Poor*. An entry from the Court of Sessions held in Shrewsbury on 3 September 1678 shows the Court fined him £5 again for refusing to serve as *Constable*.²³ Thirteen years later we find *WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR and JAMES GROVER, SENIOR* being appointed *Overseers of the Poor* during the Shrewsbury Court Sessions of September 1691. This *JAMES GROVER, SENIOR* is a mystery as the ancestor bearing this name who lived in the area was dead by 1691. A *WILLIAM LAWRENCE, JUNIOR* was appointed a *Commissioner of Highways* in 1693 and the boundaries of Middletown Township as described in that same year make mention of *WILLIAM LAWRENCE'S land on Hop River* which was also known as Mill Brook.²⁴ A *WILLIAM LAWRENCE of Hackensack* was elected speaker of the Assembly in 1693 but he is someone else.²⁵

As if it wasn't bad enough to have two men named WILLIAM LAWRENCE from Saint Albans, England moving to two towns in Dutch Long Island then moving to Monmouth County and both having wives named ELIZABETH at some point ... we find two men named WILLIAM LAWRENCE living in or near Middletown with wives named HANNAH! One is our subject and his wife was HANNAH GROVER. The second WILLIAM LAWRENCE was married to HANNAH TOWNSEND. Evidence indicates that both men named WILLIAM LAWRENCE outlived their wives named HANNAH (one GROVER and the other TOWNSEND) and married again. It is possible that the "other" WILLIAM LAWRENCE from Long Island who was married to ELIZABETH SMITH is also the WILLIAM LAWRENCE that married HANNAH TOWNSEND but this would be new information to all those that have researched the LAWRENCE family. However many researchers have arbitrarily decided that TOWNSEND and not GROVER is the correct surname of our ancestor; this does not conform to this author's research. Some records note that this other WILLIAM LAWRENCE was a sometime resident of Middleburgh, on Long Island.

On 22 December 1700 WILLIAM LAWRENCE of Middletown and holder of $\frac{1}{20}$ of $\frac{1}{24}$ share of East New Jersey received 250 acres in eight parcels as his Second Proprietary Dividend. The listing of the "eight" parcels (1 "parcel" has two tracts) totals 252 acres, perhaps the second listed parcel totaled 15 acres of which 2 were on the west side of Wakake Creek which runs north of Baptisstown through Raritan Township and into Raritan Bay. The 8 parcels were:

- 10 acres west of Wakake Creek
- 15 acres of meadow east of Wakake creek and 2 acres of "sedgebanks" west of Wakake creek
- 17 acres of upland west of Wakake creek
- 36 acres on the Manasquan River below Stony Point
- 40 acres between Rock Pond and the sea
- 47 acres being "all the sedgebanks" of the Manasquan River to the sea
- 70 acres south of Manasquan River below Hartshorn's Island to the sea
- 15 acres on branch of Leonard's sawmill brook "called Mirry Bog Brook"²⁶

²² See note 3 Jack Mount

²³ Monmouth County Deed Books A, B & C (scans of original records) page 93?

²⁴ Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, *Old Times in Old Monmouth*, (Freehold, NJ) 1887 (reprinted Genealogical Publishing Co., Baltimore, 1980) pages (in order of item) 199, 216, 254, 169 and 168.

²⁵ John E. Pomfret, *Colonial New Jersey – A History* (Charles Scribner's Sons, NY; 1973) p. 68.

²⁶ *Calendar of Records in the New Jersey Office of Secretary of State, 1614 – 1703*, pages 321-322.

THE LAST CHAPTERS

HANNAH (GROVER) LAWRENCE died before 1693 as WILLIAM married second ELIZABETH SCUDDER (born ~1648, Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts) in that year. She was the daughter of JOHN SCUDDER (born 1619) and MARY KING. ELIZABETH had married JAN ALBURTUS (born 1643, died April 1691) in Middleburg around 1666. Their daughter MEHITABLE ALBURTUS married WILLIAM and HANNAH's son JAMES LAWRENCE. She was still living in Middleburgh at the time for the town records of 1693 reflect an antenuptial gift from WILLIAM to ELIZABETH when he deeds to her a house and property in Middletown *in consideration of my love and affection for her as I intend marriage with her.* On 13 November 1693 ELISABETH transferred her powers of administration of her late husband's estate to their son JOHN ALBURTUS in anticipation of the move to Middletown. She also transferred her share of her late husband's estate to their son SAMUEL ALBURTUS.

WILLIAM received another Proprietary Grant of 42 acres on 22 December 1700. This he transferred to his son ELISHA as recorded on 15 July 1701. That same day there are 3 additional recordings from WILLIAM LAWRENCE, SENIOR to his son BENJAMIN 100 acres on Hopp River, being a tract *on the dividing line between Middletown and Freehold Townships;* land in Shrewsbury to his son JAMES; and other land in Shrewsbury and Manasquan to his son JOHN. (Book AAA, pp 77, 117; Book D-2, p 125; Book K-small, pp 47 & 48)

The *Last Will & Testament of WILLIAM LAUARENCE, SINOUR of Middeltown being of A Sound mind* bears the date 3 December 1701.²⁷ The following is a copy of an online extract:

[Gives] unto My loving wife ELIZABETH LAURANCE Deuering her Naturall life fortey Acres of land with my Dwelling House Barne orchard being comprehended within the Said fortey Acres beginning at [my Sonn JAMES LAURANCE} line at the hopp river and So Along up the said hopp or Mill river till A straight line from the Said river will take in the number of Afore Said fortey Acres of land...

To My loving wife all of the Household goods or furniture that I had with her when I Marayed her;

To My loving wife two cowes

Unto my sonn JAMES LAURANCE and his heires After the death of My wife ELIZABETH LAURANCE All the Afore Said fortey Acres of land with the Houseng And orchard.

Unto my sonn JAMES LAURANCE and his heires tenn Acres of land lying on the South Side of the hopp river and Joyning to his Fulling mill and to be taken up or laid out as my sonn JAMES shall se cause the laying of it out square to say equall sides.

Unto My grand daughter DEBEROWH GROVER and her heires Thirty Acres of land beginning at the hopp or Mill river and joyning to the fortey Acres of land I have given my Sonn JAMES LAURANCE and from thence Along or up the said Hopp or Mill river twenty five rodds and thence as Maney rodds in length as will contane the number of thirty Acres, being Twenty five rodds broad at both ends;

To my grand daughter DEBEROWH GROVER one Cow;

Unto My Sonn WILLIAM LAURANCE & his heires Two Thirds of All the Remainder of My land Joyning to My sonn WILLIAM land and my sonn BENJAMIN land;

Unto my Sonn BENJAMIN LAURANCE and his heires one third part of the Remainder of My land Joyning to My sonn WILLIAM land and my sonn BENJAMIN land; to say that After me sonn WILLIAM haith Two Thirds my sonn BENJAMIN and his heires shall have all the remander and that My executors will lay out the two Thirds of the land as convenient as they can to my son WILLIAM with as littell damage to my sonn BENJAMIN as can conceniently be;

Unto my sonn ELISHA LAURANCE and his heires all that My tract of land esteemed Att one hundred Acres excepting Alwayes the tenn Acres giving to my sonn JAMES LAURANCE joining to his Fulling mill which land

²⁷ Monmouth County, NJ, Unrecorded Wills and Inventories, page 2

lyes on the south side of the hopp river neare to LIVIES MORRIS land;
Unto my sonn WILLIAM LAURANCE and his heires and unto my Sonn ELISHA LAURANCE and his
heires and unto my sonn JOHN to him and his heires and unto my sonn BENJAMIN and his heires and unto my
Sonn JAMES LAURANCE and his heires and unto my sonn JOSEPH LAURANCE and his heires and unto
My Grand sonn JAMES GROVER and his heires All My land at Barnygatt beach equally to be devided betwixt
them seven and not to give it them in Joynt Tenency but if Aney of them dyes there heires shall Inheritt there
Right;
Unto my sonn JOHN LAURANCE and his heires my tract of land esteemed at five hundred Acres lying at A
place called Kettell point or Kettell creeke lying on the Mane side neare barnigatt bay;
Unto my sonn JOSEPH LAURANCE and his heires land of estemeation Three Hundred Acres lying at A place
commonly knowne by the name of Matele conkemew Barnigatt Beache;
Unto My six sonnes and there heires All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of
My property To be Devided betwixt them According as each have caused it to be laid out And My six sonnes
shall not hold the said lands in Joynt Tenency;
Unto my sonn ELISHA LAURANCE and his heires All My Right of My property and lands Rents that shall
be Dew or belongs To My share of A property excepting What lands is Allredey taken up and given Away;
Unto my sonn BENJAMIN LAURANCE twenty-three hundreds of the money he oweth me;
Unto my sonn JOHN LAURANCE or release unto him the debt or Money he oweth me;
I release the debt or Money unto my sonn ELISHA LAURANCE he oweth me;
To my six sonnes afore named all My household goods or furniture equally to be Devided betwixt them excepting
allwayes the Household goods given to my loving wife;
To my sonn JOSEPH LAURANCE The use of my negro boy named SHALLO for the terme and time Thirtene
yeares and upon condition he serves My sonn JOSEPH well then he be free;
To my grand sonn WILLIAM LAURANCE the sonn of WILLIAM LAURANCE one horse;
To my grand sonn WILLIAM LAURANCE the sonn of ELISHA LAURANCE one horse;
To my grand sonn my sonn JOHN'S eldest sonn one horse;
To my sonn JOSEPH'S eldest sonn one horse;
To my grand daughter ELIZABETH daughter of my sonn JAMES tenn shillings;
To my grand daughters MAREY GROVER, HANAH GROVER, ELIZEBETH GROVER, SUZANA
GROVER, REBECKA GROVER to each of them a two yeare ould Hefer;
Remainder of estate Real and personall to my son ELISHA LAURANCE and My sonn JOSEPH LAURANCE
and there heires.

I nominate my sonn WILLIAM LAURANCE and My sonn ELISHA LAURANCE My Executors

Signed: WILLIAM LAUARENCE, SINOUR (his mark)

Witnesses: RICHARD HARTSHORNE
JOHN CLEVENGER
MARGREET HARTSHORNE
JOHN STOUT²⁸

The Will was proved by oath given on 22 May 1704 before THOMAS REUELL, Surrogate of
Middletown by JOHN STOUT who witnessed the signatures of RICHARD HARTSHORNE, JOHN
CLEVENGER and MARGREET HARTSHORNE as signators to the Will.²⁹ The Calendar of New Jersey
Wills appends the following to the Will: land is specifically named as *farm on Hopp or Mill River* (also
called Mill Brook) and *land at Barnegat*; states that *the sons seem to have already received share of real*

²⁸NJA[1], 23, 283; citing Monmouth County Book of Wills, Volume 1, page 57.

²⁹Edwin Salter, History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties, (Bayonne, NJ: F Gardner & Sons, 1890) pages xxxv-xxxvi.

*property.*³⁰ RICHARD HARTSHORNE and JOHN STOUT were probably lifelong friends of WILLIAM'S, having been among the first settlers of Middletown in 1667. He made bequests totaling 980 acres plus his land at Barnegat Bay. The bequest of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property* may actually be the Second Proprietary Dividend of 1698 which was for 5,000 acres. The *remaining land* which was divided between WILLIAM who got $\frac{2}{3}$ and BENJAMIN who got $\frac{1}{3}$ appears to be just two tracts – one adjacent to land owned by WILLIAM and a smaller one adjacent to land owned by BENJAMIN. An Inventory included debts owed by 5 of his 6 sons, ranging from £1.5 to £45. WILLIAM was the only son not indebted to his father at the time of his death. In the yard he had 7 cows, 11 cattle, 7 mares and horses, 15 swine, 8 pigs and a Negro boy. His estate amounted to just over £319.³¹

ELIZABETH LAWRENCE may have been still living in 1712 as there is mention of ELIZABETH LAWRENCE, JUNIOR, implying the existence of a SENIOR, in the Middletown Baptist Church records.

According to NELSON, the descendants of WILLIAM and HANNAH LAWRENCE were Loyalists in the War for Independence but the facts speak otherwise. Loyalists were Tories who considered themselves loyal to the legitimate government as opposed to the rebels. It is true that several descendants held appointed positions within the government which may or may not indicate where their sympathies lie. One ancestor who was held as a Royalist had his farmhouse used by the Continentals who paid him rent which was returned to him. After the war, he laid a claim for a whopping (and exaggerated on the order of a thousand-fold!) £12,000 in damages to the British government, which they accepted and paid. Was he a Royalist? A cursory review of records shows 13 males named LAWRENCE serving in the Continental Army or New Jersey Militia while only 2 are found in the Royalist roles.

The first Baptist Church in the state remains open, but not as a Baptist Church; it is the *Holmdel United Church of Christ*. After being the first *Meeting House* for Monmouth County Baptists, it became the *Upper Meeting House* of the *Middletown Baptist Church* until 1836. After a 13 year run as the *Second Middletown Baptist Church* it became the *Holmdel Baptist Church* in 1849. On the road from Holmdel to Middletown, and not far from the Baptist Church was the *Dutch Reformed Church* which opened in 1699. The Old Dutch Cemetery remains to mark the location of the church. Due to declining congregations, the ministers of both churches were forced to resign in 1935. The boards of both churches got together and created *The Holmdel Church* which housed both churches (and which used both church buildings until the *Dutch Church* was razed) and was served, alternately, by ministers from other Churches. In 1953 a 3rd church – *The Community Church* – was added and in 1968 the *Baptist* and *Dutch* churches dissociated from their respective religions and all 3 churches, now independent, were able to consolidate and affiliate with the *United Churches of Christ*.

ISSUE:

- 1) JAMES LAWRENCE: a possible unnamed son is found in Salter's History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties. Married MEHITABLE ALBURTUS (b. circa 1678), daughter of JAN ALBURTUS and ELIZABETH SCUDDER in Middletown; her mother was the second wife of WILLIAM LAWRENCE. He inherited and ran the fulling mill on the Hopp River. On 5 February 1706 he, along with his brothers WILLIAM and BENJAMIN plus JAMES GROVER, OBADIAH BOWNE, GARRET WALL, GERSHOM MOTT, JAMES HUBBARD, JAMES COX, JOSEPH COX, OBADIAH HOMES, JOSEPH

³⁰ Documents Relating to the Colonial History of New Jersey, Volume XXIII, Calendar of New Jersey Wills, Volume 1, 1670 – 1730 (Paterson, NJ: The Press Printing & Publishing Company; 1901) p 283

³¹ op.cit: Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, 3:398.

STOUT and DANIEL HENDRICKS bought from THOMAS COOPER, a London merchant, one full equal half propriety or 48th part minus 5,000 acres of first division and 86 acres of second division, plus 600 acres at Barnegat for £260. On the same date, in a second deed, the last named grantee, DANIEL HENDRICKS, buys out the other grantees and gets an additional 141 acres and the right to an additional 184 acres plus 21 acres of land and marsh at Barnegat.³² WILLIAM would be one of the witnesses to the signing of the Will of DANIEL HENDRICKS on 16 November 1727. On 5 May 1714 an Indenture was recorded from DAVID STOUT to JAMES LAWRENCE.³³ He received four parcels of land in his father's will: the 40 acres set aside for the use of WILLIAM'S widow ELIZABETH reverted to JAMES upon her death, 10 acres that adjoined his mill, and a 1/7 share of the Barnegat Bay land (6 sons and 1 grandson) and a 1/6 share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property* (6 sons).

- a) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE: born 23 Feb 1699; received a 10 shilling bequest in the 1701 will of her grandfather WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE.
 - b) JACOB LAWRENCE: 28 Jul 1703; Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - c) JOHN LAWRENCE: 14 Feb 1705; Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - d) HANNAH LAWRENCE: 08 Jun 1710; Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - e) MARY LAWRENCE: 12 March 1712; Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - f) REBECCA LAWRENCE: 08 May 1715; Freehold, Monmouth Co, New Jersey
 - g) JAMES LAWRENCE: 28 December 1718; Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - i) JAMES S. LAWRENCE: a grandson of JAMES LAWRENCE, was born *at the homestead, Cream Ridge*, and he was for many years a judge, also member of the Legislature, president of the Freehold Banking Co., &c. He died 26 February 1860 at the age of 63. He married first, MARY S., daughter of HENDRICK CONOVER, and second, PHEBE ANN, daughter of NATHANIEL S. RUE, SENIOR.
 - h) DEBORAH LAWRENCE: 15 August 1721; Freehold, Monmouth Co., New Jersey
- 2) WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, SENIOR: may have been born in Middleburgh on Long Island. On 20 July 1677 a patent was granted to "WILLIAM LAWRENCE JUNIOR of Midleton" for 165 acres in six parcels; the JUNIOR was added to identify him as owner in contrast to his father. After naming his son WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, JUNIOR, the father begins using SENIOR. He married RUTH GIBBONS, daughter of RICHARD GIBBONS, on 24 June 1686 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ. In 1688 he was appointed executor by his brother-in-law, JOSEPH GROVER. At some point he bought 131 acres from ROBERT HAMILTON for, on 2 March 1690, he conveyed a share in the tract to his brother ELISHA for £40. His father conveyed 3 tracts to him *for natural affection and £17* on 26 December 1694: 120 acres of the BARCLAY tract on Hopp River; 100 acres from the 1685 Grant on Hopp River; and another *on the south side of the Manasquan*. On 1 January 1695 he was chosen and appointed to be Towns Clerk for 1 year but was reappointed the following year. He received a 1/7 share of the Barnegat Bay land and a 1/6 share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property* plus a 2/3 share of all remaining land belonging to his father according to the Will of 1701. This land adjoined land he already owned. WILLIAM LAWRENCE was an elected member of the 3rd, 6th, 7th and 8th Provincial Assemblies (1707, 1710, 1716 and 1721 respectively).³⁴ It has not been determined if this was the same person or not. In September 1707 WILLIAM LAWRENCE appeared at the Court of Sessions in support of the minister JOHN BRAY; LAWRENCE is referred to as being a member of BRAY'S

³² George C. Beekman, Early Dutch Settlers of Monmouth County, New Jersey (Freehold, NJ: Moreau Brothers Publishers, 1901), page 122. Refers to Monmouth County Deeds, Liber I, page 184.

³³ Several deeds and indentures are found referenced in the online listing of the holdings of the Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold.

³⁴ *op.cit.* Salter and. Beekman, Old Times in Old Monmouth, pages 92-3.

congregation.³⁵ On 5 February 1716 JOHN BOWNE of Middleton gave WILLIAM LAWRENCE SENIOR and RICHARD HARTSHORNE £5260 in trust to be used as follows:³⁶

- His wife FRANCES BOWNE was to be paid £45 a year for life, which she could get either man's house.
- The specified amount was to be paid to the children of the three named men following; the boys when they turned 21 and the girls when they turned 18:
 - For OBADIAH BOWNE children:
 - JOHN BOWNE was to be paid £400.
 - ANNE and LYDIA BOWNE , were to be paid £200 each.
 - For CAPTAIN RICHARD SALTAR'S children:
 - RICHARD SALTAR, WILLIAM SALTAR, EBENEZER SALTAR, DEBORAH SALTAR, JAMES SALTAR, and OLIVER SALTAR, were to be paid £125 each.
 - For WILLIAM HARTSHORNE'S children:
 - RICHARD HARTSHORNE, MARGARET HARTSHORNE , and WILLIAM HARTSHORNE , were to be paid £150 each.
- Lastly, THOMAS TAYLOR, JAMES BOWNE, and SAMUEL WILLET discharged from all debts.

The BOWNE trust was for a significant amount and probably functioned for a long time, an indicator of the trust JOHN BOWNE had for both men. CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE, 2ND was born 1 April 1664, married FRANCES BOWMAN (license dated 26 December 1692) and died 13 March 1716. They had no children. He was the son of CAPTAIN JOHN BOWNE (born in Yorkshire, England; died 3 January 1684) and LYDIA HOLMES, daughter of REVEREND OBADIAH and CATHERINE HOLMES. JOHN (the 1ST) came with his parents WILLIAM and ANN BOWNE, settling first in Salem, Massachusetts in 1631; bought property at Gravesend, Long Island on 12 November 1646 and moved to Monmouth County in early 1665. ANN died in Monmouth County and he married (2) MARY H. FELT 12 July 1669. He died at Portland Point in 1677.

A WILLIAM LAWRENCE of Middletown sold 12 acres of land to JOHN BENNETT for £666 on 11 August 1727. The tract is described as being that part of LAWRENCE'S plantation adjacent to one already owned by BENNETT and being between the road and land owned by C. JOHNSTONE on the far side of a brook.³⁷ On or about 1 December 1727 WILLIAM wrote a document that is invaluable in documenting the early settlement of the area and the ongoing dispute over quit-rents between the Proprietors of East Jersey and the residents under the Monmouth Patent.³⁸ RUTH died 7 October 1736 in Middletown. WILLIAM, being *in the eighty-fourth year of my age*, signed his Will on 20 FEBRUARY 1741. Bequests included:

- 26 acres, *being part of Thomas Cooper's lot*, at Barnegat to grandson WILLIAM LAWRENCE, son of RICHARD LAWRENCE, deceased;
- 100 acres on Hopp River to grandson WILLIAM LAWRENCE, son of JOHN LAWRENCE, deceased;
- 80 acres *adjoining PETER TILTON'S* to granddaughter JANE LAWRENCE, daughter of JOHN LAWRENCE, deceased;

³⁵ *op.cit.* Griffiths, A History of Baptists in New Jersey; p.19.

³⁶ JC Marler, "GENEALOGICAL NOTES AND ANECDOTES; ANTECEDENTS AND DESCENDANTS of JOHN COX" 11 November 1998; at <http://gennotes.150m.com/jcox.html>

³⁷ Loose Deeds, New Jersey Archives.

³⁸ *op.cit.* Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, Vol.1, p. 220.

- *half of Proprietary Right and land near Metecunk, and large Concordance* to daughter ELIZABETH HARTSHORNE;
- *largest old Bible, surveyor's instruments and £5* to son THOMAS LAWRENCE;
- *next great Bible* and land to daughter HANNAH HERBERT; and
- 20 shillings to two eldest grandsons (not named).

WILLIAM'S will was proven at Middletown on 22 November 1750.³⁹ 8 children:

- a) WILLIAM L. LAWRENCE, JUNIOR: born 5 November 1688; died 1729; received a horse in the 1701 Will of WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE; was (Tax?) *Collector in Monmouth County*.⁴⁰ He married MERCY HARTSHORNE and had a farm on the north side of Mill Brook (Hopp River) and land *at Amboy* and a *fulling mill with lot* as indicated in his Last Will.⁴¹ They had six children:
 - i) MARY LAWRENCE
 - ii) MARGARET LAWRENCE
 - iii) CATHERINE LAWRENCE
 - iv) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE
 - v) WILLIAM LAWRENCE
 - vi) RICHARD LAWRENCE
 - b) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE: born 3 December 1690; married WILLIAM HARTSHORNE circa 1717; received property from father as detailed above; died 18 April 1751.
 - c) ROBERT LAWRENCE: born 25 September 1692.
 - d) RICHARD LAWRENCE: born 11 July 1694; died before February 1741.
 - i) WILLIAM LAWRENCE: received 36 acres at Barnegat from grandfather.
 - e) JOHN LAWRENCE: born 22 August 1696; died before February 1741.
 - i) WILLIAM LAWRENCE: received 100 acres on Hopp River from grandfather.
 - ii) JANE LAWRENCE: received 80 acres from grandfather.
 - f) MARY LAWRENCE: born 28 December 1698.
 - g) HANNAH LAWRENCE: born 1700; married in 1729 to OBADIAH HERBERT⁴² (born c1677 in Middlesex County, NJ; son of FRANCIS HERBERT and HANNAH APPLEGATE) in Middletown. He received land and *next great Bible* from father as detailed above. OBADIAH died 5 May 1757 in Perth Amboy, Middlesex County. A HANNAH HERBERT and JAMES WHITLOCK received a marriage license in Monmouth County on 11 December 1769; this may be the same person.
 - i) JACOB HERBERT: born 1750, Middletown; married c1772 near Shrewsbury to ELIZABETH HANCE (born 1750).
 - h) THOMAS LAWRENCE: received *largest old Bible, surveyor's instruments and £5* from father. Died unmarried.
- 3) **HANNAH LAWRENCE:** may have received a 120 acre patent for land in 1676. She married **JOSEPH GROVER** (born circa 1653) about 1684 in Monmouth County, NJ. *Their story continues on page 92.*
- 4) BENJAMIN LAWRENCE. Wife unknown; received 3 tracts of land in father's Will: $\frac{1}{7}$ share of the Barnegat Bay land and a $\frac{1}{6}$ share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property* plus a $\frac{1}{3}$ share of all remaining land. By 1731 he owned 950 acres in Upper Freehold. BENJAMIN'S Will is dated 13 July 1748 in Upper Freehold, proved 16 May 1755.
 - a) MARY LAWRENCE: Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
 - b) JOSEPH LAWRENCE: Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey

³⁹ Monmouth County Wills, Liber E, page 523.

⁴⁰ Conover Family Papers, Collection of the Monmouth County (NJ) Historical Association;
<http://www.monmouthhistory.org/Sections-read-31.html>

⁴¹ Monmouth County Wills, Liber B, page 256

⁴² *Ancestors of Richard Lawrence Clarke*. Unreferenced; copy in author's possession (Holman lineages).

- c) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE: 18 July 1729; Upper Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey. Married ROBERT HUTCHINSON.
- 5) ELISHA LAWRENCE:⁴³ some researchers claim ELISHA was the second son; he is thought to have been born about 1666, married LUCY STOUT, daughter of RICHARD STOUT and FRANCES HEATH and granddaughter of RICHARD and PENELOPE STOUT. In 1685 he was a partner in the *Manasquan Company* who located lots on the Atlantic coast between Wreck Pond (now Sea Girt) and Barnegat Bay (see map). In 1688 and 1690 ELISHA LAWRENCE obtained lots of land in Middletown and a share in a 131 acre tract owned by his brother WILLIAM. In 1698 his father conveyed to him lots of land amounting to 123 acres. He also purchased in 1698 the 280 acres sold by JOHN CRAWFORD and his wife, ABIGAIL, when they moved to Cape May. He received 90 acres on *the south side of the hopp river* in his father's Will, plus $\frac{1}{7}$ share of the Barnegat Bay land and a $\frac{1}{6}$ share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property*. ELISHA LAWRENCE then moved westward toward Upper Freehold and Crosswicks with other sons of the Middletown Patentees. On 19 November 1717 there is recorded an indenture between ELISHA and LUCY LAWRENCE of Freehold and THOMAS KEARNEY of Middletown for lands on the Wakake Creek within Middletown. This same date a deed records property being bought from CAPTAIN RICHARD SALTER of Freehold by ELISHA; this property was part of a 2,100 acre tract originally patented to JOHN BAKER on 24 May 1690. A village in Upper Freehold Township named Irish Mills was founded by an ELISHA LAWRENCE but it is not certain if this is the same person. Now the town is VanHiseville in Jackson Township. ELISHA represented Monmouth County in the 4th, 5th & 7th Assembly between 1708 and 1716. He signed his Will on 14 April 1722 and it was proved in May of 1724.⁴⁴
- a) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE: 01 May 1692, Freehold; married JOHN SALTER
 - b) WILLIAM LAWRENCE: 05 January 1693, Freehold; received a horse in the 1701 Will of WILLIAM I. LAWRENCE but not in his father's Will of 1722.
 - c) SARAH LAWRENCE: 20 January 1695, Upper Freehold; married JOHN FINLAY.
 - d) HANNAH LAWRENCE: 10 December 1697, Upper Freehold; married RICHARD SALTER, II.
 - e) JOHN LAWRENCE: 10 January 1699, Freehold; died young
 - f) ELISHA LAWRENCE: born 5 August 1701, Freehold. He was bequeathed some of his father's Middletown property that adjoined RICHARD HARTSHORNE'S land on Wakake Creek.⁴⁵ He sold that land and bought his father's Upper Freehold property, naming it *Chestnut Grove*.
 - i) WILLIAM LAWRENCE: settled in Middletown.
 - ii) JAMES LAWRENCE: along with brothers JOSEPH and JOHN, bought *Squan lots* on the Manasquan River and settled there.
 - iii) JOSEPH LAWRENCE: settled on the *Squan lots* on the Manasquan River.
 - iv) JOHN BROWN LAWRENCE: lived on a part of his father's *Chestnut Grove* tract that he named *Mulberry Hill*.



⁴³ op.cit. Thomas, *The Thomas Book*, page 397.

⁴⁴ Monmouth County Wills, Liber A, page 292.

⁴⁵ History of Monmouth County, Volume 2 (NY: Lewis Historical Publishing Company; 1922) p. 418.

- (1) JAMES LAWRENCE: Captain in the United States Navy during War of 1812, commander of the frigate *Chesapeake*, engaged the *Shannon* under command of a CAPTAIN BROKE on 1 June 1813. The *Chesapeake* was lost as was the life of her Captain.
 - (2) JOHN LAWRENCE: was a doctor and notorious Tory.
 - (3) ELISHA LAWRENCE: was Sheriff of Monmouth County before and during the Revolution; on 9 November 1774, ELISHA LAWRENCE, High Sheriff of Monmouth and THRUNIS VANDERVER, JUNIOR of Freehold Township recorded an indenture for land belonging to the late PETER VANKIRK.
- v) BENJAMIN LAWRENCE
- g) JOSEPH LAWRENCE: 07 December 1704, Freehold
 - h) REBECCA LAWRENCE: 07 November 1706, Upper Freehold
 - i) JOHN LAWRENCE 28 January 1709, Freehold
- 6) JOSEPH LAWRENCE: received 3 tracts of land in father's Will: 300 acres at Barnegat Beach, $\frac{1}{7}$ share of the Barnegat Bay land and a $\frac{1}{6}$ share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property*. According to that Will his eldest son was to receive a horse. JOSEPH also received SHALLO, his father's *negro boy*, which he was to free after 13 years, *i.e.* 1714. JOSEPH and his brother JOHN came to own the Manasquan lands that their father purchased from the Scotch Proprietors. JOSEPH first married SARAH WORTH (born circa 1675, died before December 1710), daughter of WILLIAM WORTH and FAITH PATTERSON. JOSEPH, of Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, married second, on 18 October 1712, the widow RACHEL CURTIS, of Burlington County, at the Friend's Meeting House in Chesterfield, Burlington County.⁴⁶ Witnesses included ELISHA, JAMES, HANNAH and ELIZABETH LAWRENCE *and others* (who are named in the actual records of the Chesterfield Monthly Meeting). The first 3 were likely JOSEPH'S siblings while the fourth could have been his step-mother.

RACHEL WRIGHT had married DAVID CURTIS of Mansfield Township, Burlington County on 2 July 1697. DAVID died between 22 March 1707, the *old style* date of his Will, and 25 May 1708, the date his estate was inventoried. A *plantation of 308 acres* found in the inventory may refer to the lands at Barnegat beach mentioned later in JOSEPH'S Will. Five children are named in DAVID'S Will: JOHN, DAVID, THOMAS, SAMUEL and ANNE CURTIS and his *brothers* THOMAS CURTIS and SAMUEL WRIGHT (probably brother-in-law) are named as *supervisors*.⁴⁷ Some researchers have claimed that RACHEL was the daughter of THOMAS FOLKES, SENIOR but offer no evidence to support that claim; records indicate that THOMAS FOLKES, JUNIOR was married to ELIZABETH CURTIS, DAVID'S sister and both were children of JOHN CURTIS who died in February 1696 from Mansfield Township; other children were JONATHON of England and THOMAS CURTIS, JUNIOR.

JOSEPH LAWRENCE, yeoman, of Manasquan signed his will in Shrewsbury on 23 June 1739. In that instrument he mentions his wife RACHEL, two of her sons and eight children from both marriages. To his wife's sons, JOHN and DAVID CURTISS, he bequeathed *part of the lands at Barnegat beach* which probably reflects the 308 acre plantation owned by their father; to his eight children was left his *Proprietary Right* and to his four youngest sons he left the *meadow on the beach this side the Great Hill against Matetakung River*. The inventory of the estate, valued at £38 9s 3d, was filed 25 April 1743; the will was proved 12 May 1743.⁴⁸ While the birthdates of his children are not known, the appearance of an unnamed *eldest son* of JOSEPH found in the 1701 Will of

⁴⁶ Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography, 9:347-352 (1885); different extract than that found in New Jersey Colonial Documents, Volume 12: Marriages 1665 – 1800.

⁴⁷ Burlington County Wills, Liber I, page 215.

⁴⁸ Monmouth County Wills, Liber D, page 56.

JOSEPH's father usually indicates that said son, BENJAMIN, hadn't yet been born. JOSEPH's children by his first wife SARAH are:

- a) HANNAH LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury.
- b) WILLIAM LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury, probably after 1701; may have been the recipient of a horse according to terms of grandfather's Will. He may be the *WILLIAM and wife* who brought a *certificate from Philadelphia* on 1 July 1740 to Shrewsbury Meeting. This William, a blacksmith, wanted to move back to Philadelphia and requested a certificate to do so in 1745, 1746 and 1748.
- c) FAITH LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury, born circa 1704.
- d) JOSEPH LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury, born circa 1706. On 5 May 1736 he asked for a certificate to marry at the Friends Meeting House in Shrewsbury. Banns of marriage were posted 5 August 1741 and he married ESTHER PARLEE of Shrewsbury by 7 October 1741 at Shrewsbury Friends Meeting.
- e) JAMES LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury, born circa 1708.
- f) SARAH LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury, born circa 1710.

JOSEPH's children by his second wife RACHEL are:

- g) BENJAMIN LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury
 - h) ELIJAH LAWRENCE: born in Shrewsbury
- 7) JOHN LAWRENCE: received three tracts of land in father's Will: 500 acres at Kettell Poynt at Barnegat Bay, $\frac{1}{7}$ share of the Barnegat Bay land and a $\frac{1}{6}$ share of *All Those Tracts of land taken upon the Account of the second Devision of My property*. Associated with the Manasquan Company lands with his brother ELISHA as mentioned above. His Will of 4 April 1719 names his wife as RACHEL and seven of the children below (ELIZABETH and GIBBONS are not listed)⁴⁹; it is has been conjectured that his wife's surname was GIBBONS, perhaps related to his brother WILLIAM's wife RUTH GIBBONS.
- a) JOHN LAWRENCE, JUNIOR: eldest son; bequeathed a horse by grandfather in 1701.
 - b) ELIZABETH LAWRENCE
 - c) GIBBONS LAWRENCE
 - d) BENJAMIN LAWRENCE.
 - e) CONSTANT LAWRENCE.
 - f) RACHEL LAWRENCE.
 - g) HANNAH LAWRENCE.
 - h) MARY LAWRENCE.
 - i) DORCAS LAWRENCE.

⁴⁹ Monmouth County Wills, Liber A, page 153.

BACKGROUND IV

WHO ARE THE HUGO-KNOTS?

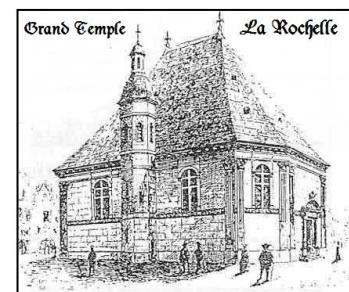
Simple answer: Protestants in France. La Rochelle went so far as to declare itself an independent Reformed Republic in 1568. The short-lived Republic fell in 1573 after a long siege that was an outgrowth of the Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre. La Rochelle's Protestants were a militant group, pillaging churches and destroying images and statues years earlier. In 1562 they assassinated 13 Catholic priests in the Tower of the Lantern. The Edict of Nantes of 1598 specified the towns where Huguenots could practice their religion unmolested in France and the major Huguenot stronghold was the coastal town of La Rochelle in the Poitou region. Huguenot suppression was again focused on La Rochelle in 1627 when the town was besieged by French Royalist troops. The town held out for 14 months before surrendering; the population was decimated, going from 27,000 to 5,000. The Protestants lost all of their religious freedoms as well as their civil (no government jobs or positions) and



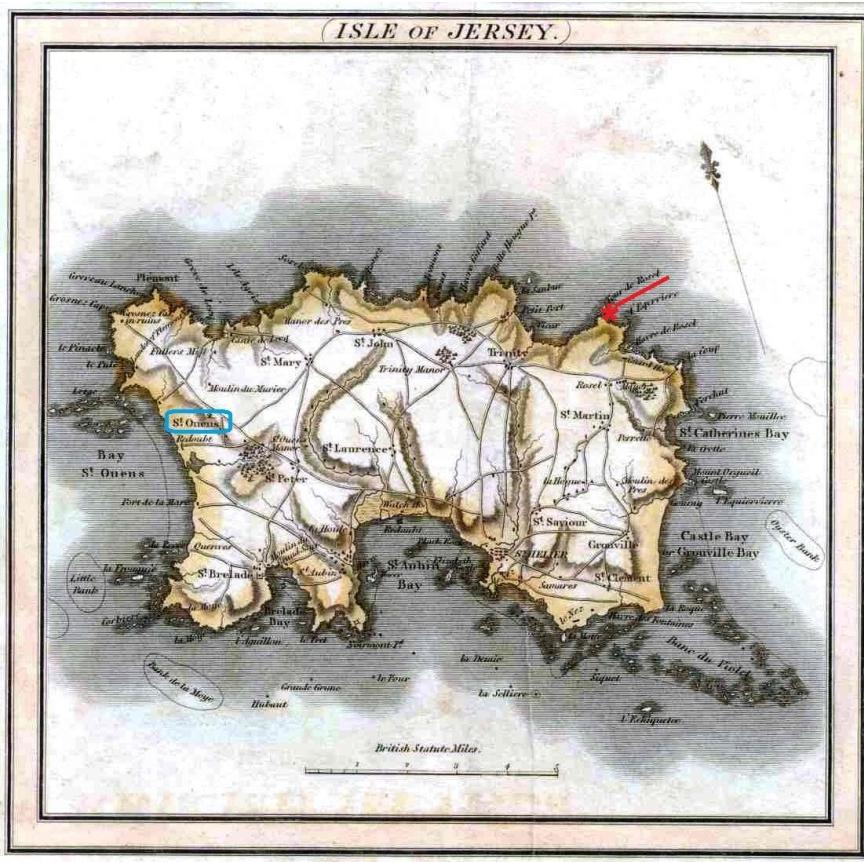
political rights (no voting right). PIERRE, if not living on Jersey, probably stayed on the Cotentin Peninsula even after his son Daniel headed for the New World with PHILIP CARTERET in 1665. The more repressive policies of LOUIS XIV started well after 1650 and this may have been the impetus to move to a relatively safer place like La Rochelle. In 1681 LOUIS XIV banned the emigration of Protestants but instituted other policies to get them to leave. One such policy was the *dragonnades*, whereby infantry of the worst sort, the *dragonnaires*, were

quartered in recalcitrant's homes to terrorize the occupants and cause either their conversion or leaving. All midwives had to be practicing Catholic after 1683 and they had to baptize all unhealthy newborns as Catholics less the infant die before its parents realized their error and did so of their own accord. The government forced the elderly to make death-bed conversions or face confiscation of all their wealth. La Rochelle's fleeing Huguenots founded New Rochelle, New York in 1688.

The Edict of Fontainebleau was issued on 18 October 1685, revoking most of the liberties guaranteed by the Edict of Nantes. This second Edict legalized forced Catholic baptisms, strengthened the anti-immigration laws for Huguenots, and required the demolition of Protestant churches and the banishment of all pastors. Up to 200,000 Protestants (27% of Protestants, and 1% of France's population) defied these hostile measures and fled the country between 1681 and 1685. By the end of that year 570 of the 815 established Protestant temples were closed and many torn down. The King's got what he wanted and a lot he did not have the forethought to consider – France's economy was ruined as the Huguenots controlled several of the most lucrative occupations and, when they left, so did their tax dollars.

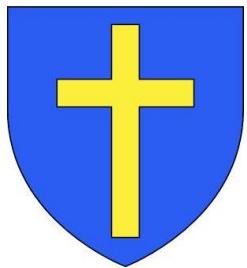


Perrin

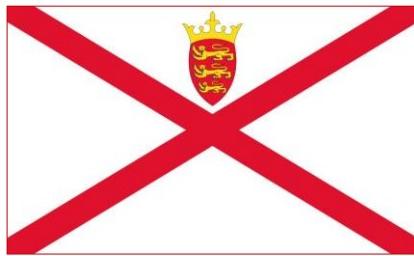


JERSEY is one of the Channel Islands attached to Brittany during the 1st millennium. The islands were annexed by the duchy of Normandy in 933 during a turbulent period of Viking invasions. The duke remains titular ruler, and the islands are the last remnant of the once great Duchy of Normandy who sent conquerors to southern Italy in 1017 where they created the Kingdom of the Two Sicily's and across the channel to conquer Kingdom of England in 1066.

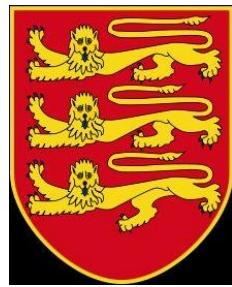
The Channel Islands include Jersey, Guernsey and several smaller islands became an English crown land after 1066. In that year DUKE WILLIAM, *the Bastard*, invaded England and became KING and CONQUEROR. A large number of the Norman nobility had large estates in England and the Channel Islands. In 1204, JOHN, King of England and Duke of Normandy, lost the entire duchy to PHILIP II, King of France, except the Channel Islands. He got to keep the almost meaningless title duke of Normandy as well. With the loss of Normandy to France the nobles had to decide which to forfeit – their estates in Normandy or those in England and the Channel Island. The estates in Normandy were usually richer and many Normans stayed behind and became French. The duke of Normandy continues to be titular ruler of the Channel Islands and, as in WILLIAM'S day, the duke of Normandy is also the QUEEN OF ENGLAND. ELIZABETH II is the DUKE, not Duchess, OF NORMANDY, just as she is the DUKE, not Duchess, OF LANCASTER.



Saint Ouën Coat-of-Arms



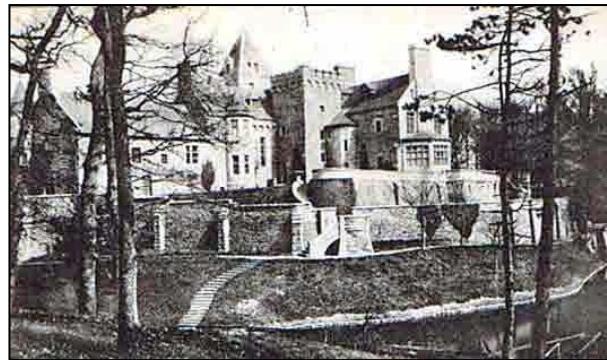
Flag of Jersey



Jersey Coat-of-Arms

The DE CARTERET family

The DE CARTERET family held *seigneuries* of Carteret and Angeville, and many smaller properties, on the coast of the Cotentin Peninsula in Lower Normandy since the 10th century with GUILLAUME DE CARTERET heading up the family in 960. SIR RENAUD DE CARTERET, his great-grandson, conquered the parish in the northwest corner of Jersey around 1080 which soon bore the name of the patron saint of the family: Saint Ouën. Soon thereafter he began building the manor house that would serve the family for over eight centuries. As the *seigneur* of Saint Ouën, or lord of the manor, the family held the senior fief on the 45 square mile island, a position often challenged by the DE BARENTIN *seigneurs* of Rosel in the first years. When



Normandy was lost to France in 1204, another RENAUD DE CARTERET decided to forfeit their Normandy estates and leave the family seat in Carteret for good. Despite forfeiting his Norman fortune, PHILLIP, son of RENAUD DE CARTERET, was taken hostage by KING JOHN in 1207 to guarantee CARTERET's loyalty. The Norman estates were eventually granted to GUILLAUME DE SAINT HILAIRE, *seigneur* of Samarès on Jersey who was secretly a French loyalist until 1346 when he was found out and fled to France. A small manor in Saint Saviour's parish named the *Fille de Carteret* existed but it was confiscated by the crown years ago. There was also a *fief de Carteret* established on Guernsey by a cadet branch. Members of the family were instrumental in resisting French attacks on the islands on 3 occasions. Though Jersey was divided into 12 parishes that reflected the largest manors, there were 5 designated as *grand parishes* whose holders formed the government: Rosel, Samarès, Trinity, Mélèches and Saint Ouën. These 5 still exist, at least on paper with the position of *seigneur*, now largely ceremonial, continuously held by a CARTERET descendant. After 1718 the *seigneur* was from a female line which changed the surname but the seigneur in the late 19th or early 20th century had *DE CARTERET* legally added to his own name. In 1970 the *seigneur* was GUY MALET DE CARTERET; he was the *seigneur* of several other holdings: Anchestre, és-Hamnonds, Portinfer, Saint Hillary's & Vinchelez de Bas in Saint Ouën's parish; és-Hormans & Vingt Livres in Saint Peter's parish; Saint Germain, Handois & les Quatorze Quartiers ou Garls in Saint John's parish and the Luce de Carteret.¹

¹ Societe Jersiaise, "Fiefs and their Seigneurs," <http://members.societe-jersiaise.org/lepivot/fiefs.htm>

Links between the CARTERET and PERRIN families.

The ancient pedigree, supposedly in the possession of SIR GEORGE CARTERET, states that RAWLIN TAMPIER, Lord of Roselle, married the daughter of RICHARD WESTON at the Castle of Jersey. Further, in the time of EDWARD IV (1461-1483), TAMPIER was killed during a siege of that castle. Their unnamed daughter married DOMINIQUE PERRIN a Burgess of the town of St. Pol in Guernsey.

Saint Pol has eluded identification thus far. The unnamed daughter was CATHERINE LEMPRIERE and her brother was JEAN LEMPRIERE, the 5th seigneur of Rosel in that family. Their children were EDMUND, JOHN and JAMES PERRIN. When JEAN LEMPRIERE died without an heir in 1534, the title passed to EDMUND PERRIN *in right of his mother*. After this, the title passed father-to-son for 3 generations. EDMUND PERRIN'S daughter, ISABEL, married JOHN DUMARESQ, 1 of the 12 major *seigneurs* of the Isle of Jersey in 1564. Their daughter ANNE DUMARESQ married PHILIP DE CARTERET after 1644. He became seigneur of Rosel, in right of his wife after the male line died out. (This pedigree supposedly originated with SIR GEORGE CARTERET, lord proprietor of East New Jersey. It was said to been copied by G.D. SCULL of Oxford, England; recopied by CHARLES PERRINE SMITH of Trenton, NJ and cited by D.V. PERRINE of Freehold, NJ according to SMITH, see footnote 10).

Then there is the following pedigree published by a Channel Islands interest group. There are several differences including who was the 1st *seigneur* of Rosel in the PERRIN family and how the manor passed to SIR PHILIP CARTERET. In the above, he holds the title in right of his wife after the last PERRIN *seigneur* died without an heir. But the alleged marriage of ANNE to SIR PHILIP after 1644 doesn't quite work as the last PERRIN *seigneur* died in 1630. Deciding which pedigree is more accurate is easy in this case but that doesn't mean everything it contains is accurate. I have supplemented the pedigree with information from PAYNE'S *Armorial of Jersey*:

Descendants of JEAN PERRIN²

JEAN PERRIN (1330-) m NICOLA DE SAUSMAREZ (1330-)

DOMINIQUE PERRIN (1350-)

JEAN PERRIN (1370-)

GUILLAUME PERRIN (1390-) m DU BOT (1390-)

JOHAN PERRIN (1410-)

1 JOHAN PERRIN (1430-) m >1460 PERRONELLE LE FEBVRE (1408-), daughter of MICHAEL LE FEBVRE, *seigneur* of Vinchelez de Bas.

c1460 purchases half fief of Saint Helène from NICHOLAS MORIN, Bailiff and 1st husband of PERRONELLE LE FEBVRE. 1442 fief in possession of NICHOLAS LE FEBVRE, brother of MICHAEL, *seigneur* of Vinchelez de Bas.

A DOMINIQUE PERRIN (1468-) of Guernsey, m CATHERINE LEMPRIERE (1470-)

1st PERRIN *Seigneur* of Rosel from 1534 to death, held in right of wife after death of her brother JEAN LEMPRIERE, the 5th LEMPRIERE *seigneur*, without an heir in 1534. 6 named ch:³

² Channel Islands Interest Group, theislandwiki; online at <http://www.theislandwiki.org>

³ J. Bertrand Payne, An Armorial of Jersey, (private printing, 1859) pp. 233-4

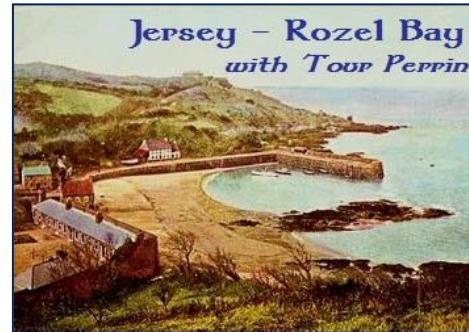
- I **EDMUND PERRIN** (1508-1552) m JANE HOLLAND (1512-1590) of Dartmouth.
Jersey Jurat (of the Royal Court) 1524 – 53; Lower court comprised of 2 Jurats & the Bailiff while Full Court had 7 Jurats. Jurats also sat in States of Jersey
2nd Seigneur of Rosel 15xx – 53
Constable of Saint Martin's parish 1531-36
 i **HUGH PERRIN** (1530 - 1595)
Jurat 1563 – 88, resigned 1583 due to age and ill health but returned and again resigned 1588 for same reasons and long absence from Bench.
3rd Seigneur of Rosel 1553 - 1595.
Tour Perrin built around this time.
Mortal enemy is his description of brother-in-law JEAN DUMARESQ.
 M (1) MARY LEMPRIERE, 2nd daughter of CLEMENT LEMPRIERE. 2 ch:
 a. **JEAN PERRIN:**
4th Seigneur of Rosel 1595 – 1621; briefly confiscated by JAMES I
M MARY DE BEAUVOIR, daughter of PETER DE BEAUVOIR of Guernsey and widow of JOHN EFFARD, Jurat of Guernsey. 5 ch
 1. **ABRAHAM PERRIN:** died in Mont Orgeuil Castle in 1630.
5th Seigneur of Rosel 1621 – 1625; sold to SIR PHILIP DE CARTERET, seigneur of Saint Ouëns, because of debts.
M(1) SUSAN DUMARESQ, daughter of HELIER DUMASRESQ of La Haule. She died 1611. 1 ch:
 A) JANE PERRIN: sole heir. Mar HENRY DE LA MARCHE from Guernsey.
 In 1668 he failed at his attempt to recover Rosel in court.
M(2) JACQUELINE DE GOURFALLEUX, dau of seigneur of Bonfossé, Normandy.
 2. JEAN PERRIN "of the Morin."
 3. MARY PERRIN: Mar 1601 to JEAN LE FEBVRE.
 4. SARAH PERRIN: Mar 1609 to NOEL LE GEYT.
 5. SUSAN PERRIN: died 1619.
 b. **JANE PERRIN**
 M (2) JANE GUILLEBERT; 1 ch:
 c. HUGH PERRIN: 3 ch; M (1) cousin DOROTHY PAULETT (1559-).
 M (2) ELIZABETH SAUNDERS
 1. CECILIA PERRIN: born 1637.
 2. PHILIP PERRIN: born 1641.
 3. EDMUND PERRIN: born 1645.
 ii MARGARET PERRIN: (1532-) M PETER HARRIS of Guernsey.
 iii CATHERINE PERRIN: (1534-) M THOMAS LE HARDY
 iv ISABEL PERRIN: (1536-) M (1) NICHOLAS DE BEAUVOIR. M (2) c1564 JEAN/JOHN DUMARESQ (1540-), Jersey Bailiff 1566-1596 (with interruptions). This was his 2nd marriage also.
 v ELIZABETH PERRIN (1538-1574) M (1) JOHN EFFARD (relation to husband of MARY DE BEAUVOIR, wife of JEAN PERRIN unknown) M (2) HOSTES NICOLLE, Jersey Bailiff 1561-4, he died June 1564. M (3) GEORGE PAULETT (1534-1621), Jersey Bailiff
 a. RACHEL PAULETT (1561-1650) m PHILIP DE CARTERET (1552-1594), eldest son of HELIER DE CARTERET, seigneur of St Ouën,
 b. ABRAHAM PAULETT: became Attorney General in 1603; died in 1605.
 c. DOROTHY PAULETT (1559-) m cousin HUGH PERRIN
 II JOHAN PERRIN
 III NICOLAS PERRIN
 IV JAMES PERRIN
 V ISABEL PERRIN
 VI MARY PERRIN: m JAMES GUILLE, Bailiff of Guernsy

- B PERROTINE PERRIN (1466-)
- C GENETTE PERRIN (1472-1473)
- D JOHAN PERRIN (1474-)
- E LAURENCE PERRIN (1476-)
- F NICOLAS PERRIN (1478-)
- 2 PERROTINE PERRIN (1494-)

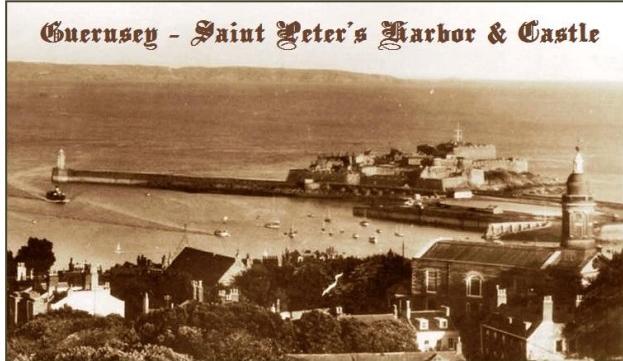
Rozel Bay was named after the ancient Norman Castle Rozel that faced the islands from Les Pieux. The name accompanied WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR in 1066 with SIR HUGH OF ROZEL. SIR HUGH was the son of SIR ROGER DE BARNEVILLE and some researchers give ROGER the surname PERRIN, believing they are direct ancestors of our line. Other published sources indicate ROGER went to Sicily for another Norman invasion. On Jersey the Norman *Rozel* was altered to the English *Rosel* when it came to naming the manor. The manor passed father-to-son through 5 generations of PERRIN *seigneurs*:

1. 1534 – 15xx DOMINIQUE PERRIN
2. 15xx – 1553 EDMUND PERRIN
3. 1553 – 1595 HUGH PERRIN
4. 1595 – 1621 JEAN PERRIN
5. 1621 – 1625 ABRAHAM PERRIN

The new *seigneur* was besieged by lawsuits from creditors for manorial debts incurred while under PERRIN *seigneurs*. After ABRAHAM died in 1630, his widow had to sue SIR PHILIP CARTERET, *seigneur* of Rosel and Saint Ouën, to obtain her dower rights to Rosel.



A PERRIN presence on the Channel Islands dates to the early 14th century and family members were prominent through the 15th century on Jersey as *seigneurs* of Rosel in Saint Martin's parish and on Guernsey as Bailiffs. The family is undoubtedly Norman but claims that SIR ROGER DE BARNEVILLE and his son SIR HUGH DE ROZEL who accompanied WILLIAM in 1066 were, in fact, SIR ROGER PERRIN DE BARNEVILLE and SIR HUGH PERRIN DE ROZEL has yet to be documented. The claim that they are our direct ancestors is also an unsupported one. The existence of a Crusader named PERRIN may be more accurate. At least with this claim there is a tiny bit of evidence to back it up and that is found on the Coat-of-Arms to be discussed shortly. It is known that cadet branches were established in Yorkshire, England by the 12th century and in Ireland by the 13th. PERRIN ancestors have been claimed to be affiliated by birth and marriage with the houses of BARNEVILLE, DECARTERET and SAVOY.⁴



⁴ vide The Compendium, op. cit., Vol.7, p.574 and Monnette, op. cit., Vol. 3, p. 435 (refers to *Ephemerides – Illustrations et Celebrites Savoisiennes*, by Norbert Dunoyer, 1912).

LAURENCE PERRIN (*female*?): married or partnered with WILLIAM LE MARCHANT, son of DROUET LE MARCHANT, in mid-1400s. DROUET was captain of Beauregard Castle, Saint Peter Port, Guernsey during *temp Edward IV* and living in 1460.

PERRIN and 5 generations

In the course of writing this I stumbled upon a situation never encountered before: a surname being repeatedly associated with 5 generations. We've already seen the 5 generations of *seigneurs* of Rosel. Here's more PERRIN'S from France:

- ❖ *La Maison Perrin*: founded in 1949 by RAYMOND PERRIN continues today in the 5th generation as *Perrin Paris*.
- ❖ The *FAMILLE PERRIN* is the largest of 5 generation PERRINS so far. They're holdings include:
 - ❖ Château de Beaucastel, Courthezon, France: around 1912 PIERRE PERRIN took over the running of this wine estate in southeast France from his father-in-law. 5 generations later, besides *Château de Beaucastel*, labels include: *Clos de Tourelles, Crus & Terroirs* and *La Vieille Ferme*.
 - ❖ *Tablas Creek Vineyard*, Paso Robles, California: 5th generation of the *FAMILLE PERRIN* cofounded this vineyard where they experiment with varieties of grapes.
 - ❖ *Perrin & Fils*, Cotes du Rhone Villages, France: this label doesn't appear on the *FAMILLE PERRIN* website. Instead the Perrin & Fils website claims they use *the same viticultural and wine-making techniques used at Château de Beaucastel*. They're owned by the *FAMILLE PERRIN*.
- ❖ *Perrin Farms*, Lodi, California: another wine business, this one founded by HENRY PERRIN of Quebec in 1914 and owned by 5th generation descendants.

Canada was another destination for French PERRIN'S:

A La Rochelle Huguenot branch: HENRI PERRIN from Brittany to **Quebec**, 1661.

Two Lanquedoc Catholic branches: ANTOINE to **Quebec**, 1720 and JEAN to **Montreal**, 1760.

The **Yorkshire PERRINS** came to this country as well: **Virginia** bound were JOHN PERRYN in 1635; ARTHUR and RICHARD PERRIN in 1637; and JOHN PERRIN in 1642 while **Boston** claimed CHARLES PERING in 1738. (*note the spelling variations*)

I've found a BMX racer, the multinational *Tower Perrin, Inc* and even a couple of physicists!

ISLE OF JERSEY: THE STATEN ISLAND OF THE ENGLISH CHANNEL

Somewhat ironically, our PERRIN ancestors moved from one disputed island to another lying just a few feet off the coast of New Jersey in New York Bay. Claims to Staten Island by New York are based on two statements, one true, the other a lie, first made in colonial days:

- ❖ **True**: lands west of the Hudson River belong to New Jersey.

- ❖ **Lie:** the course of the almost mile-wide Hudson River is through Upper New York Bay after which it makes an abrupt curve to the west, travels 3 miles along the north shore of Staten Island in the thousand-foot wide channel called Kill van Kull before passing through Newark Bay and turning abruptly south, following a short-lived, prehistoric river for about 10 miles that we know that as the 600' wide Arthur Kill (whose name recalls the earlier Dutch designation for this area of New Jersey – Achter Col) before emptying into Raritan Bay after 10 miles.

The lie was presented in court by the agent representing colonial New York, an attorney, before a judge, another attorney, before being deemed legally true. Scientific evidence has long since established the course of the Hudson River as being through the Narrows and into Lower New York Bay. While a judge's decision that was favorable to his boss, JAMES, Duke of York, could possibly be forgiven, the repeated affirmation of the lie as truth by judges of the several courts where the dispute has been heard over the last 3 centuries points to the conclusion that minimal intelligence is required to be a judge (which has consistently found to be true during the 15 years when I appeared as an expert witness in matters of constitutional law and at those times when I appeared in court as a party).

Perhaps to maintain karmic harmony, the PERRIN family obtained 80 acres of land on Staten Island by a grant from PHILLIP CARTERET, proprietary governor of East Jersey, in 1680. A decade earlier a GROVER ancestor obtained rights to land in New Jersey by being one of the original 24 patentees of the Monmouth Patent issued by COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS, royal governor of New York colony!



Husband's Name:

PIERRE PERRIN⁵

Born: 1615

Lyon, Rhône, France

Married: 1638

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

Died: 1698

Richmond County, N.Y.

Buried:

Father: COMTE DU PERRIN⁶ B: 1580; D:1615 (La Rochelle, Charente Maritime, France)

Mother: LADY DU PERRIN B: Abt 1580

Wife's Name:

ADRIENNE JUBRIL

Born: 25 January 1617 (o.s.)

Ardennis, Vendrissee, France

Died:

Buried:

Father: JEAN JUBRIL

b: Abt 1595; D: Abt.1617 Ardennis, Vendrisse, France

Mother: JUVINE LOMBARD

b: Abt 1596; D: Abt.1622 Ardennis, Vendrisse, France

ISSUE:

BORN:

WHERE:

1) **DANIEL PERRIN**

1640

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

2) JOHN PERRIN

1645

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

3) HENRY PERRIN

1646

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

Additional children may include:

4) JEAN PERRIN 1639

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

5) PIERRE PERRIN 1643

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

6) PONCETTE PERRIN 1644

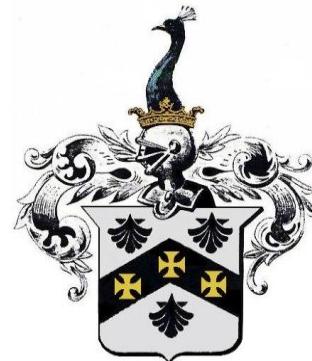
Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

7) ELIZABETH PERRIN 1648

Saint Ouën Parish, Isle of Jersey

At this point, little is known with certainty. The PERRIN, or PERINEA, family may have been originally established at Nayers (Noyers-Bacage) on the Cotentin (Cherbourg Peninsula) in Lower Normandy, about 150 miles west of Paris. There are some who maintain that PIERRE was a relative of the COMTE DU PERRIN, not his son.⁷ The *COUNT OF PERRIN* seems to say that *Perrin* was the locale that the COMTE was fromwas a Huguenot refugee said to be from “Nouère” which might be the area around the river of the same name. Research has turned up little in the way of the COMTE. Located in the southeastern Poitou-Charente region, there are two possible towns: Asnières-sur-Nouère and Saint-Amant-de-Nouère.

Just how the blazon was granted to a PERRIN is not known. It does not appear to have originated in England and PAYNE'S *Armorial*



⁵ vide Borodaeff, op. cit., p.5.

⁶ Information on Pierre's wife, in-laws and parents from: *Harrington, Clubine, Benthey, Lee and Associated Families*, Patrick Lee Harrington 2004-10-04; <http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com> (and)

Ancestors from Adam to Frederic Lathrop, Fred Lathrop 2004-09-12; <http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com>

⁷ J J Clute, *Old Families of Staten Island*, page 79.

of Jersey makes no mention of it. The stories handed down over the generations indicate a prominent place in Norman history and it may be that the blazon was granted by the duke of Normandy. While many families have fanciful tales of “their” coat-of-arms, these are reliably said to have been on a ring worn by PIERRE who gave the ring to his son DANIEL before he sailed to the New World. Copies of the design preserved by descendants are the only recorded information found to date. As shown in the picture, the records should read:

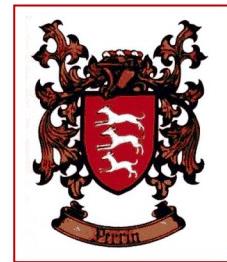
Blazon: Argent, on a chevron sable three cross pattee or between 3 escallops sable.

Crest: a knight’s helmet with a simple coronet, or. A peacocks head, couped, proper.

A reference to the Crusades is found in the use of escallops and the PERRINS may descend from SIR ROGER DE BARNEVILLE, a participant in the First Crusade. ROGER, *seigneur de Barneville*, and his son, HUGH, *seigneur de Rozel* (the castle on the mainland), were among the Norman knights who accompanied WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR to England in 1066-67.⁸ In that work, no mention of the surname PERRIN is given for SIR ROGER. In the *Domesday Book* of 1086, SIR HUGH’S *hereditary title* is mentioned, but no surname. A charter dating to the time of KING STEPHEN (1135-54) gives the name of HUGH’S *son* as ROBERT DE ROSEL; during HENRY II’s reign (1154-89) there is a record dated 1165 in which HUGH’S *grandson* is named as ROBERT DE ROSEL; again without PERRIN. A collection of biographies from 1916 has:

This was a distinguished Huguenot family; one of its members served as an officer in the Protestant armies during the terrible religious wars which raged in France during the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. It is recorded that Roger Perrin, Seigneur of Barneville and Roswell, accompanied William the Conqueror, later joining the First Crusade, marching to Palestine under Robert, Duke of Normandy. He evidently acquitted himself gallantly, as he was honorably mentioned in the records of that period. It is from this Roger Perrin that the immigrant Daniel Perrin who came to this country on the "Ship Philip" in 1665 in the suite of his cousin, Sir Philip Carteret, the first governor of the Colony of New Jersey, is descended.”⁹

Several other blazons bear the name PERRIN but only one other has been said to link to our line being awarded to a PIERRE PERRIN of the Isle of Jersey. The specifics of the blazon are not given by the person making this assertion.¹⁰ In fact, this is a Coat-of-Arms granted to a cadet branch of the PERRIN FAMILY living on Guernsey. According to the GUILLE of Guernsey pedigree in Payne’s, the *blazon* is *Gules, three greyhounds, in pell. Argent.*



ANDRIENNE’s parent’s JEAN JUBRIL and JUVINE LOMBARD died at young ages, allegedly 22 and 26, respectively. It has been said that she had two siblings:

- JEAN JUBRIL: born 14 October 1620 in Ardennis, Vendrisse, France
- JANNE JUBRIL: born 23 August 1622 in Ardennis, Vendrisse, France

There are many stories bandied about regarding just where PIERRE and ANDRIENNE lived – some say at Saint Ouën, others have them in Ireland or England, and being near Rouen in

⁸ Catherine Powell, Duchess of Cleveland, *Battle Abbey Roll*, V. 1 (1889)

⁹ Leonard Wilson, “Margaret Walters Dey Burruss,” *Makers of America; Biographies of Leading Men of Thought and Action*” V. II (Washington, DC, BF Johnson, Inc; 1916)

¹⁰ Kathy Langford, personal research; <http://www.webdsign.com/perrin/coatofarms.html>

Upper Normandy are just the regularly repeated ones.¹¹ As is usual with family stories, there is a kernel of truth in them – branches of the Perrin family had been in England and Ireland for over 3 centuries by 1600; they undoubtedly spent time with their son at Saint Ouën; as for Rouen, who knows where that came from. PIERRE'S ancestors are said to have *fled to England or Ireland* in the early 16th century to escape religious persecution, which *could* be true, but they only had to travel the 12 miles to Jersey to accomplish this.¹² The family's presence in the Channel Islands is documented to the 14th century. We can surmise that PIERRE'S parents, or his mother at least, returned to France before 1615 as PIERRE is believed to have been born at Lyon in the east-central Rhône-Alps region that year. As Protestants, it is a safe bet to say they would not have returned until the *EDICT OF NANTES* granting limited religious toleration for Huguenots was issued in 1595. This PIERRE probably lived on Jersey but frequently visited the Cherbourg Peninsula if the alleged family descent from Roger de Barnevile is correct. One record states that PIERRE was from an unidentified place named *Lower Chalfonte*; perhaps Lower Charente was meant as it is doubtful that it refers to the mythical 12th century French kingdom located “deep in the woods.”

Many have supposed PIERRE lived in La Rochelle later in life but this may only be based on the freedoms allowed to Huguenots in that town.

The *EDICT OF FONTAINEBLEAU* could well have been a significant factor in PIERRE'S decision to abandon his country at or near the age of 70. He may have only been in La Rochelle after deciding to join his son in the New World. Unlike his son DANIEL, PIERRE's decision to emigrate probably was fueled by the repression and antagonism aimed at Huguenots as the 17th century progressed. No longer to hold public office, practice medicine or law, those that did not submit to the widespread forced conversions to Catholicism were not only ostracized but were subject to confiscation of their property, loss of their children.,

If PIERRE left on the *Caledonia* as has been stated (and detailed below) it was the *anticipation* of the *REVOCATION* that spurred him on as the *Caledonia* sailed six weeks before the *REVOCATION* was effective. Just how much PIERRE was affected by these repressive measures is not known, but it was undoubtedly a prominent factor. Caledonia is the old Roman name for Scotland and every ship sailing in the 17th century with the name *Caledonia* was based in Scotland. Given the number of Scottish proprietors involved in the early history of both East and West Jersey, ships frequently sailed between Scotland and Perth Amboy.

The Prodigal FATHER?

PIERRE came to America circa 1685 and lived with his son DANIEL. It is thought his son HENRY may have been with him at this time. By 1685 PIERRE's son DANIEL had been living in Elizabethtowne or on Staten Island for about 20 years.

Several writers state that he sailed on the *Caledonia* out of La Rochelle in Lower Charente to the Netherlands before heading across the Atlantic.¹³ La Rochelle is now the capital

¹¹ Gardner Washington , *History of Calhoun County Michigan*, V. II (Lewis Publ Co., New York, 1913) page 1342

¹² G. Elmore Reaman, *The Trail of the Huguenots*; 1963; p.134.

¹³ *vide* Monnette, op. cit., Vol. 3, p.399 (refers to the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. 20, pp. 33 & 92, which then refers to *Contributions to the Early History of Perth Amboy and Adjoining Country* by William Whitehead, 1856 (D. Appleton and Co, NY) pages 265-6. (aka Whitehead's History of Staten Island). Whitehead cites NY Colonial Documents, 20 October 1699, volume 4, pages 556, 591-2, 595, 760. The ship may be listed in *Ship Passenger Lists, New York and New Jersey, 1600 – 1825* by Charles Boyer, III.

of the Charente-Maritime *department*. There is no ship's passenger list naming PIERRE as a passenger but it is definitely possible but he would have had to get to Leith, Scotland first.

On 5 September 1685 the *Caledonia* left Leith for Perth Amboy: *During a period of persecution occurring in the reign of KING CHARLES II, about a hundred men that had been spared the sword were put on the Caledonia, an unseaworthy old craft that leaked so badly that it was evident expectation that all on board would go down, ere they were out of sight of land. But a competent man was chosen Captain, and by dint of constant bailing a kind of Providence brought the ship safely to Perth Amboy, New Jersey, in 1685.*¹⁴ The 1685 voyage is said to have been loaded with emigrants from Old England. But there were only twelve names of the emigrants recorded there; they were proprietors to whom large grants of land were made in East Jersey.¹⁵ Many Scots were fleeing persecution for being Presbyterian Covenanters; PIERRE sailed in good company! This ship wrecked at Perth Amboy without any injuries or deaths; references to the 1685 *Caledonia* wreck are found throughout early New Jersey records – so much for bringing the ship safely to Perth Amboy. One of the dozen names was JOSEPH PERRIN from France who later lived at Matchaponix - he remains an unknown to this day.

This 1685 wreck is often confused with the abandonment and subsequent wreck of a different *Caledonia* in 1715. It sailed from Leith under the command of CAPTAIN JOHN ANDERSON and dropped anchor safely at Perth Amboy. During stormy weather a couple days later, it broke its moorings and wrecked on the southeast coast of Staten Island. A repeated, but false, story has 2 survivors of the wreck, HENRI and DANIEL PERRIN, being treated so kindly by the residents they decided to stay.¹⁶ Nobody was onboard the *Caledonia* when it wrecked, ergo, there could be any survivors.¹⁷

¹⁴ *Biographical and Genealogical History of Morris County, New Jersey*, 1899, page 48.

¹⁵ William Henry Jennings, *A Genealogical History of the Jennings Families in England and America*; Volume II — The American Families; 1899

¹⁶ William S. Horner "Perrins, French Huguenots; Pierre Head of the Line; His Son Daniel, Came First, in 1665," in *This Old Monmouth of Ours*, 1932 (Morew Brothers Freehold, NJ) pp.117-121. Henriette E. Savery Smith, [Perrine genealogy, book title not known] 1902, pp.17-18.

¹⁷ William A Whitehead, *Contributions to the Early History of Perth Amboy and Adjoining Country, with Sketches of Men and Events in New Jersey During the Provincial Era*; 1856

Husband's Name:

DANIEL PERRIN

Born: 1640¹⁸ France
Married: 18 February 1665/6¹⁹ Elizabeth Towne, East New Jersey
Died: 1719²⁰ Smoking Point, Richmond County, NY?
Buried: *French Church Cemetery*, Marshald, Richmond County, NY
Father: PIERRE PERRIN (d. 1698)
Mother: ANDRIENNE JUBRIL (b: 25 Jan 1618 Ardennis, Vendrisse, France)

Wife's Name:

MARIE THOREL

Born: 1649²¹ Rouen, Perdy, France
Died: 1686 Smoking Point, Richmond County, NY
Buried: *French Church Cemetery*, Marshald, Richmond County, NY

Father:

Mother:

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) PETER PERRIN	1667	New Dorp, Richmond County, NY ²²
2) HENRY PERRIN	1669	"of Staten Island" ²³
3) JAMES PERRIN	1670	New Dorp, Richmond County, NY
4) DANIEL PERRIN	1672	Staten Island, Richmond County, NY
5) WILLIAM PERRIN	1673	Staten Island, Richmond County, NY
6) FRANCYNTJE PERRIN	1675	Staten Island, Richmond County, NY ²⁴

DANIEL was a French Huguenot, most likely residing on the English-held Isle of Jersey. Daniel may have been the first generation to leave France. He was apparently on the Isle of Jersey for some time before 1665 but when he arrived is not known. What does seem to be the case is that his move to colonial England did not have much to do with the religious conflicts but more likely because of family connections with the French DECARTERET family who were major land holders on the Isle of Jersey as well. He, as a French Huguenot under KING LOUIS XIV, could not settle in the all Catholic New France. However, as an English subject, he could exchange his English residence of Jersey for the English held territory of New Jersey. This time period was one of turmoil for New Netherland too as the Dutch and English were at often at war. In 1664, CHARLES II, KING OF ENGLAND, deeded this land to his brother JAMES, DUKE OF YORK. On 24 June 1664 the

¹⁸ The Trail of the Huguenots, G. Elmore Reaman, (Frederick Muller Ltd: London) 1963, p. 252; and vide Borodaeff, op. cit., pp.5-6.

¹⁹ East Jersey Deeds, Liber 3, p.6; in possession of NJ Archives, Trenton, NJ as NJ Archives, 1st Series, Vol. 22, p. 77.

²⁰ vide Reaman, op. cit., p.134. No source is given for this date and Reaman may have meant that Daniel was still alive in 1719.

²¹ Birth and death year obtained on Ancestry.com at <http://awt.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/sse.dll?db=gedind&ti=0&f2=510&f3=38>

²² for descendants of Peter Perrin see The Compendium of American Genealogy, The Virkus Co., 1:901 and 4:425 & 460.

²³ for descendants of Henry Perrin see Ibid, 5:461 and 6:445.

²⁴ for children of Francyntje Perrin see Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, 1:63 & 107.

DUKE deeded the area of New Jersey to LORD JOHN BERKELEY, BARON OF STRATTON (Somerset County, England) and SIR GEORGE CARTERET, KNIGHT AND BARONET, of Saltrum (Devon, England). In September 1664 the Dutch lost possession of New Netherland. On 10 February 1665 the Concessions that will govern the new colony are granted, CAPTAIN PHILIP CARTERET is appointed Governor, ROBERT VAUQUELLIN, *Sieur des Prairie*, from Caen, France, is appointed Surveyor General and the ship *Philip* is commissioned. The *Philip* was outfitted and crewed in either Jersey or England. CAPTAIN PHILIP CARTERET, 4th cousin of SIR GEORGE and several others sailed from Jersey to England in early 1665. In April, delayed by the outbreak of war between the Dutch and English, the *Philip* sailed from England with thirty passengers just as the great plague was devastating the island nation. PHILIP (1639-1682), son of HELIER DeCARTERET, was *Seigneur of the Manor of La Hogue* but for unknown reasons was willing to change Jerseys from *Isle* to *New*. After a long and weather-beaten voyage, the damaged ship arrived at Newport News, Virginia on the Chesapeake Bay by the 13th of June. After necessary repairs, the voyage was completed and the *Philip* anchored in New York Bay on 29 July 1665. CAPTAIN, passengers and crew crossed Newark Bay to *Achter Kol* (the Dutch name) a few days later. The half-million acre tract that would become Elizabeth-Towne Plantations (now covering all of Union County and parts of Somerset and Morris Counties) was granted by COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS, the *Royal Governor of New York*, on 1 December 1664 to a group called the *Associators* to settle *Kill van Kull*, Elizabeth-Towne's predecessor. He was not aware that *Albania* had been deeded away by the DUKE OF YORK (AND ALBANY, hence New Jersey's early name) despite the lapse of more than five months. *Kill van Kull* was laid out a few miles upriver from where the river empties into Newark Bay. The river traversed a vast area of salt marshes before meeting the bay across from the northwest corner of Staten Island.

DANIEL was one of eighteen male "servants" and MARIA THOREL or THORNELL was one of three female "servants" of SIR GEORGE CARTERET on the Isle of Jersey who made the Atlantic Ocean crossing on the *Philip*. It is believed that MARIE'S parents were married in 1617 at Ardennis, Vendrisse, France, but documentation is lacking. These servants spoke French and maintained the French customs of their ancestors from the DECARTERET holdings in France. The term "servant" three centuries ago implied a relationship of protection and did not indicate menial help though the Puritanical Elizabethtown residents treated them as inferiors. PHILIP CARTERET had been appointed *Proprietary Governor of New Jersey* at the same time that COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS held the office of *Royal Governor of New York* by order of the DUKE OF YORK.²⁵ The dual, and competing, leadership created problems for many decades. The DUKE OF YORK was playing a game to maximize his income from his territories while minimizing his expenses.

DANIEL and MARIE arrived in Kill van Kull in August 1665. The name of the town was changed to Elizabeth-Towne to honor SIR GEORGE CARTERET's wife; likewise, the river became the Elizabeth River. The arrival of CARTERET was memorialized in the painting *Landing of Governor Philip Carteret at Elizabethtowne, NJ 1665* described:

The time depicted was on August 1665 the day clear, sky calm, the blue waters and marsh grasses showing in the background, the Governor alone stands covered while his secretary reads the Royal Commission, and behind them are the

²⁵First Settlers of Ye Plantations of Piscataway and Woodbridge, O. E. Monnette (Leroy Carmen Press: Los Angeles) 1930, Vol. 1, p. 103. Also in Vol. 3, p. 399, Monnette indicates that H. D. Perrine thought that Daniel's first son was named Joshua. After obtaining this work, this author finds no evidence to support Monnette's theory.

guards and the emigres from the ship Philip, part of whose masts and hull show above their heads. The then settlers, four families from the Island of Jamaica, and some Indians form the audience. We see Daniel Perrin, a young man, standing at the extreme right leaning against the rail of the little dock. Maria Thorel, soon to become Maria Perrin, stands immediately back of the guard in the foreground with a white kerchief around her shoulders, and possibly with some or all of her wardrobe in a bundle on her arm. (Daniel and Maria are the first and fourth figures from the right.)

Thanks to the genius of this talented artist, we are permitted an opportunity to view the scene of that first eventful day on the shore of the New World, and to imagine that we see the figures of our ancestors to be. The picture is true to nature and history, as the records of that period indicate.²⁶

Their marriage is the first on record for Elizabethtown and for New Jersey. In fact, this record is found in the records of the Province of New York as well as New Jersey. Their marriage bond is dated 12 February 1665, seemingly 5 months prior to their arrival! At this time the Julian calendar was being used and 1666 did not start until 25 March. By today's Gregorian calendar, the year was 1666. Dates between 1 January and 25 March that are followed by *o.s.*, for *old style*, should have their year read as being "plus 1" that is to say 1665 (*o.s.*) means 1666; only those dates which are quoted exactly or refers to a specific document or patent retain the old style – all others have been updated by the author. Because of this, many records from this time are double-dated 1665/6. Their marriage bond states:

Where as I have received information of a mutuall intent and agreement between Daniel Perrin of Elizabeth Towne in the province of New Jersey and Maria Thorel - of the same Towne, spinster to solemnize marriage together for which they have requested my lycence and there appearing no Lawfull impediment for ye obstruction thereof. These are to require you are eyther of you to Joyne the said Daniel Perrin and Marie Thorel in Matrimony and then to pronounce man and wife, and to make record thereof according to the Lawes in that behalfe provided for the doing where of this shal be to you or Eyther of you a sufficient warrant. Given Und^r my hand and seale the twelft day of February An^o 1665 and in the 18th yeare of his Ma^{ties} Reign King Charles the Second &c &c.

To any of the Justices of the Peace or Ministers W^hin the Government of the province of New Jersey.

Phi: Carteret

These couple where Joyned together in Matrimony the 18 Feb. 1665 by me.

J. Bollen

The following day, 19 February 1665 (*o.s.*), PHILIP issued a decree by which each of the eighteen male servants received land at Elizabeth-Towne Plantations (the three female servants did not receive similar grants); these tracts were part of a twenty-seven hundred acre grant CARTERET

²⁶ Howland Delano Perrine, Daniel Perrin, the Huguenot (South Orange N.J. 1910)

obtained that had a three or four-year tenancy requirement that was undoubtedly transferred to each recipient. The promise of land was one of the enticements that made the trans-Atlantic move desirable. The land grants made to the eighteen male servants of CARTERET were inducements according to the old Virginia system of *headrights*. Each indentured servant received 75 acres after their term of service expired. PHILIP CARTERET immediately claimed the *headrights* for his servants upon landing totaling 1350 acres, or one half of the grant; the reason behind the doubling of the *headrights* is not clear. Assuming the longer term of indenture, DANIEL would have come into possession of his *headright* by 1670 at the latest.

The United Provinces of the Netherlands regained the former New Netherland in August 1673; they let it go in February 1674, in part due to recalling the difficult times they had when the area was a venture of the West India Company. In September 1674 an *Oath of Allegiance* to the United Provinces was signed by seventy-six of the eighty men of Elizabethtown; DANIEL's name does not appear – he may have been one of the four missing men or, as with a subsequent oath to the English monarch, he was not required to sign. Dutch rule continued through November 1674 due to the great lag-time in communications and the delay in providing for all the English officers once again. Landholders were required to obtain a warrant for a survey to be recorded and the second-class nature of the *servants* is shown again when, on 14 March 1675 a warrant for a survey of twenty-seven hundred acres was issued to SIR GEORGE and PHILIP CARTERET, and eighteen servants.²⁷ ²⁸ This was to confirm the 1665 grants issued during the first period of English rule. That same February 1665 date saw the signing of the *Oath of Allegiance* to CHARLES II and the *Lord Proprietors*; as a servant of SIR GEORGE, DANIEL was not required to sign. East Jersey Records (III, o.e. 30) has a list of the male servants on which DAN PERRIN is found. The *Associators*, as the pre-Proprietary land-holders became known, were mostly English settlers from Eastern Long Island and, in the main, of a conservative Puritanical bent; not the type of people that made for good neighbors for the liberal Huguenots DANIEL and MARIE. The servants were, in fact, second-class citizens as it took an order from the Governor to bestow the rights and privileges of a freeholder on any of the servants.²⁹ Such an act ran counter to the terms found in the NICOLLS 1664 grant to the *Associators* and caused much discord over the years. So, besides having the fighting between the *Governor of New Jersey* appointed by the *Proprietors* and the *Royal Governor of New York* appointed by the *Duke of York*, you also had fighting between the *Associators* and the *Proprietors*.

The servants' land grants are not described but the fact that they were plantation tracts would indicate that a town lot was not included. This is pure conjecture, but, based on the discriminatory nature of the towns' founders, it seems unlikely that the French servants were allowed town lots of their own. While PHILIP honored the rights of the *servants* that sailed with him, they are not found named on specific land records.

The next Governor, BENJAMIN LAWRIE, described the town in 1683: the town houses were small, mostly single story, structures about ten by twelve feet. The walls were six foot planks with one end anchored in the ground and plastered with a mixture of clay and ground seashells; they had

²⁷ New Jersey Patents and Deeds, 1664-1703; (Liber 3, p. 66 and Liber 3, reversed side, p. 2); p. 47

²⁸ Edwin F. Hatfield, History of Elizabeth, New Jersey (New York City: Carlton & Lanahan, 1868) page 183.

²⁹ Edwin F. Hatfield, History of Elizabeth, New Jersey (New York City: Carlton & Lanahan, 1868) page 133.

a front and back door that opened at or slightly above street level. The roof gently sloped to a peak of eight to ten feet and was probably thatched using the coarse meadow grass. In the larger houses, the roof's greater pitch allowed for a loft. The low ceiling, coupled with the small windows, helped to conserve heat in the cold months and, unfortunately, did likewise in the hot ones, making the place quite unpleasant at times. One wall of the house was dominated by a clay-and-timber fireplace and chimney; this room did triple-duty as the kitchen, dining room and living quarters. There was a small root cellar below a trap-door inside and a rain barrel for fresh water just outside the back door. The town-lots were surrounded by fences to keep wild and domestic animals from damaging vegetable gardens and fruit trees – Elizabethtown apples produced cider famous throughout the colonies at this early date. Once the town lot was livable, the settlers focused on the outfields – buckwheat, oats, wheat, rye and corn being the crops of choice. Cattle were pastured together in common grounds, hence the need for earmarks and branding, and herded into town each night into a well-fenced common area. (A pattern of cuts in the ear identified the individual owner while a brand identified the town the cattle were from.) Sheep, a rarity, were pastured in the yards and streets of the town, being easy prey for wolves. Hogs, very capable of defending themselves against predators, roamed free and fattened themselves up in the autumn months on the plentiful chestnuts and acorns. There were about 150 families living in the town by 1685.

Despite not having town lots, the French settlers must have built similar structures on their plantation lots but they were not afforded the protection or sense of community that came with living in town. Perhaps it was the second-class nature accorded the French residents, i.e. not being a freeholder, the lack of a lot in town, or just the obnoxious neighbors of Puritan stock, but DANIEL had enough before too long. The animosity of the Puritanical Anglicans in town (their church being founded in 1664), coupled with the limits imposed by the puritan faction and the absence of a Huguenot church were probably major reasons behind DANIEL's decision to move (as most of the French appear to have done). Noteworthy is the fact that the Elizabeth-Towne Anglican Church became the First Presbyterian Church rather than an Episcopal one. Still located on its original lot at 42 Broad Street, the Presbyterian Church descends from the strict Scottish Calvinist tradition while the Episcopal Church descends from the more liberal blend of Roman Catholicism and Protestantism. The *Associators* who held NICOLL's patents were the main congregants of the Anglican Church with its conservative Calvinist leanings while the Episcopal Church attracted those of a Royalist bent. The First Presbyterian Churchyard contains the grave of PHILIP CARTERET who died in 1682. A strong Scottish presence followed the 1682 death of PHILIP CARTERET, so much so that the Scotch Plains section (now a separate town some 12 miles west of Elizabeth) of Elizabeth-Towne had been established by 1684.

There were no French language religious services in East Jersey until 1682. In that year a small French Church opened near Hackensack and lasted until 1696; the only option was to cross Arthur Kill for services in French had been conducted on Staten Island since 1654.

CARTERET's grants of land were continually challenged as being contrary to the terms of NICOLL's patent and those in power wanted to obtain for themselves as much land as possible, thus making it difficult for CARTERET's party to attain any equality in government or to enlarge their land holdings. Assuming a three-year tenancy requirement, the earliest DANIEL could have moved was 1668 but it was probably several years later.

One of CARTERET's last acts was to embroil the province in a land dispute with New York over ownership of Staten Island. CARTERET was removed from office later that same year; he

remains New Jersey's longest-serving Governor, sixteen years. What became of DANIEL'S land holdings in Elizabethtown is not known, and may never be since it does not appear that individual warrants, surveys, patents or deeds were issued for the "servants" – the records found to date lump all eighteen (male) servants together.

STATEN ISLAND³⁰

The West India Company repurchased earlier Staten Island grants in 1661 and regranted the land to several French Waldensians and even more numerous Huguenots from Rochelle. About a dozen families settled south of the Narrows. Old Dorp and Fresh Kill were well settled by the mid-1650s but the island was depopulated after the September 1655 counterattack of the Native American allies of New Sweden. Fresh Kill is a large stream starting in the center of the island which travels west and empties into Arthur Kill opposite Carteret, New Jersey. By 1663 a blockhouse was built, armed by 10 men and 2 cannon, believed to be near on the southeastern shore. The fact of a French Huguenot presence before 1660 is evidenced by the following. Every second month religious services were conducted in French by REVEREND SAMUEL DRISIUS, *DOMINIE*, a bilingual (French and Dutch) preacher sent in 1654. It isn't reported exactly when his involvement on Staten Island commenced but it is known that his services on Staten Island increased in frequency to monthly in 1660 and continued until his death in 1671. DOMINIE SELYNS may have officiated thereafter until 1683. Between 1683 and 1692 the French church was ministered by REVEREND PIERRE DAILLE. In 1697 the Fresh Kill Church received REVEREND DOCTOR DAVID BONREPOS from New Rochelle. He officiated here and Stony Brook until 1717.

The Waldensians built a church at Stony Brook (Old Dorp?) and the Huguenots at Fresh Kill (on SEAMAN'S farm) and soon thereafter the first road connecting the two settlements. A later (12 April 1698) deed exists for a French church to straddle the 'highway,' a half acre on each side of same on the west side of the island at Fresh Kills. It is about a mile from Richmond near the road to Rossville and only the foundations of the church remained well over a century ago. South of the church was the graveyard with over 200 markers of which only 3 were partially legible 150 years ago. The author maintains this as the first Huguenot church on the island while earlier stating that a French church had been erected at Fresh Kill before 1660. The Waldensian church at Stony Brook is also referred to as a French church with its own cemetery (thought to be the so-called *Huguenot Cemetery*).

In 1717 the French churches at SEAMAN'S farm in Fresh Kill and the Waldensian French church at Stony Brook united with a Dutch congregation and formed a Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond. Separate French language services were initially held but these fell to the evermore dominant Dutch language offerings.

In August 1664 the Staten Island guardhouse was the first of the Dutch possessions to be taken by the English under RICHARD NICOLLS. All the rights granted by the Dutch in religious freedom were reaffirmed by the English, at least in the areas under NICOLLS definite authority which included Staten Island initially. East Jersey residents under the authority of CARTERET were denied the religious freedoms enjoyed on Staten Island. YORK'S territory was divided into New Jersey, governed by BERKELEY and CARTERET, and New York which included Manhattan and

³⁰ History of Richmond County (Staten Island) NY, Richard N. Bayles, editor (LE Preston & Co., NY; 1997)

Yorkshire to be governed by a new governor, EDMUND ANDROS. Yorkshire was divided into 3 Ridings: West, East and North. The West Riding included the Long Island's Kings County and the Queens County village of Newtown along with Staten Island, which was disputed by PHILLIP CARTERET. The East Riding was the rest of Long Island while the North Riding covered Westchester. From 1664 to 1675 the seat of government for the West Riding was on Long Island and these records may reflect an earlier presence of DANIEL PERRIN and MARIE THOREL on Staten Island but, as will be shown, their presence in 1680 was part of CARTERET'S attempts to exert authority over the island and may be evidence of their first move out of Elizabethtowne. In October 1675 ANDROS separated the judiciary of Staten Island from that of the West Riding. Supposedly the records of Staten Island are extant from at least this point; the earlier West Riding records may also be extant. On 10 September 1680 the HONORABLE PHILLIP CARTERET, Governor of the Province of East Jersey was ordered to enforce the rights of LADY ELIZABETH CARTERET and claim Staten Island for the Province, probably in the hope of increasing its value as the executors of SIR GEORGE CARTERET were planning on selling the Province. For his part, ANDROS inflamed the situation on 2 January 1680 (unfortunately, the extract of this proceeding consulted did not specify if the year was *o.s.*, that is. 1681, or not) when he appeared before the Provincial Assembly meeting in Elizabethtowne and declared that he, not CARTERET, was the Governor. On 22 July 1681 CARTERET sent a letter demanding the surrender of Staten Island to ANDROS and his Deputy Governor, ANTHONY BROCKALLS and a second letter to the inhabitants of Staten Island forbidding any obedience to the government of New York. To further prove his right to govern, CARTERET began issuing patents for land. DANIEL received a grant of 80 acres on 30 April 1682 from GOVERNOR PHILIP CARTERET to settle on lands at Blazing Star near Smoking Point, south of Fresh Kill and west of Rossville (which now includes the Point) on the west side.^{31, 32}

After the dispute was settled the 200 families living on Staten Island, along with Shutter Island and a few meadow islands on the west, became the founders of Richmond County in November 1683. The first county tax of 15 pounds was assessed in 1684. After the dispute was settled, DANIEL had to have his property rights granted by CARTERET confirmed by the rightful authorities of Richmond County. In 1688 Richmond County was divided into four "towns" covering the island (more like townships); this whole area was part of the town of Westfield.

There may have been another land purchase on 1 March 1688 which was promptly mortgaged; the following mortgage was recorded on 12 March 1688 between DANIEL and PAULI RICHARDS, a New York merchant:

Know all Men by these Presents: That I, DANIEL PERRIN, of Smoaking Point, on Staten Island, in the County of Richmond, Yeoman, for and in consideration of the sum of fifty pounds, current moneys of New York, to me in hand paid by PAULI RICHARDS, of the said City, merchant, at & before the ensealing and delivery hereof wherewith I confess myself to be fully satisfied, contented & paid, Have Bargained and Sold, and by these presents do fully, clearly, and absolutely Bargain & Sell unto the said PAULI RICHARDS one Lott of land lying & being on Smoaking Point, on Staten Island aforesaid, in the County aforesaid, containing

³¹ *Ibid*; New Jersey Patents and Deeds (Liber 4, p. 13); p.49; "Patent to Lady Elizabeth Carteret and Govr Phil. Carteret in right of eighteen servants brought to the Province in 1665 for 3340 a. in various parcels."

³² History of Richmond County (Staten Island) NY, Richard N. Bayles, editor (LE Preston & Co., NY; 1997)

about eighty acres, be it more or less, also eight acres of meadow ground belonging to the same, with all the buildings and improvements whatever, that is or hath been done the same,

Being bounded on the Ease side by the land of CLAUSS SMITH, & on the West by the land formerly belonging to MARTIN HARDWIN, fronting to ye waterside North, & said rangeth backward into the woods, South. To Have and to Hold the said Lott of land, meadow ground, with all the buildings and improvements on the same & all and singular ye . . . & Appurtenances to the same belonging, to the said PAULI RICHARDS, his heirs, executors, administrators & assigns to his and their own proper uses and possession forever, and I, the said DANIELL PERRIN, my heirs, executors & administrators & every of us, the said Lott of land, meadow ground with all the buildings & improvements on the same & all & singular the . . . appurtenances to the same belonging unto the said PAULI RICHARDS, his heirs, executors, administrators & assigns against all the People, shall and will Warrant, acquit & forever defend by these presents,

Provided always that if I, the said DANIELL PERRIN, my heirs, executors, administrators, or any of us, do well & truly pay or cause to be paid, unto the said PAULI RICHARDS, his heirs, executors, administrators or assigns the full sum of fifty pounds current moneys of New York aforesaid, on the first day of March, that shall be in the year of our Lord, One thousand six hundred eighty & nine, without fraud or further delay, that then this present Bill l& the Bargain & Sale of the said Lott of land, meadow ground, with all the Buildings & improvements on the same & all other the premises shall be utterly void & of none effect, or else to stand & stand & abide in full force & virtue.

In Witness whereof I, the said DANIELL PERRIN have hereunto sett my hand and seal, in New York the first day of March, in the fourth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord, JAMES, the Second, over England &c, King, Defender of the faith &c, Anno qu. dom 1687-8.

*Sealed and Delivered in the Presence of JARVIS MARSHALL, THEOPHELOS JURFON.
The mark of DANIELLE PERRIN _____*

*Acknowledged before me in New York, this first day of March Anno dom 1687-8.
N. NICOLLS³³ ³⁴*

DANIEL'S father PIERRE sailed from France to settle with DANIEL at Smoking Point in 1685. MARIE died in 1686; her burial site is unknown but may have been the *French Church Cemetery*, but it is currently accepted belief that the first burials in the churchyard did not occur until 1695. Given that churchyards often started as family cemeteries that were later donated to a church, burials often occurred years before the church records begin. It is possible that MARIE was buried elsewhere, possibly in the *Stony Brook Waldensian churchyard*, or on private property.

DANIEL married a second time shortly after MARIE'S death, possibly in 1687; his wife was

³³ Richmond County Conveyances, Liber B, p. 92; Richmond County, NY, Clerks office.

³⁴ Egbert Family History, Section F: Related Families, Pierre Perrine Family

named ELIZABETH. They had three daughters at the least:³⁵

SARA PERRIN	b. 168_
ELIZABET PERRIN	b. 169_
MARIA PERRIN	b. 169_.

To obtain clear title to the earlier-mortgaged eighty acres obtained by grant in 1682, as CARTERET did not have the authority to issue the 1682 grant, DANIEL filed a petition with New York GOVERNOR BENJAMIN FLETCHER for ownership in 1695. In the Minutes of the Council of New York for 16 May 1695 is found (with corrections reflecting current language):

Recorded for DANIELL PERRIN.

WILLIAM, the third, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the faith &c.:

To all to whom these Presents shall come Sendeth Greeting:

Whereof our Loving Subject DANIELL PERRIN,. of our County of Richmond, Planter, hath by his Petition Presented to BENJAMIN FLETCHER, our Captain General and Governor in Chief of our Province of New York, and Territories Depending thereon, in America &c, Prayed our Grant and Confirmation of a Certain Lott of Land now in his Possession, and formerly Surveyed for him Scituate, Lying and being upon the West side of the fresh Kill at Staten Island, within our County of Richmond aforesaid, Bounded Northwardly upon the sea or Meadow, Eastwardly upon CLAUS SMITH, Southwardly upon the Concon Range, and Westwardly upon MARTIN HADOWAY (HARDWIN).

Containing in the whole Eighty Acres, which Request we being Willing to Grant; Know Ye, that of our Special grace, Certain Knowledge, and meer mocon, we have Given, Granted, Ratified and Confirmed, and by these Presents for us, or Heirs and Successors, do Give, Grant Ratify and Confirm unto the said DANIEL PERRIN, all that Lott of Land now in his Possession Scituate within our said County of Richmond, and Limited and bounded as aforesaid, together with all and Singular the Buildings, Improvements, Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Timber fields, feedings, Pastures, Marshes, Swamps, Meadows, Ponds, Pools, Waters, Water Courses, Rivers, Rivulets, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and all other Privileges, Profits, benefits, Commodities, Advantages, Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the said Lott of Land Limited and Bounded as aforesaid belonging or in Any ways Appertaining:

To Have and To Hold all the afore-recited Lott of Ground, together with all and Singular the Buildings, Improvements, Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Timber fields, feedings, Pastures, Marshes, Swamps, Meadows, Ponds, Pools, Water, Water Courses, Rivers, Rivulets, fishing, fowling, hunting & hawking, and all other

³⁵for record of Sara Perrin see Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, 1:69, 75, 123, 128; for Elizabet Perrin see Stillwell, 1:118; for Maria Perrin see Stillwell, 1:66.

Privileges, Profits, benefits, Commodities, Advantages, Hereditiments, and Appurtenances whatsoever to the said Lott of Ground Limited and Bounded as aforesaid belonging, or in any ways Appertaining, unto the said DANIEL PERRIN, his heirs and Assigns forever.

To be Holden of us, our Heirs and Successors in free and Common Soccage according to the Tenure of our Manor of East Greenwich, in our County of Kent, within our Realm of England, Yielding, Rendering and Paying therefore Yearly, and every Year forever, on the feast Day of Annunciation of our Blessed Virgin Mary, at our City of New York, unto us, our Heirs and Successors the Annual Rent of Sum of four shillings, Current Money of our said Province, in Lieu and Stead of all Rents, Services, Dues, Duties and Demands whatsoever for the said Lott of Ground and premises.

Witness, BENJAMIN FLETCHER, our Captain general, and Governor in Chief of our Province in New York aforesaid, and the Territories and Tracts of Land Depending thereon in America, and Vice Admiral of the Same, our Lieutenant and Commander in Chief of the Militia, and of all the forces by Sea and Land within our Colony of Connecticut, and of all the forts and Places of Strength within the same, at Fort William Henry, in Council, the Sixteenth day of May, in the Seventh Year of our reign, Anno Domini 1695. BENJAMIN FLETCHER.

By his Excellencies command DAVID JAMISON, Secretary.³⁶

After obtaining a clear title to the land DANIEL PERING of Staten Island, in the County of Richmond, in the Province of New York, Yeoman, & ELIZABETH, his wife sold it to RQUEA PEPANE LEFLORE for a certain sum of money on 11 February 1696.

In witness whereof the said DANIEL PERING, and ELIZABETH, his wife, have here unto set their hands & seals this nineteenth day of March, in the eighth Year of the reign of our sovereign Lord, WILLIAM, the Third, over England, Scotland, France & Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, anno dom. one thousand six hundred ninety & six.

Sealed & delivered in the presents of JACOB CORBETT, JOHN CASIEN.³⁷

Some maintain that the PERRINE house in Rossville is the one built by DANIEL in 1688 while others maintain it was built later by a descendant. It is doubtful that DANIEL built the PERRINE house in 1688 as he sold that property in 1695; perhaps he built it after 1695 and it was passed down in the family.

Records of the Reformed Dutch Reformed Church of Port Richmond indicate that DANIEL and his second wife ELIZABETH were sponsors at the baptisms of their grandchildren, WILLEM and DANIEL STILWELL, on 6 September 1719; children of their daughter SARA and her first husband WILLEM STILWELL.³⁸ This is alleged to be the last primary record in existence about DANIEL and

³⁶ Patents, Liber 6, p. 537, Office Secretary of State, Albany, N.Y.

³⁷ Richmond County Conveyances, Liber B, p. 248; Richmond County, NY, Clerks office.

³⁸ op. cit: Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, 1:128.

many researchers have mistakenly given this date as his date of death which is obviously wrong unless he died just after being one sponsor for his two grandchildren at their baptism. Unsupported, but plentiful, sources do give 1719 as his year of death possibly more due to a complete lack of records from 1720 forward.

Marshald (a.k.a. Fresh Kill, Marshland, and Green Ridge) was a small hamlet located 3 miles northeast of Smoking Point. Between 1680 and 1695 a French Church was built there and the churchyard to the south was first used by the church around 1695 but there may have been burials before the grounds became property of the church. In all probability this is where DANIEL, MARIE and ELIZABETH were interred. It is said that there were over 200 brownstone headstones. The churchyard was leveled and the stones destroyed in 1881 and the church records have not yet been located. There also existed a Waldensian Church at Stony Brook that many Huguenots worshipped at. Another possibility is the *Moravian Cemetery* at Dongan Hills which has burials from the mid-seventeenth century.



French Church claims for its congregation. *L'Église Française à la Nouvelle-Amsterdam* (The French Church in New Amsterdam) dates from the very earliest years but probably not as a separate church at that early date; in 1687 it was known as the *Eglise des Refugees Francaise a la Nouvelle York* (Church of the French Refugees at New York). The first church was on Marketfield Street near the Battery, then Pine Street opposite the Custom's House and finally Leonard Street. In 1704 a cemetery was added to the Pine Street building. The church joined the Episcopal Church and is now *L'Eglise du Saint-Esprit* (Church of the Holy Spirit) at 111 East 60th Street in New York City.³⁹

Most of the changes in the spelling of the surname started with MARIE and DANIEL'S children: PETER adopted *PEYROYNE*, DANIEL used *PAREYN*, FRANCYNTJE opted for *PARAIN* while JAMES adopted *PERRINE* which became the predominant spelling in New Jersey.

A bronze tablet to the memory of DANIEL PERRIN and MARIE THOREL was placed in the French Episcopal Church, New York City in 1903. The Huguenots were so numerous that French language services in the Dutch Reformed Church were offered as early as April 1628, the founding date the



³⁹ Elinor S. Hearn, Librarian, Episcopal Church Archives, PO Box 2247, Austin TX. 78768, correspondence to author, dated 26 June 1987.

Husband's Name: **JAMES PERRIN**⁴⁰

Born:	1670	New Dorp, Richmond County, New York
Married:		
Died:	1745	Staten Island, New York
Buried:	<i>Old Story Burying Ground</i> , Dover Township, Monmouth County, New Jersey	
Father:	DANIEL PERRIN (1640 – Aft. September 1719)	
Mother:	MARIE THOREL (1649 – 1686)	

Wife's Name: **ELEANOR**

Born:	
Died:	
Buried:	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) PETER PERRIN	1710/9	Staten Island, New York
2) DANIEL PERRIN	1712	Staten Island, New York

From what few facts there are, it would appear the family lived on Staten Island for much of their lives. An unreferenced source names his wife as ANITA ANNEPE who was born in 1674 at *Richmond, in "Steuben," New York* which is most likely the area around Steuben Street between the neighborhoods of Arrochar and Grasmere in northeastern Staten Island (Richmond County) not far from the Verrazanno-Narrows Bridge.

JAMES' burial in a cemetery close to Englishtown and Manalapan in Monmouth County, NJ possibly indicates a late-in-life move however there were no known descendants in the area at that time to entice such a move and more research is needed.

There is a lot of confusion and unknowns concerning JAMES and ELEANOR. In This Old Monmouth Of Ours, cited elsewhere, this JAMES PERRIN is not mentioned in the PERRIN genealogy. DANIEL PERRIN, the son of JAMES and ELEANOR, is given a different parentage. His father is named as HENRY PERRIN, the third son of PIERRE, who accompanied PIERRE on the *Caledonia* in 1685 and later moved to what we know as Ocean County, New Jersey; at that time it was Monmouth County.

Another source, The Compendium of American Genealogy not only mentions JAMES and ELEANOR; but attributes a third son to the couple: JAMES, born in 1744, when his “father” was 74! This JAMES married HANNAH BENNETT.⁴¹ This was a grandson of JAMES and ELEANOR; the eldest son of DANIEL and MARY (MARTINEAU) PERRIN.

ISSUE:

1. PETER PERRIN: may have died in the 1760s in Chesterfield, Burlington County, New Jersey.
2. DANIEL PERRIN: married MARY MARTINEAU; marriage license issued 6 October 1725 in Richmond County, New York. *Continued on following page.*

⁴⁰ vide Borodaeff, op.cit., page 6.

⁴¹ The Compendium of American Genealogy (The Virkus Co.) Vol.1, p.768

Husband's Name: **DANIEL PERRINE⁴²**

Born:	1712	New Dorp, Richmond County, New York
Married:	6 October 1725 (License)	Staten Island, Richmond County, New York ⁴³
Died:	March-June 1777	Manahawkin, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:		
Father:	JAMES PERRIN (1670 to 1745)	
Mother:	ELEANOR	

Wife's Name: **MARY MARTINEAU**

Born:		Staten Island, Richmond County, New York
Died:	178_	
Buried:		
Father:	FRANCOIS MARTINEAU?	
Mother:	HESTER DOMINES?	

<u>Issue:</u>	<u>Born:</u>	<u>Where:</u>
1. JAMES PERRIN	1727	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey?
2. NATHANIEL PERRIN	1729	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey
3. DANIEL PERRIN	5 October 1730/35	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey?
4. ELIZABETH PERRIN		Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey
5. HANNAH PERRIN	4 May 1739	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey
6. ELIZABETH PERRIN	15 April 1744	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey
7. CLARK PERRIN	176_	Stafford Tp, Monmouth County, NJ
8. SARAH PERRIN	16 August 1761 (chr)	Stafford Tp, Monmouth County, NJ
<i>3 unknown daughters</i>		

This is the person who changed the name from PERRIN to PERRINE, probably when he moved to Freehold sometime before 1725 as it appears this is the form of the last name of virtually all descendants that moved, and subsequently live, in New Jersey. In the papers of the New York Secretary of State, under GOVERNOR BURNET, an application for a marriage license of "DANIEL PARINE, of Freehold, NJ and MARY MARTINO, of Staten Island" is found. Here is found the first indication of a PERRIN of this line living in NJ. After their marriage they first resettled near Rahway. A DANIEL PERRIN is listed as a Freeholder of Essex County on 1 September 1755.⁴⁴ They are thought to have moved to Manahawkin in Stafford Township (then Monmouth County, now Ocean County) about 1760. In all probability they moved to this vast wilderness

⁴²vide Borodaeff, op.cit., p.6. It must be noted that This Old Monmouth of Ours, William S. Horner, 1974 (reprint: Morris Genealogical Library, Allenhurst, NJ), pp. 117-126, has a different lineage: Daniel's father is given as Henry PERRIN, son of Pierre, who he accompanied from Lower Chalfonte in 1685. This is now considered to be wrong by Perrin researchers.

⁴³Calendar of Historical Manuscripts in the Office of Secretary of the State, Albany, NY; Part 2; Vol.67, p.72, Albany; ed. E.B. O'Callaghan (Weed, Parsons & Co: Albany, NY) 1866, p.493.

⁴⁴vide Monnette, op. cit., Vol. 4, p. 553.

area to put distance between the family and the social upheaval of the French and Indian War (1754-1763).

Very little has been uncovered by this writer. Their son NATHANIEL died before 5 August 1751; their daughter, the first ELIZABETH, obviously died before 1744 when the second ELIZABETH was born. Their daughter SARAH was possibly christened on 16 August 1761 at Christ Church, Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, New Jersey.

DANIEL's will was dated 5 March 1777 and was probated 20 June 1777. MARY retained use of the land where they lived and, after her death it was to be passed to my 5 daughters. His son JEAMS received the rest of his land with the exception of the salt Meadow which was to be sold. Son DANIEL received 5 shillings.⁴⁵ His mention of my 5 daughters strongly indicates that there were more children than those listed above.

It is not known when MARY died, however records from the Monmouth County Orphan's Court, as yet not reviewed by this writer, contain details of the settlement of accounts and the sale of lands of DANIEL PERRIN from 1789 to 1791. Considering the wording of DANIEL's will, these records may well reflect the sale of the land that MARY had for her use until her death. The deed(s) would remain in DANIEL's name until such time the land was sold. The five daughters, upon the death of their mother, decided to sell the land, thus generating an order to sell the land and a condition of the sale document, both of which do appear in the records. If this is borne out by the records, then MARY must have died prior to the date of either record dealing with the land sale; that is in 1790 at the very latest. Some sources place her burial in New York but there is no reference for such a statement.

In the Manahawkin of this time there were three cemeteries. One on the south side of Beach Avenue between North Broadway and the railroad tracks; the Methodist-Episcopal adjacent to the church on the north side of Stafford Avenue between the railroad tracks and Parker Road; and the Baptist one on the west side of North Broadway, north of Beach Avenue. It is not known if they were buried in one of these cemeteries. A possibility is they were interred in what is referred to as the Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery in Jackson Township, Ocean County. This cemetery is more correctly named the *Family Burial Ground of DANIEL and SARAH PERRIN, JUNIOR*. DANIEL & SARAH set apart a portion of their lands as a family burial ground however a great many grave markers have been lost over time and no extant inventory mentions DANIEL and MARY.⁴⁶

⁴⁵ Documents Relating to the Colonial and Revolutionary History of the State of New Jersey. First Series. Vol. 34. Calendar of New Jersey Wills, Administrations, Etc. Vol. 5. 1771-1780, Ed. A. VanDoren Honeyra (MacCrellish & Quigley Co., Trenton, NJ) 1931, p.390.

⁴⁶ Trevor Kirkpatrick, Partial Transcription for: Holmansville Cemetery - East Veterans Hwy, Jackson Township, Ocean County, NJ; 2001, www.distantcousins.com

Husband's Name: **DANIEL PERRINE**⁴⁷

Born:	5 October 1730/35	Rahway, Essex County, New Jersey
Married:	1759	
Died:	1 August 1819	Holmansville, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Perrine-Holman Family Burial Ground</i> , Jackson Township, New Jersey	
Father:	DANIEL PERRIN (died in spring of 1777)	
Mother:	MARY MARTINEAU (died in 1780's)	

Wife's Name: **SARAH HOLMAN**

Born:	
Died:	4 August 1805 ⁴⁸
Buried:	<i>Perrine-Holman Family Burial Ground</i> , Jackson Township, New Jersey

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) MATTHEW PERRINE	21 September 1760	Holmansville, Monmouth County
2) ISAAC PERRINE	1763	
3) DANIEL PERRINE	14 March 1770	Holmansville, Monmouth County
4) PETER DANIEL PERRINE	2 February 1772	Holmansville, Monmouth County
5) JOSEPH PERRINE	1773	Holmansville, Monmouth County
6) HENRY D. PERRINE	10 November 1775	
7) MARY PERRINE	1777	
8) SARAH PERRINE	4 September 1780	

It seems that DANIEL lived in Holmansville, at the time located in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County most of his life. He first married SARAH HOLMAN in 1759. In the 1780 Tax Ratables, there appears a DANIEL PERINE in the Westfield Ward of Elizabeth, Essex County, NJ, as a householder with 1 horse and 1 horned cattle. This person is most likely the son of DANIEL's brother JAMES.⁴⁹ In the *Political Intelligencer* of 20 April 1785 notice is made of the sale of a 220 acre farm on the Millstone River in Somerset County, previously the property of PETER PERRINE. Interested parties are instructed to contact DANIEL PERRINE, adjoining the farm.⁵⁰

Several authors state that SARAH died prior to 1769 as DANIEL married a second time in that year. A careful review of all known records coupled with searches of the records at known repositories has not revealed any documentation supporting either SARAH's death or a second marriage of DANIEL's in 1769. None of the published PERRINE genealogies offer any documentation for either event either. With no evidence, it is, at best, difficult to accept these statements as fact. Moreover, the names given to DANIEL's granddaughters argue against such a scenario. Both MATTHEW and ISAAC named a daughter SARAH, presumably after their

⁴⁷ *vide* Borodaeff, op. cit., p.7.

⁴⁸ *vide* Perrine, op. cit., p. 64.

⁴⁹ *Genealogical Magazine of NJ*, Vol. 43, 1968

⁵⁰ Thomas B. Wilson, *Notices from New Jersey Newspapers 1781 – 1790* (Hunterdon House Pub, Lambertville, NJ; 1988) p 212.

grandmother. DANIEL'S children by the alleged second wife, to wit those born *after* 1769: DANIEL, PETER, JOSEPH and HENRY *also* named a daughter SARAH. In fact, SARAH is the most frequently occurring name among all of DANIEL'S grandchildren. This could indicate a continuation of the tradition established by the two eldest sons whereby a daughter was named after her grandmother. It also seems unlikely DANIEL would name his last daughter SARAH in 1780. While the above is hardly proof of SARAH'S death, it certainly is more than any other researcher has published in 200 years. Of course, we must not overlook the possibility that there was a second wife whose name was SARAH also.

That he may have been affiliated with the Church of Christ at Crosswicks, now the Upper Freehold Baptist Church, is hinted at by two entries in the records of the church meetings. On 30 June 1798 is an entry stating that a communion will be held at *the house of DANIEL PRINCE, in the pines* on 2 September 1798. On 12 November 1798 is an entry regarding the baptism of *LUCEY SHUMANS* who had been *Examined before the Church at DANIEL PRINCE*. The correct transcription is most certainly *PRINE* (PERRINE), as *PRINCE* is a surname unknown to this area. While DANIEL'S exact relationship with that church is unknown, it is known that he married a member of that church, SUSANNAH GARRETSON.⁵¹

After the death of his wife, DANIEL married MRS. SUSANNAH GARRETSON. The ceremony took place on 21 May 1806 and was conducted by JOHN ANTRAM, J.P.⁵² This was not her first marriage either. She had been married to HENRY GARRETSON. A daughter, NANCY, from this first marriage would marry DANIEL'S son PETER DANIEL.

The earliest property deed found to date is from 1809. It is doubtful that DANIEL'S ownership of property did not *begin* as he approached 80 years old. There are three property transactions in the records of the Board of Proprietors of East New Jersey between 1757 and 1763 that could very well record the earliest of DANIEL's property transfers. On 16 October 1809 *DANIEL PERRINE of Upper Freehold* purchased 142-26/100 acres from ANDREW BELL *of Perth Amboy*. This large tract was in Upper Freehold, in the *Eastern Division of New Jersey* and sold for \$250.00. Boundaries included the *southwesterly side of Miry Run, 60 chains above where it empties into the North Branch of Tom's River* and southeast from ELISHA LAWRENCE'S sawmill, which it bordered.⁵³ This land is now in Jackson Township and, depending on the map consulted, the area is named VanHiseville or Holmansville. On 16 February 1818 *DANIEL PERRINE of Lower Freehold Township* sold this tract to his son PETER PERRINE *of Lower Freehold Township* for the same price.⁵⁴ This was recorded 20 August 1819, just subsequent to DANIEL'S death. It is not known why the township name changed but Lower Freehold Township was sometimes used to designate the southern parts of Upper Freehold Township, which would become Jackson Township by mid-century.

Another deed, dated 23 August 1814 and recorded 10 October 1815 has *DANIEL PERRINE of Freehold* selling 40 acres in Upper Freehold to WILLIAM MARLIN for \$105.00.⁵⁵ This deed states the land was purchased by DANIEL on 25 April 1814 and recorded in Book S of the Surveyor's Journals of Perth Amboy. Whether this is the same DANIEL PERRINE is not known.

⁵¹ Upper Freehold Baptist Church records, Imlaystown, NJ.

⁵² Monmouth County Marriages, Vol. A, p.84; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁵³ Monmouth County Deeds, Vol. X, p.378, recorded 28 July 1844.

⁵⁴ Monmouth County Deeds, Vol. B2, p.505, recorded 20 August 1819.

⁵⁵ Monmouth County Deeds, Vol. Y, p.308.

The final resting-place of DANIEL has not been proven but rather, surmised from available information. The cemetery known as the *Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery* is referred to as such solely due to its proximity to the church buildings across the street. However, TREVOR KIRKPATRICK wrote in 2001, the following:

The Holmansville cemetery is located across East Veterans Highway from the Holmansville Mormon Church (Faith Bible Church). The cemetery which measures 113 ft. north to south by 96 ft. east to west does not appear to have been the church's cemetery, but rather a family burial ground. The Faith Bible Church does maintain the cemetery but says it is owned by an association and there are still burials conducted here.

The cemetery is believed to have been the family burial plot of DANIEL PERRINE, JR., son of DANIEL and MARY (MARTIN) PERRINE of Freehold Township, Monmouth County, NJ. DANIEL settled in the area probably about 1759 when he married his first wife, SARAH HOLMAN whose family owned a large tract in the area. It is this family for whom Holmansville is named.

The earliest grave marker found was a rather large ironstone field marker with "SP 1805" carved into it. This stone along with about a dozen others were found piled in the southeast corner of the cemetery. "S P" is believed to be SARAH PERRINE, born 1738 and died August 4, 1805. DANIEL who was born about Oct 5, 1735 and died August 1, 1819 at Holmanville is also believed to be buried here along with his second wife SUSAN GARRISON.

*Many of those buried here in the north part of the cemetery are related directly to DANIEL PERRINE, JR. or are generally related to the HOLMAN family. All new burials are in the southwest part of the cemetery.*⁵⁶

An inventory of the Holmansville cemetery from 1982 does not list DANIEL. The Jackson Township historian has stated that DANIEL PERRINE died in Holmansville and was *interred there*.⁵⁷ Upon inspection of the cemetery by this author in the 1980s, two fieldstones lying side-by-side were found marked *SP 1805* and *DP 1820* which very well could be DANIEL and SARAH. Since that time, as mentioned above, the fieldstones have been moved *for convenience* but probably without authority. While the administration of the church across the street has assumed a certain degree of responsibility for cemetery maintenance (whether this responsibility is an informal understanding or a formal agreement is not known at this time) they certainly do not possess the authority to move, remove or authorize the removal of any fieldstones. It is unlikely that the cemetery association referred to by MR. KIRKPATRICK (who does possess that authority) was aware of these actions when they occurred or, if they were aware, they are not performing duties that are a usual responsibility of such associations. The associations' name is not known but indications are that it may be the Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery Association. A descendant of DANIEL and SARAH'S named WILLIAM MALKIN of Hamilton Township, New

⁵⁶ Trevor Kirkpatrick, Partial Transcription for: Holmansville Cemetery - East Veterans Hwy, Jackson Township, Ocean County, NJ; 2001, www.distantcousins.com

⁵⁷ David T. Miller, Sr., letter to the author, dated 2 October 1986

Jersey, obtained permission from a *REVEREND O'BRIEN* to remove any fieldstones of relatives. It is assumed that this REVEREND was affiliated with the church across from the cemetery that was formerly Holmansville Presbyterian. It has not been ascertained why this person did not refer MR. MALKIN to the cemetery association (in theory, the entity having authority to allow for removal of a stone, if allowed by state laws) or why MR. MALKIN did not approach the Cemetery Association on his own initiative as there supposedly is (or was) a sign posted at the cemeteries' entrance providing contact information for the association. Given the significance of the fieldstone removed (marking the grave of the owner & founder of this family cemetery), the Association may have objected to its removal. MR. MALKIN found and removed to his home at 74 Barbara Lee Drive in Hamilton Township the fieldstone marked *D.P. 1820* in 1995. He was to do another search for SARAH's but it is not known if that was ever done. MR. MALKIN has since passed away and it is not known what happened to the fieldstone.



SUSANNAH appears on a *Deed Poll* dated 7 December 1829 as *SUSANNAH PERRINE, the late widow of HENRY GARRISON.*⁵⁸ This author has found nothing more.

Four of the ten men bearing the surname PERINE: ISAAC, PETER, JOSEPH and JOHN, found in the 1793 New Jersey Militia lists from Freehold Township could be sons of DANIEL and SARAH PERRINE.⁵⁹

⁵⁸ Monmouth County Deeds, Book A-3, p.466; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁵⁹ James S. Norton, New Jersey in 1793 (1973) pages 413-415.

Husband's Name: **PETER DANIEL PERRINE**⁶⁰

Born:	2 February 1772	Holmansville, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Married:	12 February 1809	Monmouth County, New Jersey ⁶¹
Died:	8 December 1856	Goshen, Ocean County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Upper Freehold Baptist Cemetery</i> , Imlaystown, Monmouth County, New Jersey	
Father:	DANIEL PERRINE (5 October 1735 to 1 August 1819)	
Mother:	SARAH HOLMAN (died 4 August 1805)	

Wife's Name: **NANCY GARRETSON**

Born:	1777	New York City, New York?
Died:	22 October 1830	Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Upper Freehold Baptist Cemetery</i> , Imlaystown, Monmouth County, New Jersey	
Father:	HENRY GARRETSON (died before 1806)	
Mother:	SUSANNAH (died 1825)	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) HENRY PERRINE	5 August 1810	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
2) SARAH PERRINE	3 January 1812	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
3) RACHEL PERRINE	21 July 1813	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
4) CORLIS PERRINE	5 May 1815	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
5) MARY PERRINE	14 June 1817	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
6) MARGARET PERRINE	10 May 1820	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey

They were married by THOMAS COOK, J.P. In the marriage book, the name ANNE is used and this also appears in other records. NANCY is an oft-used derivative for ANNE or she may have preferred using her middle name. This may have been her second marriage as ROBERT EMLEY and NANCY GARRETSON were married on 20 March 1801 by JAMES TAPSCOTT, J.P.⁶²

It appears that PETER lived in Freehold Township his entire life. The area, since 1850, is in Jackson Township, Ocean County and as late as 1860 Cassville was named Goshen, first named Downsville. The 1860 census lists the post office for this area as Goshen, but the name was officially changed to Cassville in 1850 when this post office opened. The 1793 New Jersey Military Census lists, for the 6th District of Freehold Township, PETER PERRINE in the Monmouth County Militia. It also lists ISAAC, HENRY and JOSEPH PERRINE; PETER's brothers. There are also a PATRICK, JOHN and JAMES PERRINE, but it has not been determined who they are.

At the end of 1814 PETER PERRINE of Freehold Township purchased 13 ½ acres *strict measure* of land along Tom's River in Freehold Township. Now this tract is on the riverbank south of VanHiseville in Jackson Township, Ocean County. JOHN and BRIDGET MACKENTIRE sold the land, adjacent to *MACMURRAY'S mill*, for \$81.00. This tract began at a South edge of the road from

⁶⁰ *vide* Borodaeff, op.cit., p.9; *vide* Perrine, op.cit., p.112.

⁶¹ Monmouth County Marriages, 1795-1817, Vol. A, p.111- "Peter Perrine, son of Daniel, married to Anne Garrison on February 12, 1809"; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁶² Monmouth County Marriages, Book A, p. 57, Freehold, NJ

said JOHN MACKENTIRE and PATRICK SMITH's saw mill and was a portion of a larger track that the two men had divided from the original, designating it as *lot number 4*.⁶³ About a year later, PETER paid \$70.00 for 46 $\frac{41}{100}$ acres in Freehold Township. This property, on the 28th of December 1815, was next to land he already owned. This is confirmed by the starting point of the property line description being *at a stone of said PETER PERRINE's gate*. THOMAS DEBOW had purchased a tract of 52 $\frac{41}{100}$ acres two years earlier and had sold six of the acres to SAMUEL RUCKLES. The 1813 DEBOW deed has not been reviewed but it appears to have involved the same parties: THOMAS DEBOW and PETER PERRINE. This tract would remain in PETER's possession for 22 years.⁶⁴ PETER PERRINE of *Lower Freehold Township* bought 142 $\frac{26}{100}$ acres in that place, an alternative for Freehold Township, for \$250.00 from DANIEL PERRINE, also of *Lower Freehold* on 16 February 1818.⁶⁵ This is the tract his father bought from ANDREW BELL in 1809.

On 15 October 1826 NANSEY PARINE was baptized at the *Church of Christ at Crosswicks* now known as the *Upper Freehold Baptist Church*.⁶⁶ NANCY came into possession of a bible between 1826 and her death in which she recorded all the birth dates of her children along with the marriage date of her son CORLIS.⁶⁷ PETER PERRINE and ANN, his wife appear with his brothers JOSEPH and HENRY to sell land belonging to their deceased brother ISAAC PERRINE to their brother-in law WILLIAM HOLMAN, husband of their sister SARAH. This was recorded on 28 July 1827.⁶⁸ In 1828 or 1829, PETER appears to have purchased property formerly belonging to either his father or brother ISAAC. The grantors on this deed are three siblings: SARAH, HENRY and JOSEPH, who were the heirs-at-law of both deceased relatives. A look at the actual deed will identify proper ownership of this tract that WILLIAM HOLMAN and wife SARAH (PERRINE), HENRY PERRINE and wife, ZILPHIA and JOSEPH PERRINE sold to their brother/brother-in-law.⁶⁹ PETER PERRINE and wife, NANCY, of *Freehold* are two of the heirs at law of HENRY GARRISON found in a "Deed Poll" dated 7 December 1829. The "poll" details the selling of 100 $\frac{16}{100}$ acres from these heirs to JOHN MERRICK MALSURY of Freehold for \$350.00.⁷⁰ JOHN MALSURY was the husband of PETER's niece ELIZABETH PERRINE, a daughter of his brother HENRY.

In the 1830 Census the family is in Freehold Township and it appears that all the children were at home with the exception of SARAH who had presumably married by this time.⁷¹ On 13 October 1837, PETER D. PERRINE, of *Freehold* sold land to THOMAS THOMPSON. In this deed, reference is made to ground returned to THOMAS DEBOW at the request of PETER PERRINE on 12 October 1813.⁷² In the 1840 Census, PETER is still in Freehold and it appears that his son HENRY may be with him. There are two females listed but, due to the ages, neither were PETER's

⁶³ Monmouth County Deeds, Book B2, page 504, recorded 12 September 1818.

⁶⁴ Monmouth County Deeds, volume Y, page 538, 28 December 1815, recorded 25 January 1816; the deed refers to Surveyor General at Perth Amboy, book S16, page 240 for the 1813 DeBow transaction.

⁶⁵ Monmouth Co. Deeds, Vol.B2, p.505, recorded 20 August 1819; see also Monmouth Co. Deeds, Vol.X, p.373.

⁶⁶ Upper Freehold Baptist Church records, Imlaystown, NJ, "Church Book," part 2, p.7. Copy in possession of author.

⁶⁷ Bible records of "Annah, Hur Bible" [Anne (Garretson) Perrine] on file at Monmouth County Historical Society.

⁶⁸ Monmouth County Deeds, Book S-11, p.286 and Book O-2, p.99; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁶⁹ Monmouth County Deeds, Book O-2, p.108; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ There is a reference to Book X, p.469 in the deed.

⁷⁰ Monmouth County Deeds, Book A-3, p.466; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁷¹ 1830 US Census, Monmouth Co., NJ, Freehold Tp., p. 321.

⁷² Monmouth County Deeds, Book S-3, p. 193; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ; see also: Book S-18, p. 343 in "Surveyor Generals Office at Perth Amboy." And "Book S-16, p.240"

daughters.⁷³ Another deed recorded on 18 December 1841 details the selling of 92 acres by PETER to DANIEL HANKINS.⁷⁴

PETER sold two Jackson Township tracts to his son CORLIS on 13 April 1850.⁷⁵ One was the 13 ½ tract on the banks of Toms River near VanHiseville he bought from JOHN and BRIDGET MACKENTIRE in 1814. The other tract measured 40 ¾ acres but it isn't clear when PETER came to own this tract, described as bordering property of WILLIAM KENNEDY, JOHN P. SMITH, PETER PERRINE, and CHARLES HANKINS and running along the *VERNAND HOLMAN line*. CORLIS paid his father \$300.00 for the 54 ½ acres.

The actual cemetery where PETER and ANNE were interred, or its affiliated Church, has not yet been determined but there are at least three suggestions: (1) DAVID MILLER, Jackson Township historian, believes their final resting place to be Cassville Methodist Cemetery; however an inventory of this Churchyard does not list PETER or ANNE.⁷⁶ (2) HOWLAND D. PERRINE's book states it was in a *Baptist Churchyard near Red Valley* in Upper Freehold Township. Red Valley is midway between Imlaystown and Clarksburg on Route 526 about three miles from both towns; its Post Office is/was Creamridge, a name some consider synonymous with Red Valley. The standing church was built in 1737 and is now called *The Old Yellow Meeting House*. It has Baptist origins and is near the area known as Red Valley thus meeting the criteria put forth in the book. The Churchyard has stones dating to 1720. (3) Serious consideration must also be given to the family cemetery of DANIEL PERRINE, PETER's father. This cemetery is commonly referred to as the *Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery* but is more correctly named the *Family Cemetery of DANIEL PERRINE*. In existence since the early years of the 19th century, possibly earlier, it is a very likely possibility. However no inventory of this cemetery mentions PETER or NANCY but no inventory is complete as many stones were lost before the first attempt to create an inventory was made. While the cemetery association maintains the grounds, the same can not be said for the grave markers – several years ago they authorized the removal of those markers deemed illegible or insignificant, such as the fieldstones that once marked the final resting place of the cemetery's founder DANIEL PERRINE and his wife SARAH HOLMAN. The association did not have the forethought to create a map showing what markers were removed and or what those markers said before they piled them up in the southeast corner of the cemetery; this pile has slowly shrunk as people have removed them, some with association permission as in DANIEL PERRINE's case (but not his wife's) but most without. Fortunately, this author visited the cemetery before this was done and documented the stones in photographs and made a map showing their placement within the cemetery grounds.

Issue: see Descendants of DANIEL PERRINE by LOUISE BORODAEFF of Morrestown, New Jersey.

⁷³ 1840 U.S. Census, Monmouth Co., NJ, Freehold Tp., 25 Sept. 1840, p. 235; LDS microfilm T5, roll 81.

⁷⁴ Monmouth County Deeds, Book F-4, p. 53; Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ

⁷⁵ Ocean County deeds, Vol.1, p.436, recorded 4 April 1851

⁷⁶ Genealogical Magazine of NJ, Vol. 53, No. 2, May 1978, p. 49.

Husband's Name: **CORLIS PERRINE**⁷⁷

Born:	5 May 1815	Goshen, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Married:	20 April 1839	Monmouth County, New Jersey ⁷⁸
Died:	17 October 1894	VanHiseville, Ocean County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery</i> , Jackson Township, New Jersey	
Father:	PETER DANIEL PERRINE (2 February 1772 to 8 December 1856)	
Mother:	ANNE GARRISON (1777 to 22 October 1830)	

Wife's Name: **ELIZABETH THOMAS**

Born:	21 November 1816	Clarksburg, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:	20 February 1881	VanHiseville, Ocean County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery</i> , Jackson Township, New Jersey	
Father:	WILLIAM THOMAS (2 November 1779 - 20 March 1850)	
Mother:	MARY (1785 - 13 September 1854)	

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE:
1) PETER C. PERRINE	22 August 1841	Freehold Township, Monmouth County
2) WILLIAM C. PERRINE	5 January 1844	Freehold Township, Monmouth County
3) MARY PERRINE	27 May 1845	Freehold Township, Monmouth County
4) WILLIAM H. PERRINE	4 April 1847	Freehold Township, Monmouth County
5) CORLIS PERRINE	29 May 1849	Freehold Township, Monmouth County
6) DANIEL C. PERRINE	12 September 1851	Jackson Township, Ocean County
7) SARAH MARY PERRINE	14 September 1854	VanHiseville, Jackson Township, Ocean Co. ⁷⁹
8) CHARLES C. PERRINE	2 November 1857	Jackson Township, Ocean County
9) RACHAEL A. PERRINE	21 April 1859	Jackson Township, Ocean County

Ocean County was formed from Monmouth County in January 1850. Part of the old Freehold Township became Jackson Township in 1844 which was included in the new Ocean County. It is rare to find records, including birth certificates, issued between 1844 and 1850 in which Jackson Township, Monmouth County is recorded despite that being the correct designation. Since this is so it would a logical assumption that the family actually lived on the same farm which was in Jackson Township from 1844 and this is where their children were born. However I have kept the Freehold Township designation as I have no proof that supports my assumption.

Just where they were married is not known, however it is known that JOHN G. ELY, Esquire performed the marriage. It was most likely in either Freehold or Upper Freehold Township.

⁷⁷ vide Borodaeff, op. cit., p.18; and Daniel Perrin "The Huguenot" 1665-1910, Howland Delano Perrine (privately printed: South Orange, NJ) 1910, p. 210. The surname "Thompson" comes from Elizabeth's death certificate.

⁷⁸ This date is from a Copy of Bible Records of "Annah, Hur Bible" [Anne (GARRETSON) PERRINE] on file at Monmouth County Historical Society (The New Testament..., Stereotyped for The American Bible Society by D & G Bruce, New York, 1826) At the Monmouth County Court House, Freehold, NJ, Book C, p.215., there appears a marriage license with this date for an Elizabeth Thomas and Cornelius P. Boice. This license is surmised to be not related to the marriage of Corlis.

⁷⁹ Sarah's birthplace obtained from death certificate.

The 1840 census of Upper Freehold Township enumerate CORLIS and ELIZABETH near her parents. CORLIS was working on a farm at this time.⁸⁰ It is not clear when they moved into Freehold Township, later becoming Jackson Township. The family ran a farm in VanHiseville, a small village 2 miles west of Cassville. Their son WILLIAM C. PERRINE died as an infant in 1844.

On 13 April 1850 CORLIS bought 2 tracts of land, totaling 54 ½ acres, for \$300.00 from PETER PERRINE who may have been his brother or father. The first tract was 40-3/4 acres and was bordered by the lands of WILLIAM KENNEDY, JOHN P. SMITH, PETER PERRINE, and CHARLES HANKINS. It also ran along *the Vernand Holman line*. The second tract, 13 ½ acres, was south of the *road from Irish Mill [now VanHiseville] to EZEKIAL HOLMAN'S land* and bordered by the land of PATRICK SMITH and JOHN MCINTIRE.⁸¹

The 1850 census has them in Jackson Township where CORLIS was a farmer with \$400.00 of real estate.⁸² Their son, CHARLES C. PERRINE, died as an infant in 1857. They are still there in 1860 and 1870. By 1870 the value of the real estate was \$1500.00.⁸³ An 1876 atlas shows the location of *C. PERRINE* and this may assumed to be CORLIS as no other PERRINE in this area had a given name beginning with the letter C. The location is the southeast corner of the present day intersection of Route 527/528 (VanHiseville - Lakewood Road) and Route 636 (VanHiseville - Bennetts Mills Road).⁸⁴ Their daughter MARY died 2 May 1870. They are still at the same location in 1880 and in this census their son CURLIS is listed as being blind.⁸⁵ In 1881, ELIZABETH died of *inflammation of the bowel*. The 1885 NJ census shows CORLIS living in the same house with three of his children: RACHAEL, WILLIAM H. and CURLIS, JUNIOR.⁸⁶ In late spring of 1894, CORLIS became ill, remaining sick through the summer. He died in October of *gastro-entero catarrhale* a chronic form of inflammation of the stomach and intestines, perhaps from the same cause as his wife. His death certificate lists his parents as PETER and NANCY PERRINE; and his birthplace as Jackson Township, Ocean County, with the understanding that the informant was conveying that he was born and died in the same area.

Their final resting place is in the cemetery known as the *Holmansville Presbyterian Cemetery*, though the name is not historically accurate. It is the family burial ground established by CORLIS' grandfather DANIEL PERRINE, SENIOR.⁸⁷ Holmansville Presbyterian Church never owned the land.

⁸⁰ 1840 US Census, Monmouth Co., NJ, Upper Freehold Tp., 30 Oct. 1840, p. 227; LDS microfilm T5, roll 81.

⁸¹ Ocean County deeds, Vol.1, p.436, recorded 4 April 1851

⁸² 1850 US Census, Ocean Co., NJ, Jackson Tp., 27 Aug. 1850, p. 25, family 83, dwelling 79, lines 19-24.

⁸³ 1860 US Census, as above, 19 June 1860, p. 67, family 96, dwelling 99, lines 9-17; Nat'l. Archives microfilm M653, roll 705. (and)
1870 US Census, as above, 13 Sept. 1870, p. 22, lines 2-8; LDS microfilm T8, roll 222.

⁸⁴ Scott Combination Atlas, 1876, Ocean Co., NJ.

⁸⁵ 1880 US Census, as above, 18 June 1880, p. 86, family 174, dwelling 167, lines 19-23; LDS microfilm T9, roll 794, ED. 133.

⁸⁶ 1885 NJ State Census, Jackson Tp., Ocean Co., VanHiseville, 29 June 1885, p. 4, family 25, dwelling 25, persons 102-105.

⁸⁷ Trevor Kirkpatrick, Holmansville Cemetery - East Veterans Hwy, Jackson Township, Ocean County, NJ, August 2001,
www.DistantCousin.com

The inscriptions read:

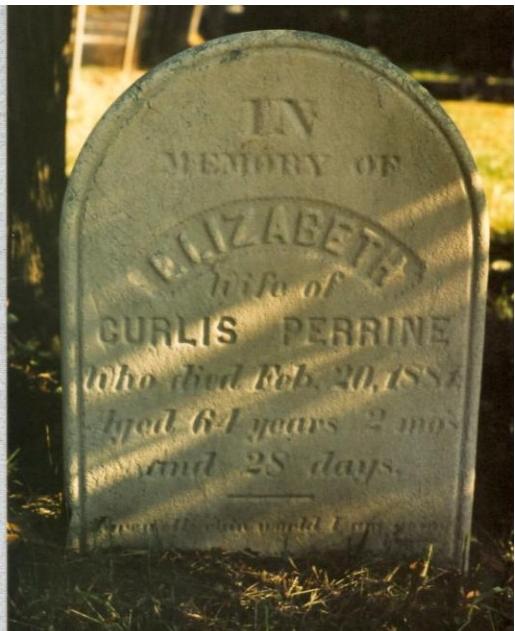
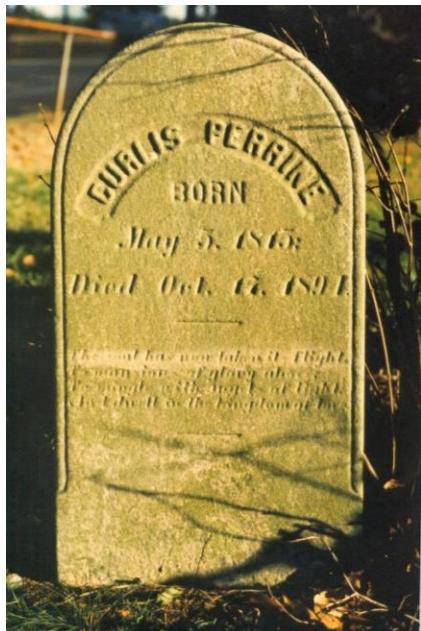
CURLIS PERRINE

BORN
May 5, 1815;
Died Oct. 17, 1894

*The Soul has now taken its flight
To mansions of glory above
To mingle with angels of light
And dwell in the Kingdom of Love*

IN
MEMORY OF
ELIZABETH
wife of
CURLIS PERRINE
who died Feb. 20, 1881.
Aged 64 years, 2 mo's.
and 28 days.

*Farewell vain world I'm going home
My Saviour smiles and bids me come
Sac'd Angels becon me away
To sing God's praise in endless days*



ELIZABETH's marker was buried to the line *My Saviour smiles and bids me come* for many years. Correspondence received by the author in March 1992 indicates that ELIZABETH's marker has fallen. Their daughter RACHEL is buried next to them.

It appears, after examination of census returns, that the farm passed to CORLIS' son DANIEL who had lived adjacent to his father through the years. This may be borne out by a deed recorded 17 April 1884 in which CORLIS PERRINE sold land to DANIEL PERRINE in Jackson Township.⁸⁸ Other

⁸⁸ Ocean County Deeds, Vol. 128, p. 438

deeds show the farm being sold in sections. On 6 August 1894, the heirs of CORLIS PERRINE, *late of Jackson Township* conveyed property to MARGARET A. PHIFER. This property was a part of the land purchased by CORLIS from PETER PERRINE in 1850.⁸⁹ On 14 December 1895, part was sold to ANN PHIFER. Of interest in this deed is the signatures of the heirs of CORLIS PERRINE: PETER PERRINE and SARAH, his wife; WILLIAM PERRINE; CURLIS PERRINE; DANIEL PERRINE and ELIZA PERRINE, his wife; SARAH PARKER and WILLIAM H. PARKER, her husband; RACHEL STORER; and the children of MARY PERRINE and her husband WILLIAM MILLER, JACOB MILLER and his wife JENNIE, SILAS A. MILLER and his wife CHARLOTTE, and MARY BROWN and JOHN, her husband.⁹⁰

The 1910 census listing for DANIEL, styled *PRINE*, states he owned the home in VanHiseville, on Jackson Mills Road. This appears to have been a different house than CORLIS'. In 1915 their possibly blind son CORLIS, who is noted as being *unable to read or write*, is living at the home of the widowed farmer JOHN MILLER in Jackson Township.⁹¹

ISSUE:

For information on the children of CORLIS PERRINE and ELIZABETH THOMAS, the reader is referred to Descendants of WILLIAM THOMAS of Millstone and Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County, NJ and Descendants of DANIEL PERRINE both by LOUISE BORODAEFF of Morrestown, New Jersey. Our direct ancestor is:

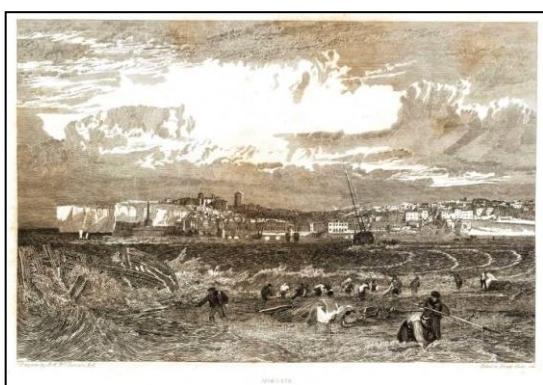
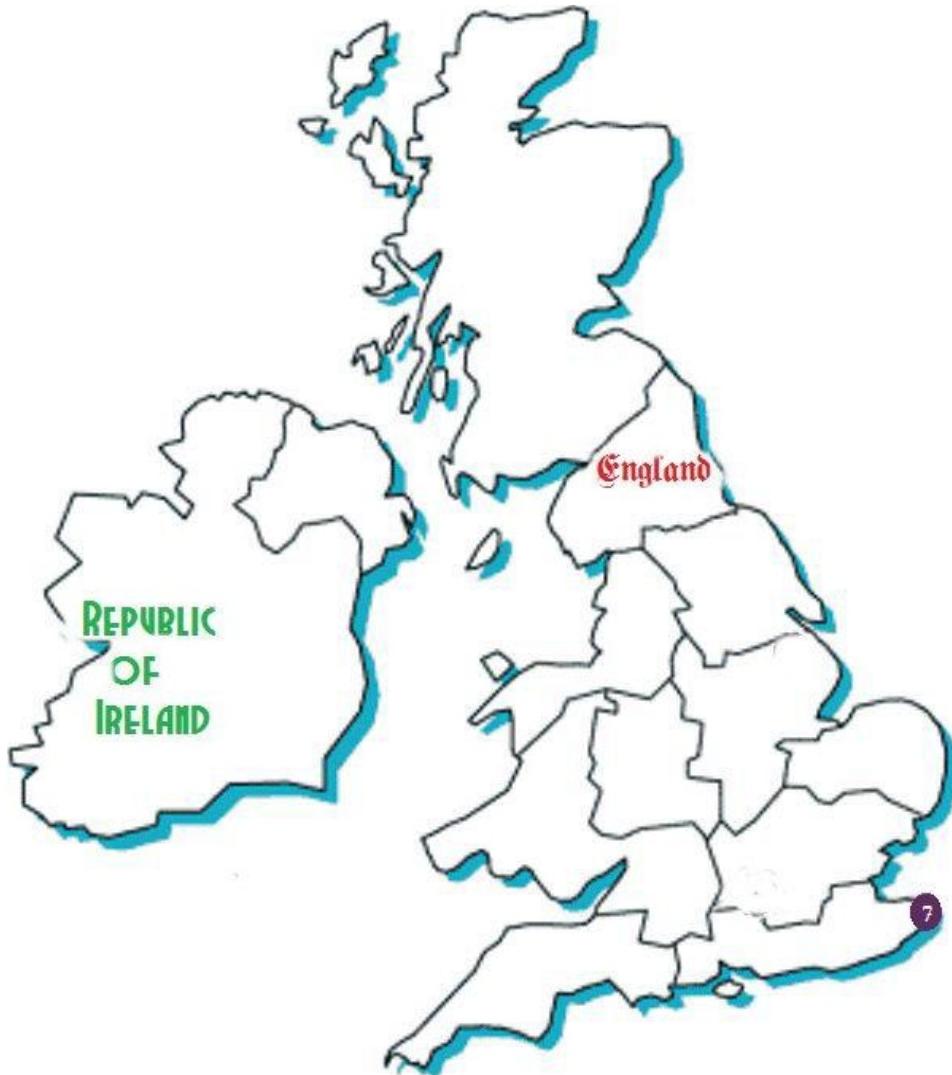
- 7) **SARAH MARY PERRINE:** married (1) RICHARD FRANCIS, JUNIOR. RICHARD died in 1878 and is interred at Cassville Methodist Cemetery. SARAH married (2) **WILLIAM HENRY PARKER** in 1880. Please refer to the section on the PARKER family for their biography. Daniel Perrine "The Huguenot" by HOWLAND D. PERRINE (1910) is one of the most frequently cited genealogies of the PERRINE family and in the section about CORLIS PERRINE, he lists SARAH'S first husband as "*RICHARD FRANCES PARKER*" and incorrectly attributes all of her children to her first husband incorrectly. Unfortunately his mistake has been repeated time and again by subsequent researchers, distorting this family history. *Their story continues on page 198.*

⁸⁹ Ocean County Deeds, Vol. 208, p. 116, recorded 11 September 1894.

⁹⁰ Ocean County Deeds, Vol. 219, p. 129, recorded 10 January 1896.

⁹¹ 1915 NJ State Census; Ocean County, Jackson Township, 12 June 1915, Sheet 7A, Dwelling 7, Family 7, Lines 32-34

Parker



MARGATE: located north of Dover it has the same white, chalk cliffs of that place. A seaside town, its economy was based on the trans-Channel traffic and was a strategic location when Calais was still part of England.

COUNTY KENT: during the 15th, 16th & 17th centuries, the county was one of the primary naval sites of England, defending her shores from the Dutch, the French & the Spanish.

Husband's Name:

MARCUS PARKER¹

Born: circa 1750

Marriage: 11 May 1772 (Bond issued) *Hannover*, Burlington County, New Jersey

Died:

Buried:

Father: DANIEL PARKER²

Mother:

Wife's Name:

MARY PARKER

Born:

Died:

Buried:

Father:

Mother:

ISSUE:	BORN:	WHERE :
1) MARCUS PARKER, JUNIOR	1787	New Jersey
2) RICHARD PARKER	circa 1790	Hornerstown, Monmouth County³

The PARKERS were Quakers from England and were prominent in early Monmouth. Quakerism was established early: Shrewsbury Monthly Meeting was the 1st permanent meeting house in the state, built in 1672, the same year that Quakers settled Evesham Township in Burlington County. Chesterfield Meeting in Crosswicks followed in 1677 when that village was founded by several Quaker families. As founders of Chesterfield Township, Quakers chose its name when it was formally established in 1688. It honors PHILIP STANHOPE, 2nd Earl of Chesterfield, a supporter of MARY and WILLIAM OF ORANGE in the overthrow of the JAMES II in the mid-1680s. Quakers were meeting in the town of Chesterfield in Derbyshire, England before 1660 and its records mention its New Jersey namesake as early as 1668. At this early date East Jersey had been sold by the CARTERET estate to 12 Quaker investors and most of the West Jersey Tents had been purchased by Quakers from Yorkshire (1st), London (2nd), Ireland (3rd) or by the Quaker FENWICK who founded Fenwick's Colony – these now include Hamilton Township and Trenton (MAHLON STACY), and all of Burlington, Atlantic, Gloucester, Camden, Salem and Cumberland Counties.

Sources found to date, including extracts of Burlington County Marriages, give the surname of both MARCUS and MARY as PARKER. New Jersey Colonial Documents gives the same information.⁴ Marriage Bond 283 was issued by GOVERNOR WILLIAM FRANKLIN on 11

¹ The Werner-Haberland Family Tree; Ancestry.com; accessed March 2013

² Father's name from an unsourced Family Tree page on ancestry.com

³ Descendants of Marcus Parker; www.fullerton1.com/g/parkerancestors.html; citations from site: New Jersey Marriage Records 1665-1800 (and) Burlington County, NJ Marriages; site done 3/2013

⁴ William Nelson, Documents relating to the Colonial History of the State of New Jersey, Volume XXII, Marriage Records, 1665 – 1800. (Paterson, NJ: Press Printing and Publishing; 1900) pp. 297, 308.

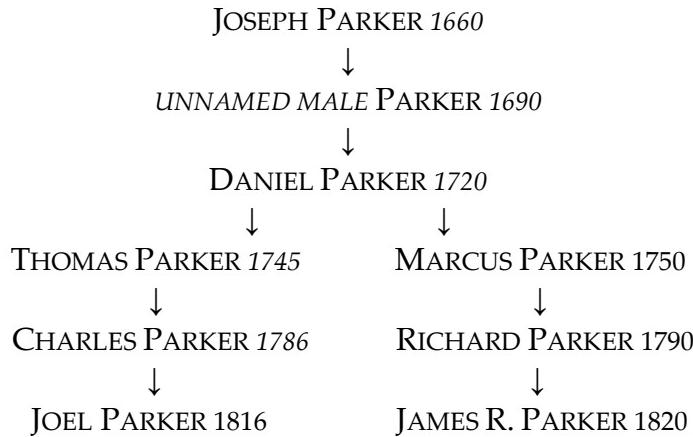
May 1772 to MARCUS PARKER and JONATHON PARKER, both of *Hannover* in Burlington County, in the amount of 500 pounds for which MARCUS obtained a License of Marriage for himself and MARY PARKER. Witnesses of this transaction were J. POTTS and ISAAC RECKLESS.⁵ The location meant was probably Hanover Township in Burlington County and this is the sole reference found that places MARCUS in Burlington County rather than in Monmouth County which was just a few miles east. The second witness, ISAAC RECKLESS, may point to a more exact location as the village of *Recklesstown*, founded by JOSEPH RECKLESS, was a couple miles from Hanover Township; that village was renamed Chesterfield in 1888.

According to an article written about 1925 by a descendant, MARCUS was a Revolutionary War soldier who was wounded during the 1778 Battle of Monmouth.⁶ Two years earlier GENERAL WILHELM VON KNYPHAUSEN used the Stone Tavern in Upper Freehold as headquarters on 25 June 1776 while leading his Hessian brigade on the way to Monmouth Courthouse; these were the same Hessians encamped at the Old Barracks in Trenton that were surprised and defeated by WASHINGTON on Christmas Day after his famed crossing of the Delaware. Two years later the protagonists were back in Monmouth County. The Battle of Monmouth occurred while the British were making their way to New York after evacuating Philadelphia. On 18 June GENERAL HENRY CLINTON stopped at Willow Tree Tavern in Clarksburg and later at Stone Tavern in Upper Freehold Township near Stone Lake. Moving out, CLINTON next stopped at Crosswicks where he made his headquarters in the COVENHOVEN House on West Main Street. A confrontation there on 24 June left a 3.5" cannonball (sources differ on whether it was British or American) in the north wall of the Chesterfield Friends Meeting House; it was firmly cemented into that wall many decades later after it was left at the Meeting House by someone who retrieved it from the person that had kept it as a souvenir. They reached Freehold on 26 June. Fought on 28 June 1778, the Battle left American causalities of around 200 wounded and about 100 killed. Some of farmland that served as the battlefield was owned by a PERRIN ancestor. A preliminary search of the Revolutionary War files of the National Archives (NJ 1st Volunteers, Monmouth Militia) did not list any veterans of that War with the surname PARKER and it is difficult to reconcile his military service with the antiwar position of the Quakers. MARCUS PARKER is listed in the June 1793 Tax Lists for Upper Freehold Township.

An interesting but as-yet unproven opinion has been put forth that our line and that of New Jersey GOVERNOR JOEL PARKER (1816 – 1888) descend from a common ancestor. His parents were CHARLES and SARAH (COWARD) PARKER and his paternal grandparents were THOMAS and SARAH (STOUT) PARKER. JOEL was a contemporary of JAMES R. PARKER in our line. One possible pedigree that accounts for age, known generations, *et cetera* is found on the next page.

⁵ New Jersey Colonial Marriage Bonds, Volume P: 1735 – 1793.

⁶ Descendants of Marcus Parker. www.fullerton1.com/g/parkerancestors.html; site gone 3/2013



(In the above YEARS are correct and *YEARS* in *italics* are estimates)

Issue:

- 1) MARCUS PARKER, JUNIOR: born 1787, died 1863.
- 2) **RICHARD PARKER:** was born around 1790 in Hornerstown in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County. He married MARY STEEPY. *Their story continues on page 185.*



The *blazon* for the above Coat-of-Arms was allegedly issued to an Englishman bearing the surname PARKER for some feat in the past. Who this person was has yet to be identified as the standard armorials do not list these Arms. The College of Arms has not been able to identify these arms or the particulars of any PARKER recipient of this or a similar *blazon*.

Husband's Name: **RICHARD PARKER**

Born:	circa 1790	Hornerstown, Upper Freehold Tp, Monmouth County ⁷
Married:	15 December 1813	Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:	15 August 1858	Hornerstown, Upper Freehold Tp, Monmouth County ⁸
Buried:		

Father:	MARCUS PARKER
Mother:	MARY PARKER

Wife's Name: **MARY STEEPY**

Born:	1792	Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth County ⁹
Died:	10 February 1862	Hornerstown, Upper Freehold Tp, Monmouth County
Buried:		
Father:	RICHARD STEEPY (1749 – 1836)	
Mother:	[DEBORAH]	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
3) CHARLES L. PARKER	1815	New Jersey
4) LEWIS PARKER	7 December 1816	New Jersey
5) JAMES R. PARKER	1820	Monmouth County, New Jersey
6) MARY PARKER	1821	Monmouth County, New Jersey
7) CALEB PARKER		
8) REBECCA PARKER	1830	
9) RICHARD PARKER	1831	Monmouth County, New Jersey
10) ANTHONY J. PARKER	November 1831	New Hanover Twp, Burlington County ¹⁰
11) ANN PARKER	1833	
12) JOSEPH H. PARKER	1835	
13) ELIZABETH PARKER		

According to an article written about 1925 by a descendant, RICHARD descends from the Revolutionary War soldier MARCUS PARKER who was wounded at the Battle of Monmouth. The PARKERS were Quakers from England. Upper Freehold Township was a focal point for Quaker settlement: Allentown, Arneytown and Ellisdale (first named Gibbsville) all had Quaker origins. JOHN ARNEY bought land from BENJAMIN BORDEN in 1705 which later became Arneytown – the village had a monthly meeting house as early as 1756 (and was allegedly a part of *Plumsted Township, Ocean County* from 1850 to 1869 which makes no sense as it is on the border between

⁷ Website of Descendants of Marcus Parker. Marcus and Mary were married May 11, 1772 in Burlington County, NJ [source1: New Jersey Marriage Records 1665-1800; source2: Burlington County, NJ Marriages] <http://www.fullerton1.com/g/parkerancestors.html>

⁸ "New Jersey Deaths and Burials 1720 -1971" Index. Family Search, Salt Lake City, Utah, 2009, 2010. Family History Library Microfilm Nos. 584577 and 1510236. For unknown reasons the listing from these films on Ancestry.com state Hornerstown is in Plumsted Township, Ocean County, which it never has been.

⁹ Ibid

¹⁰ Ibid

Upper Freehold Township in Monmouth County and New Hanover Township in Burlington County).

Their marriage ceremony was performed by Justice of the Peace WILLIAM BURTIS. They were living in Upper Freehold Township in Monmouth County when, on 11 January 1814, RICHARD purchased ten acres of land from his wife's brother JOHN STEEPY for \$45.00.¹¹ While not confirmed, it is believed that this property was in or near Hornerstown and it seems that RICHARD and MARY lived in that vicinity all their life. Hornerstown is on Lahaway Creek and is on the border with Plumsted Township in Ocean County since 1850. Before the formation of Ocean County the village was opposite from Jackson Township in Monmouth County.

In the 1830 census, with named head-of-household only and occupants by sex and age, there is only one RICHARD PARKER and the occupant's ages match very well; an added bonus is the location - Upper Freehold Township.¹² RICHARD and MARY have 7 persons under 20 living with them: their 6 children born in or before 1830 and 1 unknown. The unknown could very well be an unidentified child as the 4 children born in the 1820s account for less than half of that decade:

15 to 20: 1 boy	CHARLES
10 to 15: 2 boys	LEWIS and JAMES
5 to 10: 1 girl and 2 boys	MARY and CALEB and 1 unknown
under 5: 1 girl	REBECCA

Upon the death of MARY'S father in early 1836, she, along with her husband RICHARD PARKER, became two of the 11 heirs-at-law of RICHARD STEEPY that were his children or grandchildren.¹³ Acting as such on the 2nd of April, these eleven heirs became eleven grantors of a 58 ²⁴/₁₀₀ acre lot that RICHARD STEEPY had bought in 1814; the grantee was the twelfth heir-at-law, RICHARD'S widow, and MARY'S mother, DEBORAH STEEPY.¹⁴ DEBORAH sold this tract to JAMES WILBUR which was recorded on 14 May 1837. In an almost duplicate transaction, RICHARD PARKER sold an as-yet-unidentified tract of land to the same buyer and that deed was recorded on the same date.

As in the 1830 census, there is only one grouping in the 1840 census headed up by a RICHARD PARKER with a very good correlation with the ages; and, again, they're in Upper Freehold Township:¹⁵

10 to 15: 1 girl	REBECCA
5 to 10: 1 girl and 1 boy	ANN and RICHARD
under 5: 1 boy	JOSEPH

¹¹ Monmouth Co. Deeds, Vol. X, p.317, recorded 19 July 1814.

¹² 1830 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Upper Freehold Township

¹³ Besides Richard and Mary PARKER, the grantors that were sons or daughters & their spouses include Margery and Abraham VanHISE, Richard and Catherine STEEPY, William and Phebe JOHNSON; the grandchildren are children of Elizabeth (Steepy) VanHise who died before her father: Phebe who married Isaac CLAYTON and Lucy VanHISE. The grantee, Deborah STEEPY, was Richards's widow. Since he wrote no will 2/3 of his estate passed to his children and 1/3 to his widow. This is probably the record of the children "selling" their portion to their mother. Richard STEEPY had purchased this land from John Steepy, possibly his son, in 1814. John Steepy had purchased it on 1 May 1798 from Samuel EMLEY. Deborah sold this land to James WILBUR on 14 May 1837; on this same date Richard PARKER also sold land to James WILBUR (Book B3, page 396)

¹⁴ Monmouth County Deeds, Book L3, page 459, recorded 27 April 1836.

¹⁵ 1840 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Upper Freehold Township

The absence of 7 of their children is perplexing: CHARLES and LEWIS, 25 and 24 respectively, may have already married. JAMES, MARY, CALEB and ANTHONY, ranging in age from 9 to 20, could have been working on nearby farms, while ELIZABETH may not have been born yet.

In the 1850 census they are still in Upper Freehold Township with their children JOSEPH, ANN and REBECCA. Their son RICHARD appears on the farm of JOHN MEINS in Plumsted Township. A CHARLES PARKER, who may have been their son, appears in Millstone Township with a family.¹⁶

RICHARD PARKER, SENIOR of township of Plumsted wrote his Last Will on 14 August 1858. He mentions a wife not by name; his granddaughter DERENDA PARKER; and his children *to wit CHARLES L. PARKER, LEWIS PARKER, JAMES R. PARKER, CALEB PARKER, RICHARD PARKER, JOSEPH PARKER, MARY LAWYER, ELIZABETH MATHEWS and ANN BOWKER*. He ordered the share due to his daughter ELIZABETH MATHEWS to be used to purchase *a home for her own express use and not to be subject to the control of her husband*. He appointed his son CHARLES as executor. THOMAS E. ANTRIM and JOSEPH LAWYER witnessed the signing of the Will.¹⁷ Who the father of DERENDA PARKER is has not been discovered. Besides mention of her in RICHARD's will, the only other information on her comes from the 1885 State census where she is found living with SAMUEL and ELIZABETH CROSS in New Hanover Township.¹⁸

On 23 August 1858, MARY PARKER signed a *Release of Dower* in which she accepts her husband's bequest *of \$1000.00 yearly*. This *Release* is not quite accurate as the Will actually states that RICHARD bequeathed his wife *the interest of one thousand dollars for and during her natural life*.¹⁹

On 23 August 1858 THOMAS E. ANTRIM and JOHN GREGORY conducted an inventory which included a personal estate of \$198.50 including 18 *old fowls*, 2 *guineys* (guinea fowl), 1 cow, 1 two year old calf, 1 sow, 4 pigs, 12 fowls, 2 *hens' feather beds* and 1 *goose feather bed*. The inventory continues on and lists 47 *Sundry notes of hand* and *Sundry persons Drs.* (debtors) with a total of \$7,946.38. The notes carry an interest rate of either 2% or 2.37%. It appears that some of these had been written to his children.²⁰

The executor, CHARLES, filed for a *Limitation of Creditors* on 12 October 1858. Notices were published in the *Ocean Emblem* and posted in 5 *public places* for two months announcing that creditors will be barred from making claims against the estate after 9 months and the *Rule Barring Creditors* appears exactly 9 months later on 12 July 1859. On 11 January 1860 a *Final Settlement* was recorded showing the estate to be worth \$7,700.82.²¹

In the 1860 census, a 70-year-old MARY PARKER is enumerated in New Egypt, Plumsted Township. This is most likely RICHARD's widow.²² She has ANN NEUMEN, 13 years old, living with her at this time.

MARY moved shortly after the census was taken; she was living in Hornerstown 18 months later when she passed away. The following death notice appears in the *Monmouth*

¹⁶ 1850 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Upper Freehold Tp, page 356, Dwelling 296, Family 296, Lines 13-17 (Richard Parker)
1850 US Census, Ocean Co, NJ, Plumsted Tp, Dwelling 251, Family 251, Line 22 (Richard Parker, Jr.)

1850 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Millstone Tp, p. 287 (Charles Parker)

¹⁷ Richard Parker, Sr., Will of, Ocean County Wills, File 144-O, 14 August 1858; NJ Archives, Trenton, NJ

¹⁸ 1885 NJ State Census, New Hanover Township, Burlington County, house number 457, family # 476, page 72, No. 2158.

¹⁹ Mary Parker, Release of Dower of, 23 August 1858; Ocean County (NJ) Surrogate's Office, PO Box 2191, Toms River, NJ

²⁰ Estate of Richard Parker, Sr., Inventory of, Ocean County Inventories, File 144-O, 23 August 1858; NJ Archives, Trenton, NJ

²¹ Estate of Richard Parker, Sr.; Limitation of Creditors, V.1, p.16, 12 Oct 1858; Rule Barring Creditors, Vol.1, p.27, 12 July 1859; and Final Settlement, Orphan's Court Minutes V.1, p.300, 11 Jan 1860; Ocean Co (NJ) Surrogate's Office, Toms River, NJ

²² 1860 US Census, Ocean Co, NJ, New Egypt, Plumsted Tp, 3 July 1860, p.38, Dwelling 275, Family 275, Lines 38-39.

*Inquirer and Democrat: MARY PARKER, widow of RICHARD, died 10 February 1862 in Hornerstown. She was 70 years old.*²³

Issue:

Nothing more is known about CALEB, REBECCA, JOSEPH or ELIZABETH PARKER.

- 1) CHARLES PARKER: may have married "LENA" and lived in Plumsted Township In 1870
CHARLES and LENA PARKER are found with their children DANIEL, 18; HANNAH, 11;
FRANCES, 7; and FOWLER, 16. Also there is THOMAS HENDRICKSON, 15 years old, who it appears married JOSEPHINE PARKER, CHARLES' niece.²⁴ In 1895 CHARLES PARKER, SENIOR and LENOR, both over 60 years, are found in Plumsted Township with HARRY LETTS.²⁵ To confuse the picture, a CHARLES PARKER married ALICE LAWYER on 15 September 1842. This CHARLES and ALICE are found in 1850 in Millstone Township with children JOSEPH L., 5; SAMUEL, 3; and ANN ELIZABETH, 1.²⁶ The confusion arises in that CHARLES' sister MARY marries a JOSEPH LAWYER and so we know the families were acquainted. A third marriage, on 5 May 1845 of CHARLES M. PARKER and LYDIA ANN JOHNSON, by REVEREND SAMUEL JAQUETT appeared in the *Monmouth Democrat* on 12 June. They are in Ocean Township, Monmouth County, 28 and 26 respectively, in 1850 with sons GEORGE H. PARKER, 3 and JASON H. PARKER, 2.²⁷
- 2) LEWIS PARKER: married "SARAH" (born 30 July 1821). He died on 27 May 1870. His death certificate lists his parents and gives his birthplace as Monmouth Co. It states he was 53 years old and he died of lung inflammation. This occurred in Monroe Township, Middlesex County.²⁸ He was buried in lot number 50 at *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*. His wife died 26 June 1887 and is interred with him. They may have had two sons for buried in their cemetery plot are GEORGE PARKER, born 17 May 1853, died 17 August 1877 and DANIEL PARKER who died 6 July 1901 at 46 years old; thus being born circa 1855. Their plot can hold eight graves but only has four that are marked. It is unknown whether the others are unmarked or unused.
- 3) JAMES PARKER: married CATHERINE SHEPHERD. *Their story continues on page 193.*
- 4) MARY PARKER: married JOSEPH LAWYER on 18 September 1853. They were married by JOSEPH M. REEVES, J.P. in Cookstown. MARY is listed as "MARY MATHIS", 36 years old, daughter of RICHARD PARKER & wife. JOSEPH is a farmer, 64 years old, and son of STACY & ANN LAWYER. Both are from Monmouth Co. The record appears to indicate JOSEPH is a widower and MARY is single, which may be wrong considering her surname of MATHIS. They were living in Upper Freehold Township in 1860 where JOSEPH was a farmer.²⁹ With

²³ Anne Pette, "Obituaries from *Monmouth Inquirer and Democrat*, 1830-1888," Records of the Monmouth County Historical Society. LDS film 1298676, item 3.

²⁴ 1870 US Census, Ocean Co, NJ, Plumsted Tp, 24 September 1870, p. 116, Dwelling 56, Family 57, Lines.17-23. LDS film M593, roll 883.

²⁵ 1895 NJ State Census, Plumsted Township, Ocean Co., p. 26, dwelling 183, family 187, No. 756)

²⁶ 1850 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Millstone Tp, p. 287

²⁷ 1850 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Ocean Tp, p. 73.

²⁸ Middlesex County Deaths, Vol. AR, p. 75.

²⁹ 1860 US Census, Monmouth Co, NJ, Upper Freehold Tp, PO Clarksburg, 2 August 1860, p. 963, Dwelling 904, Family 904, Lines1-6. LDS film M653, roll 702

- them are “children” children LYDIA, 15; DEBORAH, 11; JOSEPH, 4; and REBECCA, 2. LYDIA and DEBORAH might be daughters from a previous marriage of either MARY or JOSEPH.
- a) JOSEPH LAWYER: born circa 1856.
 - b) REBECCA LAWYER: born circa 1858.
- 7) RICHARD PARKER: married LYDIA A. HULSE (born 1834) and lived in Plumsted Township. Civil War draft records list RICHARD as a 34 year old farmer, residing in Cassville.³⁰ In 1870 they appear next to CHARLES and LENA PARKER, and RICHARD is listed as a laborer. Their children are PHEBE S., 12; SAMUEL, 9; WILLIAM H., 8; JOSEPHINE, 5; JOHN E., 3; and OLIVE A., 1. The 1880 census names two more children born in the previous decade. At that time, they lived next to daughter AMELIA IRELAND and her family. RICHARD and LYDIA are still there in 1895 with ANTHONY and EDWARD PARKER.³¹ There is a story that RICHARD died in winter and his body could not be transported from his house for 3 days, as the snow was too deep to allow a wagon through.³² How this story began is unknown but RICHARD died 4 August 1904 and was buried at *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*. His wife died in 1912 and was interred next to him.
- a) AMELIA PARKER: BORN 1855; married ROBERT IRELAND on 1 July 1871 at the home of REVEREND VINCENT MESSLER around New Egypt.³³ They lived close to AMELIA'S parents during the 1880 census. The 1895 NJ Census has ROBERT and AMELIA IRELAND and their children in Plumsted Township.³⁴ AMELIA died in 1918 and was buried in *Allentown Methodist Cemetery*.
 - i. ACSAH IRELAND: born 1873
 - ii. HARRY IRELAND: born 1875
 - iii. FREDERICK IRELAND
 - iv. JOHN IRELAND
 - v. WILLIAM IRELAND
 - vi. LAURA IRELAND
 - vii. CHARLES IRELAND
 - viii. HOWARD IRELAND
 - ix. ALBERT IRELAND
 - x. FLORA IRELAND
 - xi. FRANKLIN IRELAND
 - b) GEORGE PARKER: born 28 April 1857, Burlington Co; married MARGARET A. ARCHER (born 1860) on 11 November 1878 by REVEREND VINCENT MESSLER. REVEREND MESSLER'S Marriage Register gives the wife's name as MAGGIE A. DREKOR. They were living in Prosptown, Jackson Township in 1895 with an ELLA PARKER who is too old to

³⁰ Gary L. Morgan, Assistant Branch Chief, Military Reference Branch, Textual Reference Division, National Archives, Washington, D.C.; letter to author dated 9 November 1992; extract from Consolidated Enrollment Lists of the 2nd Congressional District of New Jersey, June 1863.

³¹ 1870 US Census, Ocean Co, NJ, Plumsted Tp, 24 September 1870, p. 116, Dwelling 59, Family 60, Lines 31-38. LDS film M593, roll 883 and

1880 US Census, Ocean County, NJ; Plumsted Township, series T9, roll 0794, page 142A and

1895 NJ State Census, Ocean Co., Plumsted Township, p.26, dwelling 187, family 191, numbers 775-778.

³² Warren Grant, Emley's Hill Cemetery Association, telephone conversation with author of 22 December 1991. He is an acquaintance of William Parker, son of Richard Parker, Jr.

³³ Rev. Vincent Messler, Minister of the Gospel, Marriage Register of, First book, 1 July 1871. Collections, Monmouth Co Historical Society.

³⁴ 1895 NJ State Census, Plumsted Township, Ocean Co., p. 22-23, Dwelling 138, Family 139, No. 658-668

be their child.³⁵ Both died in 1931, GEORGE on 11 January in New Egypt. Both buried in *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*.

- i. ELLIS PARKER: born 1879, died 1899, buried w/parents
 - ii. HARLEY PARKER: born 1882, died 1920
 - iii. MARNIE PARKER: born 1884, married __ GILBERT; died 1923
 - iv. STELLA PARKER: born 1887, married __ REYNOLDS; died 1972
 - v. JENNIE PARKER: born 1889, married __ REYNOLDS, died 1923
 - vi. BERTHA PARKER: born 1892, married __ REDFEARN, died 1955
- c) PHEBE S. PARKER
 - d) SAMUEL B. PARKER: born 1861; married SARAH J (born 1863, died 1958) he died 1938. Buried in *Ellisdale United Methodist Cemetery*. Their grave marker also has the names SARAH, CARRIE LULU and CLARENCE PARKER.
 - e) WILLIAM H. PARKER: was born in Ocean County on 4 April 1862.³⁶ A WILLIAM H. PARKER, 20-60 years, appears in the 1895 Plumsted Township census with wife ELLA and children HARRY M., VIOLA, WILLIAM D. and LILLIAN.³⁷ He is interred at *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*.
 - f) JOSEPHINE PARKER: born September 1865; married THOMAS H. HENDRICKSON (born 1855) of Monmouth Co on 17 February 1881.³⁸ JOSEPHINE died 16 January 1924 and is buried in her parent's plot. THOMAS died in 1927; buried with wife.
 - g) JOHN E. PARKER: born 1868; married ANNA. They were living next to his parents in the 1895 census for Plumsted Township.³⁹ JOHN died in 1933.
 - i. WALTER PARKER
 - ii. ANITA PARKER
 - h) OLIVE A. PARKER: was born in Ocean County on 15 April 1869.⁴⁰ She married THOMAS D. KLINK (born 1862, died 1919). OLIVE died in 1961 and was buried in *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*.
 - i) ROBERT C. PARKER: possible twin of OLIVE as he is said to have been born 1869; he died 1943.
 - j) ANTHONY VANHISE PARKER: born January 1875 in Prosptown, Ocean County, died 27 March 1960, buried *Crosswicks Community Cemetery* (no marker).
 - k) EDWARD I. PARKER: born 1877; married ELIZABETH A. JOHNSON (born 1877, died 1965) EDWARD died in 1948; both buried *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*.
- 8) ANTHONY PARKER:⁴¹ married ANNA ELIZA GIRTON (born October 1837, NJ) in 1858 in Wrightstown or Monmouth. Living in Wrightstown, New Hanover Township in 1880.⁴² ANTHONY died 5 August 1908 in Springfield Township, Burlington County, NJ. ANNA died 1902. Both buried *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*. 5 known children:

³⁵ 1895 NJ State Census, Jackson Township, Ocean Co., Prosptown, p. 54, dwelling 364, family 367, No. 1608

³⁶ Ocean Co. Births, vol. AA, p.107.

³⁷ 1895 NJ State Census, Plumsted Township, Ocean Co., p. 4, dwelling 30, family 30, lines102-7.

³⁸ Rev. Vincent Messler, Minister of the Gospel, Marriage Register of Second book, Entry No.35. Collection of Monmouth County Historical Society.

³⁹ 1895 NJ State Census, Plumsted Township, Ocean Co., p. 26, dwelling 186, family 190, lines 771-4.

⁴⁰ Ocean Co. Births, vol. BX, p. 244.

⁴¹ <http://www.fullerton1.com/g/parkerancestors.html>; site no longer exists

⁴² 1880 US Census, Burlington Co, NJ, Village of Wrightstown, New Hanover Township, 17 June 1880, ED 31, p. unk (originally 24) Lines.41-46.

- a) HOWARD PARKER: born 29 September 1860 in New Hanover Twp. Burlington County, New Jersey
- b) ANTHONY PARKER: born 25 April 1862 in New Hanover Twp., Burlington County, New Jersey; died before 1880.
- c) CARRIE PARKER: born 7 November 1865 in New Hanover Twp., Burlington County, NJ
- d) EMILY SARAH PARKER: born November 1869; married CLIFFORD BORDEN; 3 children:
 - i. EMILY BORDEN: born November 1892
 - ii. FLORENCE BORDEN: born October 1894
 - iii. MARY W. BORDEN: born January 1900
- e) ELLIS H. PARKER: born 12 September 1871 in Wrightstown, NJ; married CORA GIRTON (born 27 July 1882, Manahawkin, New Jersey) of French descent around 1900. ELLIS was the first Chief of Detectives for Burlington County, being appointed in 1898 after several successes as an amateur sleuth catching horse thieves for the local pursuing associations. His reputation grew to such an extent that he was called the *American SHERLOCK HOLMES* and he was called in on cases around the world – Greece, France, even Scotland Yard. In 1920 the family, with the first 7 children, was living at 215 High Street in Mount Holly where ELLIS was a *county detective*.⁴³ He was said to have solved 304 of the 310 murder cases that came before him in his 40 years as Chief of Detectives. His downfall came with the 1932 kidnapping of CHARLES LINDBERGH, JUNIOR from the LINDBERGH estate in Hopewell, NJ. For, as yet, indeterminate reasons, on 28 March 1936, a few days before the scheduled execution of BRUNO RICHARD HAUPTMANN, ELLIS brought those proceedings to a standstill with the stunning news that he had a signed confession from the real kidnapper. The resulting investigation done at the order of then GOVERNOR OF NEW JERSEY, HAROLD G. HOFFMAN, did not bear out the detective's assertions and effectively ended the Governor's career. ELLIS and his son ELLIS, JUNIOR were indicted in Federal Court in Brooklyn but New Jersey authorities refused to extradite father and son. Found guilty of conspiracy to kidnap and extortion, somewhat ironically, under the new laws on kidnapping passed as a result of the Lindbergh kidnapping, sentences were handed down by the Federal Court in Newark on 30 July 1937. ELLIS has apparently ordered the kidnapping and holding-against-his-will of Trenton attorney PAUL H. WENDEL who testified that he was kidnapped and imprisoned first in Brooklyn, then moved to a home for the feeble-minded in New Lisbon, NJ where he signed the fake confession. Found guilty, ELLIS was sentenced to 6 years in Federal prison while his son received a 3 year term. After his conviction the Burlington County Prosecutor Howard Eastman removed him from office pending appeals. The family was forced to downsize to pay the legal bills and sold their large Victorian style home on High Street and move to a smaller house at 509 Garden Street in Mount Holly. Father and son began serving their sentences in the Federal Penitentiary in Lewisburg, PA in June 1939 where ELLIS died 4 February 1940 while awaiting an early release order due to failing health to arrive. He was buried in *Mount Holly Cemetery*. His cause of death was a brain tumor which may have been a factor in ELLIS' aberrant behavior. A petition for early parole due to failing health was on its way to PRESIDENT FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT when ELLIS died. Descendants have unsuccessfully petitioned the PRESIDENT for a Federal pardon more than once and another request is pending under PRESIDENT OBAMA. CORA died 21 April

⁴³ 1920 US Census, Burlington Co, NJ, Town of Mt Holly, Northampton Township, 5 Jan 1920, ED 94, sheet 3B, Lines.64-73.

1967 in Mount Holly, NJ and was buried next to her husband. They had 15 children, 8 known by name:

- i. ANTHONY J. PARKER: born 1901; married EDITH MASON; ANTHONY died 7 November 1965 in Mount Holly, New Jersey; EDITH died around 2000.
 - ii. MILDRED ELIZABETH PARKER: born 1903 in Mount Holly; died between 4 and 6 July 1950 in Mount Holly, New Jersey.
 - iii. CHARLOTTE ESTHER PARKER: born 8 January 1907 in Mount Holly, New Jersey, married WILLIAM FULLERTON (born 21 April 1905, Camden, New Jersey) on 24 June 1929 in Camden. CHARLOTTE died 15 February 1953 in Camden, New Jersey. WILLIAM died 28 March 1985 in Mount Holly, New Jersey.
 - iv. ELLIS PARKER, JUNIOR: born 16 July 1910 in New Jersey; married (1) KAY MARSHALL; married (2) BETTY ___. ELLIS was indicted along with his father and found guilty being sentenced to 3 years in Federal prison in 1937. He began his sentence in June 1939 in the Federal Penitentiary in Lewisburg, Pennsylvania. He died 17 August 1964 in New Jersey.
 - v. LILLIAN PARKER: born 13 August 1915; married ANDREW SAHOL. They moved to Roebling, New Jersey.
 - vi. JANE PARKER: born about 4 November 1917; married (1) JAMES BROWN and moved to Lamberton, New Jersey. She married (2) ORVILLE GREEN.
 - vii. EDWARD PARKER: born 29 November 1919; married "BETTY" c1934.
 - viii. HELEN PARKER: born 31 October 1923, Mount Holly, New Jersey; died 4 September 1997, Mount Holly, New Jersey.
- 9) ANN PARKER: may have married WILLIAM BOWKER. According to her father's Will, this is her married name and in *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery* appears a marker for WILLIAM BOWKER and ANN, his wife, without dates. Also inscribed is *MARY BOWKER, daughter, d. 12 January 1860, age 0.2.2.* Perhaps ANN and WILLIAM bought the plot with the intention of being buried with their infant daughter but, as often happen, plans change. ANN and WILLIAM BOWKER, both 47 years old, were living in Hamilton Township, Mercer County during the 1880 census enumeration. WILLIAM was a house carpenter at that time.
- a) ELIZA BOWKER: born 1858, married WILLIAM GROVER (born 1857) before 1880.
 - b) MARY BOWKER: born 10 November 1859, died 12 January 1860, buried in *Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal Cemetery*.
 - c) ANNE BOWKER: born 1881.
 - d) LOUISA BOWKER: born 1863.
 - e) HARRIET BOWKER: born 1866.
 - f) FRANCIS BOWKER: son, born 1868.
 - g) WILLIAM BOWKER: born 1870.
 - h) HARRY BOWKER: born 1877.

Husband's Name: **JAMES R. PARKER**

Born:	1820	New Jersey
Married:	circa 1844	
Died:	30 March 1896	Allentown, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Imlay's Hill Cemetery</i> (unidentified)	
Father:	RICHARD PARKER (? - August 1858)	
Mother:	MARY STEEPY	

Wife's Name: **CATHERINE R. SHEPHERD**

Born:	25 June 1827	New Jersey
Died:	16 February 1915	Allentown, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Allentown Presbyterian Cemetery</i> , Allentown, Monmouth County, New Jersey	
Father:	JOHN J. SHEPHERD (21 February 1785 - 18 April 1867)	
Mother:	SARAH THOMPSON (5 September 1794 - 6 April 1864)	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) SARAH A. PARKER	1845/6	New Jersey
2) JOHN PARKER	1847/8	New Jersey
3) REBECCA PARKER	1849	New Jersey
4) MARY PARKER	1852	New Jersey
5) WILLIAM HENRY PARKER	5 May 1854	Ocean County, New Jersey
6) ACHEA PARKER	1859	New Jersey
7) ANNA M. PARKER	1 May 1861	Francis Mills, Ocean County, NJ
8) ELLA PARKER	7 July 1864	Burlington County, New Jersey
9) CHARLES M. PARKER	4 July 1868	Allentown, Monmouth County, NJ
10) FRANK PARKER	1869	
11) [unknown] PARKER	?	

In 1850 they were living in Freehold Township, Monmouth County, next to CATHERINE's parents.⁴⁴ JAMES is mentioned in his father's will of 1858 in which he is to receive an equal 10% share in the division of the estate. This is thought to have been around \$700.00 for JAMES.⁴⁵ JAMES was a farmer and by 1860 had moved to Jackson Township in Ocean County. JAMES had \$500.00 of real estate at the time, possibly farmland he inherited from his father's estate or a tract he bought with the proceeds from that estate.⁴⁶ However, in reviewing Ocean County deeds only one mentions a JAMES PARKER and this is not the same person. If he owned the land before 1850, it did not have anything to do with his father's estate and would be listed in Monmouth County deeds as Ocean County did not exist before 1850. The 1861 birth certificate of their daughter ANNA states that JAMES was a laborer.⁴⁷ The Consolidated Enrollment Lists of June

⁴⁴ 1850 US Census, Monmouth Co., NJ, Freehold Tp., 23 September 1850, p. 182B, family 394, dwelling 370, lines 14-17, Nat'l. Arch. microfilm M432, roll 456.

⁴⁵ Richard Parker, will of; Ocean Co., No. 144 O; New Jersey State Archives, Trenton.

⁴⁶ 1860 US Census, Ocean Co., NJ, Jackson Tp., Post Office Jackson Mills, 21 June 1860, p. 78, family 172, dwelling 175, lines 19-26, Nat'l. Arch. microfilm M653, roll 705.

⁴⁷ New Jersey Vital Records - Births, Vol.AA, p.100; New Jersey State Archives, Trenton.

1863 has JAMES R. PARKER, 38, born in Monmouth County, residing in Ocean County, farmer.⁴⁸ It is not clear why their daughter ELLA was born in Burlington County in 1864. On 26 September 1866, JAMES purchased a house and lot in Allentown from EDWIN MYERS for \$825.00. This lot, 284' X 52', is on Church Street, opposite Hamilton Street. On 10 March 1868, JAMES and CATHERINE sold this land for \$850.00 to RANDEL FORD.⁴⁹ Whether the family ever lived there is not known at this time. The 1870 census offers no clues to the family's whereabouts. In 1880 "JAMES R. PARKER, 57 years old" is a boarder at the home of CATHERINE SPENCER in Allentown. Their son FRANK was living with his oldest sister SARAH and her husband GEORGE ROBBINS in Allentown where he was employed as a servant.⁵⁰ To date, CATHERINE has not been located in the 1880 census. In 1895 she is found living in Upper Freehold Township with the HENDRICKSON family.⁵¹ GEORGE I. HENDRICKSON and his wife ANNA and two children, WIKOFF and ARTHUR, had been living in Upper Freehold Township since 1880 at least.⁵² JAMES has not been found in the 1895 census yet.

On 27 March 1896 JAMES was infected by a highly virulent strain of the pneumonia virus. He died four days later on the 31st of March. An obituary in the *Freehold Transcript* states *JAMES R. PARKER was taken ill while in H.A. FORD'S mill Friday last. His illness resulted in pneumonia and he died Monday night. MR. PARKER has been a citizen of Allentown for many years and was rarely sick. He was 71 years old.*⁵³ There also appeared a brief notation of his passing in the *Monmouth Democrat* on 16 April 1896 which states *he died March 27th at the age of 71 in Allentown.* His death certificate gives the following information: he was a lifetime state resident of 75 years; mother not named; he was buried in *Imlay's Hill*; and the undertaker was MR. HICKS from Allentown. Inventories of Imlaystown Baptist (Yellow Meeting House) and Emley's Hill Methodist-Episcopal cemeteries do not list a sepulchral stone for JAMES. There are several "PARKER" stones at Emley's Hill and JAMES may have been interred in a plot belonging to a relative without a marker. One possibility is the plot of LEWIS PARKER, JAMES' brother, who died in 1870 and is interred at Emley's Hill. LEWIS' plot has eight graves but only four are marked. RICHARD PARKER (1831-1904), another of JAMES' brothers, is also interred in this same cemetery.

It appears that JAMES and CATHERINE did not have an easy life together. The last time they are found living together was 1860, though they lived near each other until 1896. It also appears they are not interred in the same cemetery as will be detailed later. Financial difficulties may have necessitated the separate domiciles as well as the apparent different burying places.

In 1900, CATHERINE is found as a widow, living with her son WILLIAM and his wife SARAH MARY PERRINE near JACOBSTOWN in New Hanover Township, Burlington County.⁵⁴ At this time, eight of her eleven children were living; besides the unnamed child, MARY and ACHEA had predeceased their father. After WILLIAM'S death in 1901, CATHERINE appears to have moved

⁴⁸ Gary L. Morgan, Assistant Branch Chief, Military Reference Branch, Textual Reference Division, National Archives, Washington, D.C.; letter to author dated 9 November 1992; extract from Consolidated Enrollment Lists of the 2nd Congressional District of New Jersey, June 1863.

⁴⁹ Monmouth County Book of Deeds, Vol.204, pp.181 & 183. (The purchasing deed was recorded 30 May 1868, the selling deed on 30 March 1868); New Jersey State Archives, Trenton.

⁵⁰ 1880 US Census, Monmouth Co., NJ; Upper Freehold Tp., District #1, Allentown; 23 June 1880, p. 509a, dwelling 7, family 7, lines 31-38; and p. 516c, dwelling 164, family 168, lines 39-42; LDS microfilm series T9, roll 792.

⁵¹ 1895 NJ State Census, Monmouth Co.; Upper Freehold Tp., p. 32, dwelling 195, family 209, persons 943-944.

⁵² 1880 US Census, Monmouth Co., NJ; Upper Freehold Township, page 539D, LDS microfilm series T9, roll 792.

⁵³ *Freehold Transcript*, 3 April 1896, "Allentown News". Available at Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold, NJ.

⁵⁴ 1900 Census, Burlington Co., NJ, New Hanover Tp., 13 Jun 1900, p. 8B, fam 192, lines 76-83; LDS film T623, roll 957, ED25.

back to Allentown. In 1910 she is found renting a house on *Walker Avenue* which has also been called Imlaystown Road and Allentown-Red Valley Road and is Route 526.⁵⁵ At this time it is noted that she had seven living children; WILLIAM had died in 1901.

In 1910 SARAH ROBBINS, CATHERINE's eldest daughter was STERNE SPRAGUE'S housekeeper. SARAH, by that time, a 68 year old widow and STERNE, himself a widower in 1910 lived two houses away from CATHERINE. SARAH passed away in 1913 and CATHERINE moved into MR. SPRAGUE'S house in that year and assumed the duties of housekeeper. Perhaps CATHERINE was related to the SPRAGUE family in some fashion yet-to-be determined.

Towards the end of 1914, CATHERINE'S health deteriorated and she came under the care of DR. H.M. ANDERSON of Allentown. She died of *aortic regurgitation* on 16 February 1915. Her death certificate states she was a retired housewife. Her parents are named as JOHN SHEPPARD and SARAH unknown. The informant was MRS. ELLA WOOD, her daughter, of Allentown. The undertaker was WILLIAM HENDRICKSON of Imlaystown. She was buried at Allentown Presbyterian cemetery on 22 February 1915. Her obituary in the *Allentown Messenger* states she was 88 years old and lived in or near Allentown most of her life. She *died at the home of STERNE P. SPRAGUE* where she had lived since the death of her eldest daughter SARAH in 1913. Survivors included 3 sons: JOHN, CHARLES and FRANK; and 3 daughters: *one in Mt. Holly, one in Fieldsboro and MRS. ELLA WOOD, who is now keeping house for MR. SPRAGUE*. A burial announcement in the same paper stated that REVEREND O.K. NEWELL officiated and *pall-bearers were PETER THOMAS, JAMES HARDING, GORDON HENDRICKSON and ELVIN PATTERSON*.⁵⁶ An obituary in the *Freehold Transcript* states she died *at the home of her daughter, MRS. ELLA WOOD*; both locations are correct as ELLA lived in the SPRAGUE house. Other surviving children include MRS. REBECCA BORDEN of Mt. Holly, MRS. ANNIE WILLIAMS of White Hall, JOHN PARKER of Prosptertown, CHARLES PARKER of Ocean County and FRANK PARKER of Freehold. The funeral was *at the home of her daughter ELLA*.⁵⁷ The *Mount Holly Herald* gives her age as 87 years.⁵⁸ Her plot is next to that of her sister HANNAH (SHEPHERD) JOHNSON and her marker is inscribed:

CATHERINE PARKER 1828 – 1915

Issue:

- 1) SARAH PARKER: appears to have married GEORGE ROBBINS and lived in Allentown. In 1880 her younger brother FRANK was living with them. She was the housekeeper for STERNE SPRAGUE who lived on Walker Avenue in Allentown, just a couple of houses from her mother CATHERINE. SARAH died around 1913. Her mother took over as Mr. Sprague's housekeeper until her death in 1915.
- 2) JOHN PARKER: was living in Prosptertown, New Hanover Township in Burlington County in 1915.
- 3) REBECCA PARKER: a 30 year old REBECCA is found in the 1880 census married to ALEXANDER BORDEN, a 55 year old New Jersey native. They were living in Washington

⁵⁵ 1910 US Census, Monmouth Co.; Upper Freehold Tp., Allentown; 4 May 1910; Sup. Dist. 3, E.D. 113, Sheet 4A, dwelling 248, family 240, lines 8-11; LDS microfilm series T624, roll 901, part 2, page 225A.

⁵⁶ *Monmouth Democrat*, 18-20 February 1915 and 25 February 1915. Available at Allentown Public Library, Allentown, NJ.

⁵⁷ *Freehold Transcript*, 19 February 1915. Available at Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold, NJ.

⁵⁸ *Mount Holly Herald*, 27 Feb 1915, page 3, column 7; & (*Trenton*) *Sunday Times-Advertiser*, 21 Feb 1915, page 6, column 1.

Township, Mercer County at that time and had a 5 year old son WILLIAM.⁵⁹ It is not clear yet if this is the same REBECCA, but it is known that she did marry a man with the surname BORDEN and she was living in Mt. Holly in 1915 at the time of her mother's death.

- 5) WILLIAM PARKER: married SARAH M. PERRINE in 1880. *Continued on page 198.*
- 7) ANNA M. PARKER: married GEORGE WILLIAMS and was living in *White Hall* in 1915. Later they lived in Trenton. She had 13 children.
- 8) ELLA PARKER: married ALEXANDER JAMES WOOD on 3 December 1883. They first lived in Allentown then moved to Crosswicks. ALEXANDER died there on 6 December 1906. ELLA'S oldest sister was the housekeeper for STERNE SPRAGUE who lived on Walker Avenue in Allentown, just a couple of houses from ELLA'S mother CATHERINE. When SARAH died, probably around 1913, CATHERINE took over the housekeeper position and moved into MR. SPRAGUE'S home. CATHERINE died in 1915 and then it was ELLA'S turn to be MR. SPRAGUE'S live-in housekeeper. ELLA died 20 February 1938 and was buried in *North Crosswicks Cemetery*. They had 9 known children.
 - a) HARRIS J. WOOD: born 20 August 1884; lived in Crosswicks whole life, dying there 30 January 1958.
 - b) IDA BREWER WOOD: born 22 July 1886; married JOSEPH LANE; was living in Neptune, Monmouth County in 1938; she died 2 March 1969 in Neptune.
 - c) ERNEST J. WOOD: born 22 July 1889; living in Ellisdale in 1938; died 5 September 1973.
 - d) ANNA WILLIAMS WOOD: born 21 March 1892; married first WILLIAM ROCKHILL, 24 July 1913; married second FRED TANTUM. She was living in Crosswicks in 1938 and she died 10 December 1971 in Riverside, New Jersey.
 - i) CHARLES TANTUM: Bordentown
 - ii) MABEL TANTUM: born 22 April 1909, married WILLIAM SPECK; lived in Trenton, New Jersey to 1948, moved to Torrance, California. Moved to a retirement home in San Pedro, California in 1992. She died 11 December 1994.
 - (1) RUTH SPECK: married JACK DEAN, San Pedro, Los Angeles County, California
 - (a) JILL DEAN: married JEFF MARTIN
 - (b) JOE DEAN: married ANN
 - (c) JUDI DEAN: married MIKE SPECK
 - (2) MABEL SPECK: married MICKEY KINNAMON, Monmouth, Oregon
 - (a) CRAIG KINNAMON: married JUDY
 - (b) CLIFF KINNAMON: married JOAN
 - (c) KIM KINNAMON: married ROD THIERRAULT
 - (3) SALLY SPECK: married, *surname* KESSELMAN, Phoenix, Arizona.
 - (a) MICHAEL KESSELMAN: married Liz
 - (b) DENNIS KESSELMAN: married NITA, in U.S. Navy
 - (c) ROBERT KESSELMAN: married BARBARA
 - (d) KATHY KESSELMAN: married MARK MORGENSTEIN
 - (4) WILMA SPECK, married, *surname* HEIN, Monmouth, Oregon.
 - e) CARRIE MARY WOOD: born 13 November 1894; married MILTON CHAMBERLAIN; lived in Groveville, New Jersey in 1938 and died there 16 July 1971.

⁵⁹ 1880 US Census, Mercer County, NJ; Washington Township, Roll 789, page 588D.

- f) FRED BRADLEY WOOD: born November 1895; living in New Lisbon, New Jersey in 1938; died 13 February 1963.
 - g) EVELYN "LENA" NORCROSS WOOD: born August 1897; married CLARENCE HARMAN; lived in Bayonne, New Jersey in 1938.
 - h) ALEXANDER WOOD: living in Crosswicks, New Jersey in 1938.
 - i) THOMAS DAVIDSON WOOD: born April 1901; in Crosswicks 1938; died c23 March 1969.
- 9) CHARLES M. PARKER: was living in Ocean County in 1915. He married SARAH HAWKINS. He died in the Lakewood ward of the Freehold borough on 15 September 1926. He was buried in *Maplewood Cemetery*, Freehold.
- 10) FRANK PARKER: married REEL or RILLA _____ around 1899. They were living in Millstone Township in 1900⁶⁰; at 10 Union Avenue in Freehold in 1910⁶¹; and still in Freehold in 1915. He died in Crosswicks at his niece's MAE CHAPMAN, daughter of WILLIAM PARKER. He was buried in *Maplewood Cemetery*, Freehold.
- a) FRANK PARKER, JUNIOR

Crosswicks Cemetery



⁶⁰ 1900 US census, Monmouth County, NJ; Millstone Township; ED 135, sheet 110, line 50.

⁶¹ 1910 US Census, Monmouth County, NJ; ED 70, sheet 10B, dwelling 190, family 95, lines 51-52; roll 900, page 59B.

Husband's Name: **WILLIAM HENRY PARKER**

Born:	5 May 1854	Jackson Township, Ocean County, New Jersey ⁶²
Married:	11 January 1880	Millstone, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:	26 February 1901	Jacobstown, Burlington County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Cassville Methodist Cemetery</i> , Cassville, Ocean County, New Jersey	
Father:	JAMES PARKER (1820 - 30 March 1896)	
Mother:	CATHERINE R. SHEPHERD (June 1827 - 16 February 1915)	

Wife's Name: **SARAH MARY PERRINE**

Born:	14 September 1854	VanHiseville, Ocean County, New Jersey ⁶³
Died:	20 March 1933	Crosswicks, Burlington County, New Jersey
Buried:	<i>Cassville Methodist Cemetery</i> , Cassville, Ocean County, New Jersey	
Father:	CORLIS PERRINE (5 May 1815 to 17 October 1894)	
Mother:	ELIZABETH THOMPSON (21 November 1817 to 20 Feb 1881)	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) IDA MAY PARKER	October 1880	Monroe Township, Middlesex County, NJ
2) ELIZABETH RUTH PARKER	5 October 1882	Monroe Township, Middlesex County, NJ
3) LILLIE PARKER	July 1888	New Jersey
4) NORMAN PARKER	February 1891	New Jersey

Not much is known of the early years of the PARKER family. It is known that the PERRINE family was living in the vicinity of Jacksonville since the 1760's. On the 24th of December 1876 SARAH married RICHARD I. FRANCIS, JUNIOR (born 6 May 1857) of Karr's Tavern, New Jersey. He was the son of RICHARD I. FRANCIS and SUSANNAH CARR. The ceremony was performed by REVEREND VINCENT MESSLER. Just over a year later, she was widowed on the 6th January 1878.⁶⁴ Her first husband was buried in the *Cassville Methodist Cemetery*. They had a son, ALBERT FRANCIS in 1877. Evidence suggests his surname may have been changed to PARKER. Daniel Perrine "The Huguenot" by HOWLAND D. PERRINE (1910) is one of the most frequently cited genealogies of the PERRINE family and contained within his discussion of CORLIS PERRINE, SARAH'S father, is to be found the mistake that has been repeated time and again by subsequent researchers, distorting this family history. HOWLAND lists SARAH's first husband as "RICHARD FRANCES PARKER" which is, as just shown, wrong.

WILLIAM and SARAH were married in Millstone where they both lived at the time. WILLIAM is listed as being a farmer on their license to marry. For the second time, the REVEREND VINCENT MESSLER performed a marriage ceremony for SARAH; the witnesses were JOHN FRANCIS and NATHAN PARKER. The marriage book of REVEREND MESSLER states: *Married near Clarksburg WILLIAM H. PARKER to SARAH M. FRANCIS, widow of RICHARD FRANCIS, deceased, all*

⁶² William Parker birth date from grave marker, birthplace from death certificate and surmised from known movements of parents..

⁶³ Sarah Perrine birth date from Daniel Perrin-"The Huguenot", Louise M. Borodaeff (unpublished, Morristown, NJ) 1979, p.18; birthplace from death certificate. It is not known where Louise obtained this date of birth. This date does not appear on any records obtained by this author so far. Calculating the birth year from the available, a range from 1854 to 1859 is possible.

⁶⁴ "Cassville Methodist Churchyard," The Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey, May 1978, Vol. 53, No.2, p.55.

of Monmouth Co....⁶⁵ A notice appeared in the *Marriages* section of the *Monmouth Inquirer* later that month: *PARKER -FRANCIS - Near Clarksburg, on the 11th inst., by REV. VINCENT MESSLER, MR. WILLIAM H. PARKER and SARAH M. FRANCIS, widow of RICHARD FRANCIS, all of Monmouth County.*

They moved to Monroe Township in Middlesex County, New Jersey soon after marrying. In the 1880 census SARAH is found as *MARY*, a 22 year old widow; her son is listed as *ALBERT PARKER*. WILLIAM is a 25 year old laborer.⁶⁶ After the death of SARAH'S father, as one of the heirs-at-law, *SARAH PARKER and WILLIAM H. PARKER, her husband*, are found signing a deed conveying property owned by her fathers' estate to ANNIE PHIFER.⁶⁷ It is known that the family moved to rural Nelsonville in the center of Upper Freehold Township for an unknown amount of time before the start of the 20th century. Nelsonville lies about a mile due west of Imlaystown on County Route 526. Documentation of this move may be available in the 1885 and/or the 1895 New Jersey State Census returns; research done to date has not been successful.

The family was renting a home in or near Jacobstown in New Hanover Township, Burlington County, New Jersey in 1900. WILLIAM was working as a farm laborer and his mother, CATHERINE PARKER, was living with them at this time.⁶⁸ WILLIAM and SARAH were not found in a preliminary search of the 1895 New Jersey State census returns for New Hanover Township making this residence one of short duration. WILLIAM came down with pneumonia in January 1901 and came under the care of E.D. MAINE of Sykesville, New Jersey. His condition worsened and the 46-year-old WILLIAM died on 26 February 1901 from the pneumonia complicated by suffering a cerebral stroke, or *apoplexy*, leaving SARAH widowed for a second time. It is interesting to note that on his grave marker the date of death is inscribed as 27 February 1901. Further investigation is necessary to determine which date is correct. JACK HENDRICKSON from Emleystown was the undertaker. His passing was noted in the *Freehold Transcript* which states he was *of near Jacobstown, recently of Nelsonville*. He died at his home near Jacobstown after an illness of several weeks. The cause of death listed in the newspaper was *paralysis of the brain* (another synonym for stroke) and *pneumonia*. The deceased leaves a widow and several children and was a son of JAMES and CATHERINE PARKER.⁶⁹ He was buried in *Cassville Methodist Cemetery*; at that time, an empty plot separated him from SARAH'S first husband. The tall, white marble grave marker is inscribed:



*Rest Father, Rest in Quiet Sleep
While Friends in Sorrow o'er Thee Weep*

There is also a footstone with *WHP* on it. An inventory of his estate raises more questions than it answers for it indicates that he had a farm whose major crops were corn and hay. It did have some livestock including a mare, a horse, 6 cows, 2 heifers, 3 calves and 5 sows. The appraisers were WALTER BORDEN and ALZONE F. POINSETT, neighbors of WILLIAM'S. The administrator was CHARLES BORDEN.⁷⁰ This raises questions: *Did WILLIAM own a farm? And, if*

⁶⁵ "Marriage Register of Rev. Vincent Messler, Minister of the Gospel." Available at Monmouth County Historical Society and LDS.

⁶⁶ 1880 US Census, Middlesex Co., NJ, Monroe Twp., 15 July 1880, p. 25, dwelling 251, family 264, lines 45-47; LDS film T9, roll 790.

⁶⁷ Ocean County Deeds, Vol. 219, p. 129, recorded 10 January 1896.

⁶⁸ 1900 US Census (Free Schedule) Burlington Co., NJ, New Hanover Twp., 13 June 1900, p.8B, family 192, lines 76-83; LDS microfilm T623, roll 957, enumeration district 25.

⁶⁹ *Freehold Transcript*, "Obituary Notes," 1 March 1901. Available at Monmouth County Historical Society, Freehold, NJ.

⁷⁰ William H. Parker, inventory; Book V Inventories, p. 560, No. C147 Burlington Co., dtd 9 Mar 1901; Hughes Justice Cmplx, Trenton

yes, where was it? Living in a rented home, as opposed to a rented farm, one also asks: *Where would WILLIAM keep the 18 livestock and the agricultural implements he owned?* No property records have surfaced to date to indicate such ownership while the last census returns enumerating WILLIAM are clear in the fact that he did not own but was renting the home, not a farm, in New Hanover Township just seven months before falling ill. As mentioned earlier, the mention of the Nelsonville residency in the obituary has yet to be more fully researched.

Shortly after his death, SARAH moved to Clarksburg in Millstone Township, Monmouth County.⁷¹ This was soon followed by a move to Imlaystown in Upper Freehold Township. On 24 April 1905, SARAH PARKER of *Imlaystown* obtained the guardianship of her niece and nephew that she had previously filed a petition for in the Ocean County Surrogate's Court. ERNEST and GRACE STORER, both of VanHiseville, were orphaned after the death of their mother, RACHEL (PERRINE) STORER, SARAH'S sister.⁷² Being RACHEL'S sister, SARAH is one of the next of kin. She posted a bond of \$400.00 *for faithful execution* of the letters of guardianship. Later that year, SARAH and her niece GRACE are found mentioned in the *Trenton Evening Times* in a society item where they are identified as part of a small group entertained by MR. JOSEPH STELLE of Allentown on Thursday the 2nd of November 1905.⁷³ This guardianship lasted less than five years, most likely due to her niece and nephew reaching their majority for there is no record in the Surrogate's Court terminating SARAH's guardianship.

By 1910 the twice-widowed SARAH is believed to have been engaged as a live-in housekeeper for S. POINSETT BOWKER, also widowed, in Upper Freehold Township.⁷⁴ The information supports this conclusion despite her stated age of perhaps 58 (the census returns are barely legible) being over a decade off; assuming MR. BOWKER was the informant, are we to assume that perhaps SARAH looked older than she really was?

SARAH married for a third time sometime before 1920. Her third husband was JOHN ASAY and, indeed, we find enumerated in the 1920 Federal Census SARAH M. ASAY, 56 years old, wife of JOHN S. ASAY, a 68 year old street car conductor.⁷⁵ They lived on Main Street in Yardville next to JOHN'S son GEORGE ASAY, and his wife LINDA. No record of this marriage has been found yet in New Jersey or Cecil County, Maryland (1914 and earlier) where three generations of descendant's would marry. Assuming this was SARAH'S third husband, JOHN, a farmer, and his previous wife MARY H. ASAY, 53 years old, were living on Yardville Road from the *schoolhouse to hotel* in 1910 with three sons: GEORGE, 29; JOHN RAYMOND, 32; and WALTER, 12.⁷⁶ MARY H. ASAY, 54 years old, of Yardville died on 30 May 1911.⁷⁷ The 1923 Trenton City Directory lists a JOHN ASAY as a farmer with a Yardville Post Office Box address which could be the same person.⁷⁸ SARAH'S third husband died before 1930 as she is found widowed once again in that year.

Sometime in the decade before 1930, SARAH'S daughter LILLIAN became mentally ill and was hospitalized. At the time of the 1930 census, SARAH had moved in with her son-in-law GEORGE CHAPMAN and, presumably, helped him around the home and quite possibly in the grocery store he

⁷¹ Marriage Return of daughter Elizabeth to John L. Southard, New Jersey State Registrar's Office, Trenton.

⁷² Guardian and Administrator Appointments, Ocean County Surrogate Court Records, Order Appointing Guardian, vol 1, page 208.

⁷³ *Trenton Evening Times*, 6 November 1905.

⁷⁴ 1910 Census, Monmouth Co, NJ; Upper Freehold Tp, 1st Dist 18 Apr 1910, ED 114, sht 3A, dw 55, fam 58, lns 37 – 38; page 232.

⁷⁵ 1920 Census, Mercer Co, NJ; Village of Yardville (Not-incorporated), 15 & 16 Jan 1920; ED 33, sht 6B, lns 78 – 81; rll 1053, p 115.

⁷⁶ 1910 US Census, Mercer County, NJ; Yardville [n.d.] ED 33, sheet 7A, lines 27 – 30; roll 895, page 168A.

⁷⁷ *Trenton Sunday Times-Advertiser*, 4 June 1911, page 5; Index of obituaries available online at trentonhistory.org.

⁷⁸ *Fitzgerald's Trenton and Mercer County Directory*, 1923, page 936; Fitzgerald Directory Company, 14 N. Warren St., Trenton, NJ; available at Trenton Public Library, Trenton, NJ.

ran. GEORGE'S home was on Old Monmouth Road in Chesterfield Township.⁷⁹ SARAH is listed as a 66 year old widow, which correlates with her stated age in the 1920 census and her probable year of birth, 1854.

Soon thereafter, SARAH herself fell ill and stomach cancer would claim her life in 1933. Descendants are correct in stating that SARAH lived on Church Street in Crosswicks for that is where her daughter IDA MAY lived when she moved in with her in to be cared for. She was described as being very reclusive and quite strange, but this was probably due to her poor health. She died on 20 March 1933 at *her home* on Church Street according to IDA, the informant listed on the death certificate. An obituary in the *Allentown Messenger* on 23 March 1933 states SARAH died following *a lengthy illness at the home of her daughter, MRS. EDWARD CHAPMAN*. Private services were held on March 23rd *from her home*. The services were conducted by REVEREND GEORGE SCARBOROUGH of the Crosswicks Methodist Episcopal Church. The funeral director was H. ALLEN VANHISE of Point Pleasant. Her surviving children were mentioned: two daughters, MRS. EDWARD CHAPMAN and MRS. GEORGE CHAPMAN and her son NORMAN W. PARKER.⁸⁰ Her daughter ELIZABETH had died in January 1932 and it may be that her son from her first marriage, ALBERT FRANCIS, had already died too. She was buried in *Cassville Methodist Cemetery* in the empty plot between her first and second husbands: RICHARD FRANCIS on the left and WILLIAM HENRY PARKER on the right. Her gravestone is inscribed: *Mother SARAH ASAY 1836-1933*; the year of birth is off by some 18 years for reasons unknown.



ISSUE:⁸¹

- 1) IDA MAY PARKER: known as MAY, especially early in life. Married EDWARD T. CHAPMAN in September 1905.⁸² They lived in several homes in Crosswicks: Crosswicks-Ellisdale Road in 1910, Church Street in 1920, and Front Street by 1930. EDWARD ran a general store in 1910 and 1915 and is listed as an "ice dealer" in 1920.⁸³ A second IDA M. PARKER lived in Clarksburg; she married ALBERT HOPKINS of Hornerstown at Jacobstown Baptist parsonage on 30 January 1910.⁸⁴
 - a) MARTIN CHAPMAN: born May 1906; in 1964 living in the Church Street house.
 - b) STANLEY B. CHAPMAN: born April 1911.
- 2) ELIZABETH PARKER: married JOHN LAWRENCE SOUTHARD in 1901. Their story is found in CHAPTER 1: SOUTHARD.
- 3) LILLIE PARKER: married GEORGE H. CHAPMAN at the same time as her sister MAY married EDWARD as their wedding announcement appears in the same paper on the same day as MAY

⁷⁹ 1930 US Census, Burlington County, NJ; Chesterfield Township; ED 3-25, sheet 9A, lines 57-8.

⁸⁰ Allentown Messenger, 23 Ma 1933. Allentown Public Library, Allentown, NJ. See also Mt Holly Herald, Mar 24, 1933, p.4, col.1

⁸¹ John (Wilson) and Olive Southard, conversation with 18 August 1986, Trenton, NJ; and from other sources in author's possession.

⁸² Bordentown Register, 29 September 1905, page 3, column 2.

⁸³ 1910 US Census, Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Township, ED 58: Sheet 1A, dwelling 2, family 1, lines 1-3; roll 971, part 2, page 1; 1915 NJ State Census, Burlington County, Chesterfield Township, dwelling 243, family 255, lines 66-69; 1920 US Census, Burlington Co., NJ, Chesterfield Twp., ED 78: Sheet 11A, lines 30-33; page 242; (and)

1930 US Census, Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Township, ED 3-25, Sheet 9A, lines 47-49.

⁸⁴ New Egypt Press, 4 February 1910.

and EDWARDS. They were on Monmouth Road in 1910, possibly between Chesterfield-Sykesville Road and Bordentown-Georgetown Road. After the death of LILLIE's brother-in-law JOHN L. SOUTHARD in 1911, they took in their niece, DOROTHY SOUTHARD, for a few years, while the widow ELIZABETH decided upon a course and moved to Trenton, New Jersey. By 1920 they were living in Sykesville on Chesterfield-Sykesville Road.⁸⁵ They also lived on Church Street in Crosswicks at some point but the time frame is not known. Between 1920 and 1930, LILLIE became mentally ill and by 1930 was committed to the Burlington County Hospital for the Insane in Pemberton Township. GEORGE was living on Old Monmouth Road in Chesterfield Township and had SARAH ASAY, his mother-in-law, living with him in 1930. He ran a grocery store.⁸⁶ GEORGE died in 1953 and LILLIE in 1963.

- a) MYRTLE CHAPMAN: born 1907; MYRTLE was the same age as her cousin DOROTHY SOUTHARD and the two remained fast friends throughout their lives. MYRTLE married (1) W. LLOYD TALLMAN of Columbus, NJ on 6 December 1924 in Elkton, Cecil County, Maryland⁸⁷ and (2) GEORGE LAWRENCE.
- 4) NORMAN PARKER: In 1910 he was living on the farm of EDMUND and CARRIE VANHISE on Crosswicks-Georgetown Road in Chesterfield Township, where he was a handyman. In 1911 he served as a pallbearer for his brother-in-law JOHN LAWRENCE SOUTHARD. He married BLANCHE EVERETT before 1920. In 1920 they were living on Crosswicks-Chesterfield Road in Crosswicks. NORMAN was a chauffeur.⁸⁸ He died 30 December 1965 and was buried in *Creamridge Cemetery*. BLANCHE died 26 May 1969 and was buried next to NORMAN.
 - a) NORMAN PARKER: born 1914.

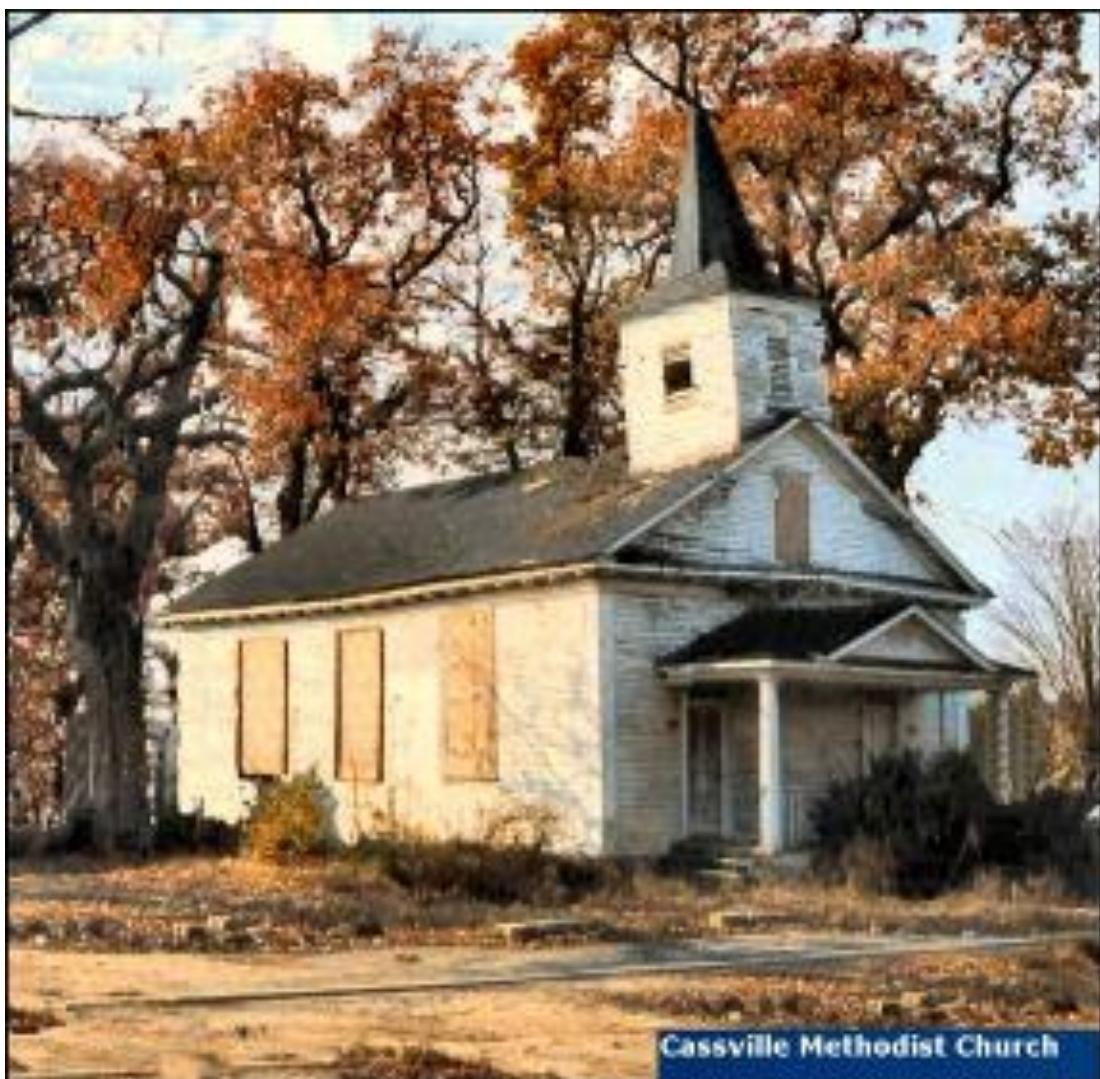
⁸⁵ 1920 US Census, Burlington Co., NJ, Chesterfield Twp., ED 78: Sht.3A, p.234, #45-47.

⁸⁶ 1930 US Census, Burlington County, NJ, Chesterfield Township, ED 3-25, Sheet 6B, lines 57-8; and Pemberton Township, Burlington County Hospital for the Insane [Unfortunately, I forgot to record the specific citation].

⁸⁷ *Mount Holly Herald*, 13 December 1924, page 4, column 3.

⁸⁸ 1920 US Census, Burlington Co., NJ, Chesterfield Twp., ED 78: Sht.9A, p.240, #36-38.

The old Cassville Methodist Church shortly before it was razed in the late 1980s.



Cassville Methodist Church

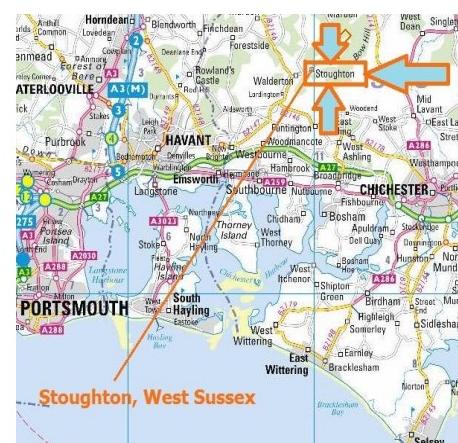
Taylor



STOUGHTON, WEST SUSSEX COUNTY

Stoughton is a village and civil parish in the Chichester District in West Sussex, located 5.5 miles northwest of Chichester. The village had 255 households with a population of 631 in 2001.

Stoughton is strung along an old river valley in the Kingley Vale Nature Reserve with the neighboring village of Walderton.

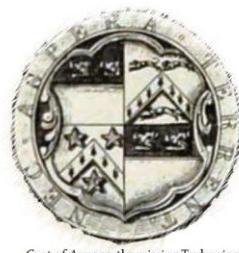


Contrary to many books and certainly most internet sites, our TAYLOR ancestors do *not* descend from the TAYLOR of Shadocurst in County Kent. In fact, there **is not a single piece of evidence** that connects EDWARD TAYLOR of Middletown to any TAYLOR family in England including MATTHEW TAYLOR in Chichester, County Sussex. The ‘evidence’ that is commonly cited falls apart upon inspection:

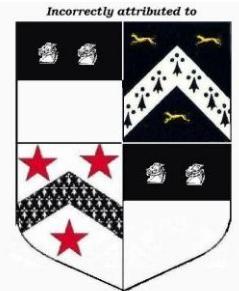
- ✓ The existence of a *signet ring* with the TAYLOR of Shadocurst coat-of-arms that belonged to our ancestor is doubtful, at best. No one claiming to know of the ring’s existence has actually seen it, or even a picture of it; no one knows anyone that is currently in possession of the ring. EDWARD’S elusive ring must also be magical as I have found that the same ring story is claimed by 3 different branches of our TAYLOR family, each as certain that the ring is in the possession of someone in their branch. These 3 branches of EDWARD TAYLOR’S descendants are in different parts of the country – New Jersey, Virginia & Texas.
- ✓ The claim that the Arms mentioned above came from EDWARD’S father JOHN TAYLOR from Stoughton and grandfather MATTHEW TAYLOR of Chichester *is patently false*. Arms were never *granted to* or *inherited by* a MATTHEW TAYLOR living in West Sussex. No attempts were ever made to claim ownership when any of the periodic *Visitations* (at which time a claim was presented with a lineage to the original owner which was subject to being challenged); there are no records with the *College of Arms* that support the premise that *any* TAYLOR in County Sussex ever received Arms through a grant or inheritance.
- ✓ EDWARD TAYLOR of *Brig House England* bought property in Burlington town in 1678 – this is true. Also true is the fact that our ancestor with the same name *was never in Brig House*. He was in Middletown, New Jersey before 1675 and there is nothing that even hints at the possibility of him returning to England, let alone for the year or longer claimed by some. Likewise, there is not a shred of evidence that remotely supports the notion that his 1st child was born in Brig House.

The Genealogy of Judge John Taylor by ELISHA TAYLOR was published in 1886 and quickly became the *ultimate* source for information on the TAYLOR family. The work contains great information which the author supports with extensive citations. Unfortunately, the author made some significant false statements and manufactured *evidence* to prevent criticism. The author incorrectly identifies a MATTHEW TAYLOR who died in New York in 1688 as an older brother of our line’s progenitor, EDWARD TAYLOR. The author cites a non-existent bequest in the 1688 Will of MATTHEW TAYLOR whereby he leaves his property in East New Jersey to *his brother EDWARD* living in London. Sounds pretty straight-forward, don’t it? But MATTHEW never wrote that; he left his property to *his brother SAMUEL TAYLOR*. In the course of my research, I have, literally, read hundreds of websites and, sad to say, 99% repeat this error, and others, *verbatim*.

EDWARD TAYLOR arrived in the New Jersey colony in the early 1670s and that is about as much that can said with any certainty about the time before the New World progenitor of our TAYLOR ancestry set foot in Middletown. Once he arrived though, there are plenty of records that help document his life.



Coat-of-Arms on the missing Taylor ring



Matthew Taylor of Chichester

Husband's Name:

EDWARD TAYLOR

Born:	1650	Stoughton, Sussex County, England
Married:	c1677	Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:	1710	Middletown, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:		

Wife's Name:

CATHERINE DECARTERET¹

Born:	1652	Middletown, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:		
Buried:		

Issue:	Born:	Where:
1) EDWARD TAYLOR II	8 August 1678	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
2) HANNAH TAYLOR	16 January 1680	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
3) GEORGE TAYLOR	16 December 1684	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
4) WILLIAM TAYLOR	25 OCTOBER 1688	MIDDLETOWN, MONMOUTH COUNTY, NJ
5) JOHN TAYLOR	17 June 1690	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ
6) JOSEPH TAYLOR	About 1692	Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ



If Stoughton is the correct birth place of EDWARD, it is surprising that the parish church of Saint Mary has no record of any TAYLOR Baptism, Marriage or Burial in their registers for the first hundred years of their registers, 1538 to 1638. This ancient church is larger than would be expected for a village whose current population hovers around 700. It is tucked away down a narrow lane leading up a small hill where it overlooks the village.

EDWARD came to Monmouth County in the early or mid-1670s though he owned property as early as 1671 when he paid property taxes. In 1671 three individuals with this name are found in the Middletown tax lists; two are known to be EDWARD TAYLOR and his son EDWARD TAYLOR, JUNIOR. Also found is his son and grandson GEORGE TAYLOR and GEORGE TAYLOR, JUNIOR. JAMES TAYLOR, JOHN TAYLOR and the third EDWARD TAYLOR, "a single man," round out the list of TAYLOR's taxed in that year.²



It is believed he met and married CATHERINE while in Middletown, probably in 1676 or 1677 but no record of their marriage is known to exist. Their first home, on *Garret's Hill* about two miles north of Middletown. The site was on a 100 acre tract previously purchased by EDWARD; this is now part of the US Naval Weapons Station/Earle Naval Depot (not the Earl Naval Depot near

¹ Rootsweb.com genealogy site submitted by Linda Mau; accessed 9 March 2005

² Edwin Salter, A History of Monmouth and Ocean Counties, (Bayonne, NJ: F. Gardner & Son, Publishers; 1890) p. lviii

Colt's Neck). It must be noted that his name does not appear in early East New Jersey land conveyances until later but the fact he owed taxes for property owned in Monmouth in 1671 establishes the fact that he did own property and the property records are incomplete. This land was bequeathed to their second son GEORGE. By the end of the 19th century it was called *Pigeon Hill*.³

Their first son, EDWARD II, was born in August 1678 and a month later an EDWARD TAYLOR of Brighouse, England bought property in Burlington town from GEORGE HUTCHINSON (see property list below). There is no reason to assume it was the same EDWARD TAYLOR involved in both, yet that is exactly what ELISHA TAYLOR published in 1886. This falsehood then launched others – the progenitor of our ancestral line not only bought property while living in Brighouse, he must have been born there as well. Since the purchase was made a month after his first child was born, that child must have been born in Brighouse too. Since EDWARD was in Brighouse, all the records naming EDWARD TAYLOR in East New Jersey through this time cannot refer to our ancestor. In 1902 GEORGE STILLWELL wrote about our ancestor, in the same volume where he corrects ELISHA'S errors, the following: *Later, EDWARD TAYLOR sold lands in Burlington.*⁴ He offers nothing to connect the two EDWARD'S but rather seems to be doing exactly the same thing he accuses ELISHA of doing!

On 30 May 1684 EDWARD'S cattle-mark was recorded in the Middletown Town Book. Man which would seem to indicate his presence in the area well before 1692. EDWARD and CATHERINE may have been in London in 1692 as this year is often errantly noted as the one in which they “arrived” in Middletown.

EDWARD built the *Edward Taylor House* in Middletown in 1686. STILLWELL contends that it was actually built by EDWARD'S son GEORGE at the same time he built the *Mansion House* on Garret's Hill, not far from his parent's first home. It has been said that living 2 miles from the village was not convenient so EDWARD and CATHERINE decided to move; a Warrant for a survey of up to 100 acres was issued to EDWARD on 28 December 1685 to the *Taylor House*, located on King's Highway in the northwest section of Middletown, as it was more conveniently located. The *Olde Tavern* was later built in front of the *Edward Taylor House* closer to the road but it isn't clear who built it, EDWARD or one of his sons. The *Edward Taylor House* is site # 62 of the Middletown Village Historic District and is owned by the Monmouth County Historical Association. The nearby *Marlpit Hall* was thought to be the TAYLOR homestead, and is currently stated as such by many individuals and organizations. A more detailed account of this confusion is in Chapter 2 Grover. The most recent research points to JAMES GROVER, SENIOR, or possibly JUNIOR, as being the person who built the first structure on the property; whether any of this structure survives is not yet settled. Clouding an already unclear history of *Marlpit Hall* is the fact that EDWARD'S descendant JOHN TAYLOR bought *Marlpit Hall* in 1740 and it remained in the TAYLOR family until 1880. Using the *Marlpit Hall* name is confusing too as the Grover homestead went by that name. If, as alleged, the later TAYLOR owner torn the *Hall* down and built new, *Marlpit Hall* no longer exists. There is some written documentation that the TAYLOR family owned quite a few slaves during the time they lived on the site where *Marlpit Hall* once stood.

EDWARD was apparently rewarded with a silver mug for some special service performed while in England which he willed to his eldest son and namesake. The mug was held by EDWARD TAYLOR VI of Freehold, NJ in 1888.

³ Mary Ann Kierman, The Monmouth Patent Part II (Red Bank, NJ: Greater Red Bank Voices, 1986?) pp. 73-78

⁴ William Nelson (ed), The New Jersey Coast in Three Centuries, (Lewis Publishing, Co., NY, 1902) page 204-5.

Early property records are definitely incomplete: the following list was found in the Book of Land Patents held by the East Jersey Proprietors in Perth Amboy at the start of the 20th century. Of these 7, only the 3 with (Liber, page) were included in the book written by these same Proprietors in the 1970s.⁵

- 17 March 1677: purchased 150 acres in Middletown from CHARLES HAYNES;
- 27/28 September 1678: a deed memorandum for *1/8 of one of the three-ninetieths parts of West Jersey*" being transferred from GEORGE HUTCHESON, of Sheffield, England, to EDWARD TAYLOR, of Brighouse, County of York, England, Gentleman (Liber B, pp.99-100);
- 28 December 1685: a Warrant for Survey issued for up to 100 acres;
- 27 July 1686: a survey of quit rent property lists 100 acres, the 1685 purchase;
- 1687: patent for another 150 acres near Middletown;
- 13 January 1692: two tracts from East New Jersey Proprietors totaling 100 acres in Middletown are listed in a survey of quit rent properties; again probably the 1685 purchase. (Liber E, p 32)
- 22 July 1693: Middletown parcel from Charles Haynes *by attorney* (Liber E, p 78)

In the accounting of quit rents kept by the Governor, on 15 October 1686, EDWARD was in possession of 150 acres subject to quit-rents.

I have found one reference to an EDWARD TAYLOR in old Monmouth records that could be applicable: In a Court of Sessions in 1707 at Shrewsbury, a charge of stealing hogs belonging to EDWARD TAYLOR was heard against RICHARD COMBES.⁶ The outcome of the trial is unknown, but the case was notable in that the judges assumed the defendant guilty without supporting evidence.

Some researchers have claimed that the ANN TAYLOR who married ROBERT BARCLAY was EDWARD'S daughter; that is highly doubtful as there exists (or existed) a manuscript allegedly written by EDWARD TAYLOR which includes the names and birthdates of his children and there is no ANN in that list.⁷

ISSUE:⁸

- 1) EDWARD TAYLOR II: married CATHERINE MORFORD about 1701/1702 in Monmouth County, NJ. She was born about 1682 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ, daughter of THOMAS and SUSANNA MORFORD. They settled in Colt's Neck and may have moved to Freehold later in life. In 1733 he mortgaged his land to the Loan Commissioners.⁹ EDWARD died before 3 June 1734 in Shrewsbury Township, Monmouth County, NJ for that is the date his Will was proved. In it he bequeaths the silver mug to his son EDWARD. An undated notation in Middletown Baptist Church records include him in the list of *members removed by death*

⁵ John Stillwell, M. D., Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, Volume V, "Taylor of Monmouth County," pages 43 - 44.

⁶ Edwin Salter and George C. Beekman, Old Times in Old Monmouth, (Freehold, NJ) 1887 (reprinted Genealogical Publishing Co., Baltimore, 1980) page 268.

⁷ Elisha Taylor, Genealogy of Judge John Taylor and his Descendants, (Detroit, MI: The Richmond and Backus Company; 1886) pages 1 – 16, 86, 88 – 90.

⁸ Bell family site on rootsweb.com; accessed 8 March 2005

⁹ *op.cit.* Stillwell, Volume V, "Taylor of Monmouth County," page 43.

immediately following the name of a member who died 4 March 1734. CATHERINE married (2) to married JOHN ASHTON, ESQUIRE, by license dated 19 August 1742. She died after 1742 in Monmouth County, NJ. Their children were, in all likelihood, all born in Monmouth County, New Jersey.

- a) EDWARD TAYLOR, III: born 21 January 1704. Bought property in Upper Freehold with his brother JOHN (see below). Inherited silver mug upon father's death; in 1888 it was in possession of EDWARD TAYLOR VI of Freehold. EDWARD'S wife's name was ELIZABETH. EDWARD III died 3 January 1750 in Monmouth County, NJ. He was buried in the *Upper Freehold Baptist Cemetery* (Old Yellow Meeting House) in Cream Ridge, Monmouth County, NJ well before it was officially constituted in 1766. His wife outlived him by 57 years but is buried next to her husband. His son EDWARD IV bought the MORFORD farm of his grandmother's family on the north side of Kings Highway in 1754. The *Morford Burial Ground* was located thereupon but was reserved from the deed. Since that time it has been errantly called the *Taylor Burying Ground*.
 - b) GEORGE TAYLOR: Married MARY LEONARD, 1743, 4 children.
 - c) THOMAS TAYLOR: wife was RACHEL.
 - d) ESTHER TAYLOR: born 1703. Married DAVID CLAYTON. She died 1785.
 - e) HANNAH TAYLOR: may have married JACOB GIBBONS.
 - f) CATHERINE TAYLOR: born 1712. Married JOHN LIPPETT, 1735. She died 1794.
 - g) REBECCA TAYLOR: b 18 June 1714; mar GARRETT MORFORD, 1742; d 1 June 1761.
 - h) JOHN TAYLOR: wife was named Mary. Bought 380 acres for £900 from EBENEZER SALTAR on 16 December 1732 in Upper Freehold with his brother EDWARD. JOHN died by 1745 in Monmouth County, NJ.
 - i) SUSANNAH TAYLOR.
 - j) JOSEPH TAYLOR: born 15 March 1720; married ELIZABETH ASHTON, 1743; died 11 November 1766 in Monmouth County, NJ and was buried in the same cemetery as his brother EDWARD. His widow *devoted herself to the care of her children, to hospitality and charity to her neighbors, she lived, for fifty years, on the dower estate, a grateful, pious, venerated and beloved matron. She refused may offers of marriage and invitations of her sons to live with them in Ohio and New York saying "No, let me live on the lands endeared to me as my husband's home, die his widow, and lie by his side in my grave."*¹⁰ They had 8 children.
 - k) JAMES TAYLOR: born c1721; married RACHEL TAYLOR; had one son GEORGE.
- 2) HANNAH TAYLOR: married THOMAS STILLWELL (born 4 December 1666) son of RICHARD STILLWELL and MARY HOLMES. THOMAS had been earlier married to ALICE THROCKMORTON by license dated 9 April 1703; they had a daughter named ALICE and two sons, THOMAS and JOHN STILLWELL. ALICE died before 1714 after which THOMAS married HANNAH. THOMAS died in 1758.
- a) MARY STILLWELL.
 - b) HANNAH STILLWELL.
 - c) OBADIAH STILLWELL.
 - d) JEREMIAH STILLWELL.
- 3) GEORGE TAYLOR: He obtained a license to marry HELENA JOHNSTONE from EDMUND HYDE, LORD CORNBURY who was Governor of New York and of New Jersey in March 1708; it is not known in which capacity the license was issued. She was born in Southampton, Long Island, NY. He was the executor of his father's estate in 1710. In 1729 GEORGE built a house of uncommon size on the east slope of *Garret's Hill* inherited from his father in 1710 called the *Mansion House*. The first house built on *Garret's Hill* was the one built by his father

¹⁰ op.cit. Stillwell, Volume V, "Taylor of Monmouth County," page 48.

around 1679 which he had inherited with the property. He may have built the *Olde Tavern* in front of his father's *Taylor House* in Middletown. In any event, he was running the tavern until at least 1746 and probably until he died. As late as 1876 the mansion's fireplace still held the original pictured Dutch tiles and remained a family homestead. He is known to have signed his name *TALOR* and, most commonly, *TALAR*. GEORGE died 1758 in Middletown, Monmouth County, NJ.

- a) EDWARD TAYLOR: born 20 August 1712 in NJ; merchant, ran the *Olde Tavern*. Married MARY OGBORNE (born 10 June 1711 to SAMUEL and ABIGAIL OGBORNE) circa 1732. MARY died 30 December 1772 and EDWARD died 18 January 1783 in Middletown, Monmouth County. Both are buried in the *Lippit-Taylor Cemetery* in Middletown. Around 1750 an Edward Taylor got into a dispute with a brother named John Taylor. The dispute was over one calling the other's wife a cow or some such nonsense; the matter ended up before an *official* from the Middletown Baptist Church. This unnamed church *official* knew the answers to all questions he asked before he asked them and became incensed when he was told by the brothers that he was an ass. This may have been the tavern keeper. Two decades later the name EDWARD TAYLOR appears again in the records of the Middletown Baptist Church. This conflict may be the source of the allegations that *some, several or many* (depending on who you read) of the TAYLOR clan were supporters of KING GEORGE but, as all Jerseyans were such kind, loving & forgiving people, they suffered no harm, etc... There were several EDWARD TAYLORS, all cousins, alive at the time but the one accused of Royalist leanings was a congregant of Middletown Baptist Church. On 10 May 1777 the church sent RICHARD CRAWFORD and JAMES MOTT to warn EDWARD TAYLOR to stop talking so much on behalf of the enemy and against the state. EDWARD successfully navigated charges of treason from both sides during the Revolution and kept the estate intact.
 - i) GEORGE TAYLOR: born 29 January 1733 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - ii) SAMUEL TAYLOR: born 28 November 1735 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - iii) ELEANOR TAYLOR: born 27 December 1737 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - iv) JOHN TAYLOR: born 25 March 1740 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - v) JOSEPH TAYLOR: born 26 August 1742 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
- b) JOHN TAYLOR: born 1715/1716; married PHEBY HEARD (born about 1708). He was Sheriff of Monmouth County and built *Taylor's Folly* a fine old colonial house in Middletown a few years before the Revolution which burned down at the end of the 19th century. He was a Tory and, about to have his property in Middletown confiscated, transferred 188 acres to GEORGE CRAWFORD reserving the 12 acres around *Taylor's Folly*. He was arrested and brought before the *Council of Safety* in Bordentown on 11 April 1777. *Taylor's Folly* was put to use by the Continentals but never confiscated. JOHN applied for damages of £12,000 to the British government, which probably included his loss of 188 acres. His claim was accepted and paid. The Middletown Baptist Church summoned JOHN TAYLOR and JAMES GROVER in May or June 1777 to answer charges of having Royalist leanings. Both men said that, considering the actions of the English government, they no longer supported it and regretted trying to convince others to do so. After a discussion the church as one, with the notable exception of EDWARD TAYLOR (perhaps his brother) voted to disbar both men. The men rightfully responded the congregation had no business conducting such proceedings as magistrates, a task that, by law, was reserved solely to the state. Further, they had no right to involve themselves in non-church matters.¹¹ In later years JOHN and GEORGE resided together at *Taylor's Folly*.¹² JOHN died 23 November 1798 in Perth Amboy, NJ. 6 children.

¹¹ *op.cit.*: Stillwell, *Genealogical Miscellany*, 2: 273.

¹² *op.cit.* Nelson, page 205.

- c) GEORGE TAYLOR: born 1717 in Middletown, Monmouth County, New Jersey; married REBECCA STOUT; died 19 September 1786. 2 children.
- 4) WILLIAM TAYLOR: married HANNAH GROVER. *Their story continues on page 214*
- 5) JOHN TAYLOR: married SARAH HARTSHORNE, daughter of RICHARD HARTSHORNE and MARGARET CARR. She was born 3 September 1687. When JOHN died at around 30 years old in 1721, he was living on property that his father had bought from PETER VAN DE VENTER in Middletown. In 1722 his brother GEORGE TAYLOR was requested to make payment of slightly more than £30 to his brother WILLIAM TAYLOR of Freehold in settlement of JOHN'S estate. On 14 January 1737 JOHN STOUT, probably the husband of their daughter MARGARET, was appointed guardian of HOPE TAYLOR until she reached the age of 21. Why their youngest daughter ANN did not have a guardian appointed isn't known. SARAH died before August 1738 for an inventory of her estate from the 8th of that month amounted to just over £420.
 - a) MARGARET TAYLOR: married JOHN STOUT. As mentioned, it was probably he who was appointed guardian of his wife's younger sister HOPE in 1737.
 - b) SARAH TAYLOR: married by license dated 8 January 1734 ROBERT HANKERSON.
 - c) CATHARINE TAYLOR: married ROBERT FITZRANDOLPH.
 - d) MERCY TAYLOR: married name was SMITH.
 - e) HOPE TAYLOR: born 1722; married (1) CAPTAIN JOHN WATSON and (2) JOHN BURROWS (1719 – 1785). HOPE died 27 October 1792 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - f) ANNA TAYLOR: born 1726; married JOHN WEBSTER; died 20 May 1762 in New Jersey.
- 6) JOSEPH TAYLOR: married first a *MISS CLAYTON* supposed daughter of JOHN and ALICE CLAYTON. All their children were born in Monmouth County, New Jersey. They moved to Colt's Neck in Freehold Township where they lived next to his brother WILLIAM.
 - a) JOSEPH TAYLOR: married (1) by license dated 20 February 1748 ANN HANKINSON; and (2) by license dated 25 September 1762 ANN BRENNAN.
 - b) JOHN TAYLOR: married but died without children.
 - c) HANNAH TAYLOR: married JOHN CHAMBERLIN.
 - d) AMY TAYLOR: married THOMAS STRYKER.
 - e) REBECCA TAYLOR: married DAVID CLAYTON.
 - f) ANN TAYLOR: married THOMAS THOMPSON.

JOSEPH married second ELEANOR COVERT and had 6 children, all born in Monmouth:

 - g) EDWARD TAYLOR: died young.
 - h) WILLIAM TAYLOR: moved to North Carolina.
 - i) DAVID TAYLOR.
 - j) MARY TAYLOR.
 - k) MARGARET TAYLOR.
 - l) ELEANOR TAYLOR.

JOSEPH died on 8 February 1748 in Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey. He was buried on 10 February 1748 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.

Husband's Name:	WILLIAM TAYLOR	
Born:	25 October 1688	Middletown, Monmouth Co, New Jersey
Married:	1708	Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:	circa 12 October 1767	Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey
Buried:		
Father:	EDWARD TAYLOR (? – 1710)	
Mother:	CATHERINE	
Wife's Name:	HANNAH GROVER	
Born:	circa 1690	Monmouth County, New Jersey
Died:		
Buried:		
Father:	SAFETY GROVER (1658 -)	
Mother:	MERCY BORDEN (?)	

<u>ISSUE:</u>	<u>BORN:</u>	<u>WHERE:</u>
1) WILLIAM TAYLOR		
2) SAFETY TAYLOR		
3) EDWARD TAYLOR		
4) MERCY TAYLOR	16 December 1728	Middletown, Monmouth County
5) DEBORAH TAYLOR		
6) HANNAH TAYLOR		Monmouth County, New Jersey
7) CATHERINE TAYLOR	25 January 1720/21	Monmouth County, New Jersey
8) MARTHA TAYLOR	25 JANUARY 1720/21	MONMOUTH COUNTY, NEW JERSEY
9) REBECCA TAYLOR		Monmouth County, New Jersey
10) ESTHER TAYLOR		Monmouth County, New Jersey

According to WILLIAM NELSON, the descendants of WILLIAM and HANNAH TAYLOR were Loyalists in the War for Independence. Although they were Tories they regarded themselves only as being loyal to the legitimate government.¹³ However this must be viewed cautiously as NELSON makes the same assertion about the LAWRENCE family in which only two have been identified in the Royalist army while 13 have been found fighting on the patriot side. A 2010 work by MICHAEL ADELBERG also addresses the issue.¹⁴

In 1722 WILLIAM TAYLOR of Freehold received a little over £30 in settlement of the estate of his younger brother JOHN who died in 1721 from his older brother GEORGE, living at Middletown. A letter to GEORGE TAYLOR written by JAMES SEABROOK (found in Chapter 2 as his wife was HANNAH GROVER) regarding the settlement of JOHN'S estate was dated 11 March 1722.¹⁵

¹³ William Nelson (ed), The New Jersey Coast in Three Centuries, (Lewis Publishing, Co., NY, 1902) pages 205-207

¹⁴ Michael Adelberg The American Revolution in Monmouth County, (Freehold, NJ: MCHS, 2010) chapter 3 provides details one Edward Taylor (IV or V?) during Revolution

¹⁵ op.cit: Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, 4:224.

WILLIAM TAYLOR signed his Will on 3 August 1767. He allowed HANNAH use of the house plus *the negro CAESAR and the wench JEAN*. He gave the *plantation* to his oldest son WILLIAM while he gave his son EDWARD £5 to bar him, presumably to prevent him from contesting the contents of the Will. To each of his 5 surviving daughters he left £40 and a similar amount to be split between the children of his two daughters who had already died. He appointed his brother-in-law JAMES GROVER to be an executor; JOHN WILLIAMS and JOHN TAYLOR (not his brother as he had already died) were two additional executors. The Will was proved on 12 October 1767.

ISSUE:¹⁶

- 1) WILLIAM TAYLOR II: married HESTER BULLEN 13 April 1762 in Monmouth County, New Jersey; died 21 April 1821. He received the TAYLOR *plantation* on the death of his father in 1767. DANIEL, HERBERT, GROVER and JOHN, sons of WILLIAM TAYLOR are bequeathed legacies in the July 1780 will of JAMES GROVER, son of SAFETY and brother to HANNAH (GROVER) TAYLOR. Also receiving a bequest was HESTER TAYLOR, of Freehold, wife of WILLIAM indicating additional children.
 - a) EDWARD TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - b) JOHN TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - c) GROVER TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - d) WILLIAM TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - e) JOSEPH TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - f) MARY TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey; one “MARY TAYLOR” married WILLIAM SOUTHDARD in Burlington County, New Jerseyon 10 December 1795. This MARY would have been born around the correct time to have been this bride.
 - g) CATY TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - h) ESTHER TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - i) ANN TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
 - j) PHEBE TAYLOR: born Monmouth County, New Jersey.
- 2) SAFETY TAYLOR: may have died young as he is not mentioned in father’s 1767 Will and there is no bequest to his children found in it either.
- 3) EDWARD TAYLOR: *the stutterer.*¹⁷ Married (1) SUSAN ERICKSON in Monmouth County who was called a witch allegedly because she believed in their existence; married (2) ABIGAIL OGBORNE (born 13 October 1718 to SAMUEL and ABIGAIL OGBORNE) 17 October 1757 in Monmouth County, NJ. ABIGAIL died 3 September 1770 and her Will was probated 23 November 1770 in Middletown, Monmouth County, New Jersey. In 1767 EDWARD’S father left him a token bequest in his Will to bar him from seeking more from the estate presumably. STILLWELL reverses the order of marriages but this one seems more likely. EDWARD TAYLOR, *son of WILLIAM, deceased*, receives a *legacy* mentioned in the 1780 will of (relationship not noted) JAMES GROVER. No children.
- 4) MERCY TAYLOR: born 16 December 1728 in Middletown, Monmouth County, New Jersey; married COLONEL RICHARD COX 19 January 1750 in Monmouth County, New Jersey. He was born 1727, and died 1800. Received a land grant in Ohio for his services in the Revolution where they lived for a time. MERCY died 19 February 1827 in Charlton, Saratoga County,

¹⁶ Bell, TAYLOR family website published on rootsweb.com

¹⁷ op.cit: Stillwell, Genealogical Miscellany, 4:160.

New York.¹⁸ They are buried at the *Upper Freehold Baptist Church Cemetery* (Old Yellow Meeting House).

- a) JOSHUA COX.
- b) JAMES COX: died in Kentucky.
- c) WILLIAM COX
- d) JOHN COX: wife named ROSE; 3 children.
 - i) RICHARD COX.
 - ii) EDWARD COX.
 - iii) SAMUEL COX.
- e) CHLOE COX: born 12 May 1752 Monmouth County, New Jersey; married JUDGE JOHN TAYLOR (born 25 August 1749 in Monmouth County, New Jersey). They both died 6 April 1829 in Saratoga County, New York. 10 children all born in Saratoga County.
 - i) CHLOE TAYLOR.
 - ii) JOSEPH TAYLOR: born 1775.
 - iii) RICHARD TAYLOR: born 1777.
 - iv) WILLIAM TAYLOR: born 1779.
 - v) EDWARD TAYLOR: born 1781.
 - vi) JOHN W. TAYLOR: born 1784.
 - vii) REVEREND ELISHA TAYLOR: born 1786.
 - viii) ELIZABETH TAYLOR: born 1788.
 - ix) SARAH TAYLOR: born 1792.
 - x) ANN TAYLOR: born 1794.
- f) REBECCA COX: born 25 July 1753; married REVEREND JOHN PITMAN on 1 September 1778; Rebecca died February 1792. 2 children.
 - i) JUDGE JOHN PITMAN
 - ii) REBECCA COX PITMAN
- g) MAJOR RICHARD COX: born 1754; married JANE ROSE; died 9 March 1816, Mount Holly, Burlington County, New Jersey. 3 children.
 - i) MARION HANNAH COX.
 - ii) ALEXANDER COX.
 - iii) WILLIAM COX.
- h) MARY ANN COX:¹⁹ born 31 October 1757, Cream Ridge, Monmouth County, New Jersey; married JOHN MORFORD on 21 December 1780 in Cranbury, Middlesex County, New Jersey. JOHN was born 18 May 1758 in the same town. All their children are believed to have been born in Cranbury before the family moved to Sharon, Mercer County, Pennsylvania. MARY ANN died before 1830 in Sharon, West Salem Township, Mercer County, Pennsylvania, followed by JOHN on 8 May 1840 in the same place. They are buried in the *Oakwood Cemetery* in Sharon.
 - i) REBECCA MORFORD: born 6 October 1765; married THOMAS MORFORD on 8 January 1803 in Mercer County, Pennsylvania; died 25 September 1857 in Mercer County, Pennsylvania. THOMAS returned to New Jersey where he died on 3 May 1865. 8 children.

¹⁸ FULLER website published on rootsweb.com

¹⁹ Linda Mau, website published on rootsweb.com

- ii) RICHARD MORFORD: born 22 October 1781; married (1) MARY BROWN McLAUGHLIN (born 8 February 1794 in Middlin County, Pennsylvania), 4 children, MARY died 20 July 1873 in West Salem Township, buried in the *Baptist Cemetery* at the same place; RICHARD then married (2) ELIZABETH MORFORD on 4 September 1807 (born 24 November 1784 in Mercer County, Pennsylvania), 5 children, ELIZABETH died 20 July 1826 in Mercer County, Pennsylvania; RICHARD died 1 September 1874 in Trumbull County, Ohio.
- iii) THOMAS MORFORD: born 8 October 1788; married THERESA PERRINE; died 15 November 1873 West Salem Township, Mercer County, Pennsylvania. 1 child.
- iv) ELIZABETH MORFORD: born 24 January 1791; married WILLIAM HULL; died 23 February 1840 in Lima Rock County, Wisconsin.
- v) JAMES MORFORD: born 17 July 1793; married SUSAN BELLE; died 12 July 1870 in North Henderson, Mercer County, Illinois.
- vi) JOHN MORFORD: born 22 May 1796; died 19 July 1877 Mercer County, Pennsylvania.
- vii) WILLIAM LYON MORFORD: born 28 January 1799; married SUSAN BELLE (his sister-in-law?); died 2 February 1875 in Porter Township, Porter County, Iowa.
- viii) JOSEPH MORFORD: born 1 August 1801; died 5 July 1860 in North Henderson, Mercer County, Illinois.
- i) THOMAS COX: born 3 September 1760; married ELIZABETH COMES 3 October 1782. 4 children.
 - i) THOMAS COX.
 - ii) CHARLES COX.
 - iii) HARRIET COX.
 - iv) ELIZABETH COX.
- 5) DEBORAH TAYLOR:²⁰ married JOSEPH COOPER in December 1741 in Monmouth County, New Jersey. He died 1751 in Monmouth County, New Jersey.
- 6) HANNAH TAYLOR
- 7) CATHERINE TAYLOR:²¹ twin; married JOHN ASHTON 2 June 1741 in Monmouth Co, New Jersey.
 - a) HANNAH ASHTON: married at Christ Church in Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, New Jersey on 18 December 1748; died circa 1784.
 - b) MARTHA ASHTON: born 1746; died 1831.
- 8) MARTHA TAYLOR: twin; married JOHN SHEPHERD 13 December 1742 in Monmouth County, New Jersey. *Their story continues in VOLUME 2, CHAPTER 9: SHEPHERD.*
- 9) REBECCA TAYLOR
- 10) ESTHER TAYLOR

Only 1 of the 3 daughters without information above, HANNAH, REBECCA and ESTHER was alive in 1767. The other two lived long enough to marry and have children as the children received a bequest in their grandfather's Will.

²⁰ Michael Adelberg biographical file on Deborah Taylor, collections of the Monmouth County Historical Association, Freehold, NJ, may provide more information.

²¹ Conovergenealogy.com

END OF VOLUME ONE

We now have read about eight of our seventeen different ancestral lines from the United Kingdom – nine more to go! Volume Two covers our SHEPHERD, DORSETT, FOULKES, HOLMAN, THOMAS, WOODWARD, MALSURY, MURPHY & BORDEN lines. Well, at least at this moment; we have several other UK lines of which little is yet certain – for example, our Bowker, Burgess, Clayton, Ranier & Wansborough ancestors. Perhaps ongoing research will uncover enough information about these families to warrant a chapter.

To Be
CONTINUED ...

United Kingdom

Our English and Irish Ancestors

Volume 1

Other Titles by Brian A. Smith, D.C.

- ❖ The First World War, The Lightning Division and Private Albert Matelena (2006)
- ❖ A History of Il Regno (2009)
Why did my Great-Grandfather from Italy have Red Hair, Blue Eyes and Fair Skin?
- ❖ A Select History of the State of New Jersey (2009)
- ❖ A History of Central Eastern Europe (2010)
Our Smith & Kutarnia Heritage
- ❖ The First World War, The Sequel (2012)
Valentine William Smith, Private First Class, United States Army Signal Service Corps
- ❖ The Most Remarkable Lives of Jan Jansen and his son Anthony (2013)
(Or) Does 577 microliters of my blood speak Dutch?

Working Titles

- ❖ United Kingdom - Our English and Irish Ancestors - Volume 2
- ❖ Medieval England and our ties to the Southworth, de Ewyas & Foliot families
- ❖ A Corrected Account and Augmentation of Benjamin Southard (4)
and Some of His Descendants in Southern New Jersey Appearing in
EARLY SOUTHARDS OF NEW YORK AND NEW JERSEY by Ralph K. Potter (1974)
{For publication in the Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey}